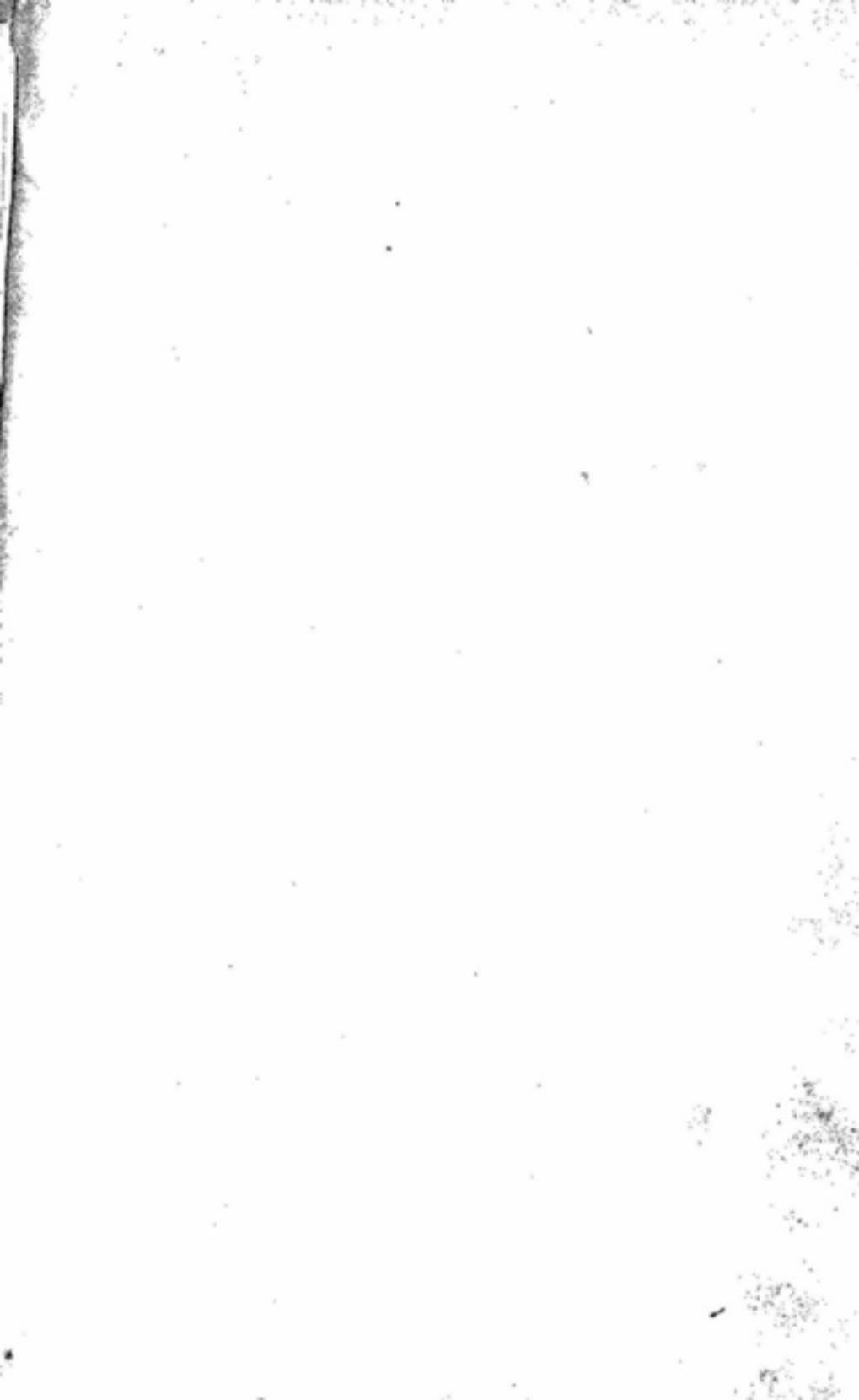


GOVERNMENT OF INDIA
DEPARTMENT OF ARCHAEOLOGY
CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL
LIBRARY

CLASS _____

CALL No. **901.0954 San**

D.G.A. 79.



Jaina *Community*

A SOCIAL SURVEY



JAINA COMMUNITY

A SOCIAL SURVEY

16690

by

DR. VILAS ADINATH SANGAVE, M.A., Ph.D.,
Professor of Sociology, Rajaram College, Kolhapur



901.0754
SOM

1959

Ref 370.754
SOM



POPULAR BOOK DEPOT, BOMBAY, 7.



VILAS ADINATH SANGAVE

First Published : April 1959

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL
LIBRARY, NEW DELHI.

Acc. No. 16790
Date. 21/9/59
Call No. 390-954/Jan.

Printed by Shri H. R. Purohit at the Samyukta Karnatak Press, Hubli and
Published by Shri G. R. Bhatkal, at and for the Popular Book Depot,
Lamington Road, Bombay, 7.

DEDICATED
TO
MY 'GURU'
Dr. G. S. GHURYE



PREFACE

The Jaina community is one of the very ancient communities of India; and from hoary antiquity to the present day, it is scattered throughout the length and breadth of India. Jainism being an independent religion its followers have got their own and vast sacred literature, distinct philosophy and outlook on life, and special ethical rules of conduct based on the fundamental principle of *Abhimsā*. Though the Jainas constitute a small community they have contributed a great deal to the development of art and architecture, logic and philosophy, languages and literature, education and learning, charitable and public institutions and political, material and spiritual welfare of the people of different regions of India. Apart from these contributions, which seem to be substantial in relation to the meagre number of its members, the Jaina community is known for another reason. After the decline of Buddhism in India the Jainas remained as the only representatives of *Sramaṇa* culture in India and hence we find that there are significant differences between Jainas and Hindus in their religious practices and social customs and manners. In spite of these basic differences the Jainas have for so many centuries maintained very close relations with the Hindus and this continued intimate relationship is a distinguishing feature of the minority community of Jainas in India.

It is, therefore, obvious that the Jaina community occupies an important place among the religious communities in India. But a systematic study of the social institutions, customs and manners prevalent among the Jainas was not carried out even though there was adequate information available about their religion and philosophy due to the publication of their sacred books in different languages and the researches carried out by Western and Indian scholars in Jainology in recent years. With a view to meet this need a sociological research project entitled

'Jaina Community-A Social Survey' was undertaken by me in July, 1944 and the Thesis based on it was submitted to the University of Bombay in April, 1950. The Thesis was approved by the University in October, 1950 for the degree of Ph.D. in Sociology and the same Thesis is now published here. No substantial alteration has been made in the Thesis while presenting it in a book form as there has been no significant change in social conditions of the Jainas during the last nine years. Only the 1951 Census Report furnished some additional information about the Jaina population and an account based on it has been given in Appendix A, added to the book.

It may be pointed out here that the names of Provinces and States used in this book refer to the old British Provinces and Indian States and not to the present States which have been formed after Reorganisation of States in 1956. The use of old names was inevitable because the Census Reports have been based on the old arrangement of Provinces and States and the census figures about Jaina population according to reorganised States are not available. It is needless to add that the term "India" used in Census Reports upto 1941 and used while discussing the conditions of Jainas in the past, refers to India before Partition.

I had the good fortune and a rare privilege to carry out my research work for a period of six years under Dr. G. S. Ghurye, M.A., Ph.D. (Cantab), Professor and Head of the Department of Sociology, University of Bombay, Bombay. Without his inspiring contact, constant supervision, thought-provoking discussions and unusual knack of exacting rigorous work from his students, it would not have been possible for me to present a scientific account, the first of its kind, of social conditions prevailing among the Jainas in India. Words fail to express my deep sense of gratitude to him for the able guidance given to me and for the personal interest he has been taking in my career as a teacher of Sociology.

I am highly indebted to the well-known authority on Jainology Prof. Dr. A. N. Upadhye, M.A., D.LITT., Kolhapur, for every kind of help he so readily gave to me during the preparation of the Thesis and also in the publication of this book. I am also indebted to Pandit Nathuramji Premi, Bombay, Muni Jinavijayaji, Ahmedabad,

Pandit Sukhalalji Sanghavi, Ahmedabad, Dr. Hiralal Jain, Muzaaffarpur, Shri Kamta Prasad Jain, Aliganj and Pandit Dalasukhaji Malavaniya, Banaras, the research scholars of long standing in Jainology, for their encouragement and help extended to me from time to time.

The extensive bibliography given at the end of the book will show the names of authors I have consulted in the course of my studies and I hereby express my sincere gratitude to them. My thanks are due also to the prominent Jaina leaders and the editors of Jaina newspapers for extending their whole-hearted support to carry out a "Social Survey of Jaina Community" on scientific lines and to the persons who so readily sent their replies to the Questionnaire (see appendix B) issued in this connexion. I am also grateful to the authorities of Seth H. G. Jain Boarding, Bombay, for the facilities given by them.

I acknowledge my indebtedness to the University of Bombay for the grant-in-aid received by me from the University towards the cost of publication of this book.

I must offer my thanks to Shri V. Y. Jathar, General Manager of Samyukta Karnatak Press, Hubli, for the neat printing work executed by him and to Shri Krishna Potdar, Proprietor of Shrinivas & Co., Dharwar, for providing blocks used in this book.

I would be failing in my duty if I forget to offer my sincere thanks to my several friends who rendered to me timely help in one form or another.

Rajaram College,
Kolhapur
REPUBLIC DAY
January 26, 1959 }

Vilas Adinath Sangave

DIACRITICAL MARKS ADOPTED IN THIS BOOK

ñ	ନ୍ତା	ନ୍ତା
ch	ଚୁ	ଚୁ
chh	ଚୁଁ	ଚୁଁ
ñ	ଞ୍ଚୁ	ଞ୍ଚୁ
t	ତୁ	ତୁ
th	ତୁଁ	ତୁଁ
d	ଦୁ	ଦୁ
dh	ଦୁଁ	ଦୁଁ
n	ନୁ	ନୁ
s	ଶୁ	ଶୁ
sh	ଶୁଁ	ଶୁଁ
s	ଶୁ	ଶୁ
h	ହୁ	ହୁ
!	ପୁ	ପୁ

CONTENTS

Diacritical marks adopted in this Book	x
Abbreviations used in this Book	xvii

CHAPTER I

POPULATION

		Page
1. Total Jaina Population .. ..	.. ..	1
2. Distribution of Jaina Population .. ..	.. ..	3
3. Age Distribution of Jaina Population .. ..	.. ..	5
4. Sex Composition of Jainas .. ..	.. ..	9
5. Fertility and Longevity of Jainas .. ..	.. ..	14
6. Proportion of Unmarried, Married and Widowed among Jainas .. .. ..	.. .. ..	16
7. Proportion of Literacy in the Jaina Community ..	..	22

Appendices.

i. Statement showing distribution of Jaina population. .. .. ..	.. .. ..	25
ii. Graph showing variation since 1881 of Jaina population per 10,000 of the whole population in main Provinces and States. .. ..	.. ..	26
iii. Diagram showing Jaina population by Provinces or States according to 1941 census. ..	..	27
iv. Statement showing distribution of Jaina population according to Provinces or States. ..	..	28
v. Statement showing the number per 1,000 of Jaina population who live in towns. .. ..	.. ..	29
vi. Statement showing urban population per cent in the total Jaina population, 1941. .. ..	.. ..	31
vii. Statement showing the mean ages by sex for the different Provinces and States and for religions according to 1931 census. .. ..	.. ..	32
viii. Diagram showing number of females per 1,000 males among Jaina population, 1901-1941. ..	..	33
ix. Diagram showing number of females per 1,000 males in all communities in India, 1941. ..	..	34

	Page
x. Diagram showing number of females per 1,000 males among Jaina population by Province or State according to 1941 census.	35
xi. Diagram showing distribution of 1,000 persons by civil condition according to 1941 census.	36
xii. Diagram showing distribution of 1,000 Jaina persons by civil conditions.	37
xiii. Statement showing distribution by main age-periods and civil condition of 10,000 of each sex and religion in the Bombay Presidency according to 1931 census.	38
xiv. Statements showing distribution of Jaina population in Bombay Presidency by civil condition of 1,000 of each sex and main age-period from 1881-1931.	39
xv. Diagram showing literacy per mille of the population aged five and over in main communities, 1931.	41
xvi. Diagram showing literacy among Jainas by sex and locality, 1931.	42
xvii. Statement showing number per 1,000 Jainas who are literate according to Provinces and States.	43
xviii. Diagram showing changes in Jaina population in various respects.	45
xix. Diagram showing growth of literacy per mille of Jaina population, 1901-1931. ..	46

CHAPTER II

DIVISIONS IN THE JAINA COMMUNITY (RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS)

1. Early History of Jaina Religion	47
2. The Great Schism	50
3. The Two Main Sects	52
4. The Major and Minor Sub-sects	53
5. Rise of Sections and Sub-sections	58
6. Attempts of Reconciliation	61

CHAPTER III

DIVISIONS IN THE JAINA COMMUNITY (SOCIAL DIVISIONS)

	Page
1. Introduction .....	.. 64
2. Jaina Conception of Varnas or Classes ..	.. 64
3. Some Important Things about Jaina Castes ..	.. 71
4. Jaina Caste System ..	.. 76
5. Jaina Castes in the North ..	.. 86
6. Jaina Castes in the Deccan ..	.. 99
7. Jaina Castes in the South ..	.. 109

Appendices

i. Names of 84 castes in the Jaina community with places of their origin. ..	.. 111
ii. Names of 84 castes in the Jaina community as given by Mr. Jain, P. D. ..	.. 114
iii. Names of 84 castes in the Jaina community as given by Prof. H. H. Wilson. ..	.. 115
iv. Names of 84 castes in the Jaina community from Gujarātha. ..	.. 117
v. Names of castes in the Jaina community from the Deccan. ..	.. 118
vi. Names of castes with their population figures as given by All India Digambara Jaina Directory, 1914. ..	.. 120
vii. Names of castes and sub-castes in Gujarātha with their population figures as given by Śvetāmbara Jaina Directory, 1909. ..	.. 123
viii. Names of Digambara Jaina castes and sub-castes with their population according to Provinces, 1914. ..	.. 124
ix. Names of gotras found among Agaravāla Jainas as given by various authors. ..	.. 131
x. Names of gotras found in the Śrimāla caste of Jainas. ..	.. 131
xi. List showing gotras, dynasties, places of origin and family deities found in the Khaṇdelavāla caste. ..	.. 134

CHAPTER IV

MARRIAGE AND POSITION OF WOMAN

		Page
1. What is Marriage ? ..	..	137
2. Object of Marriage ..	..	138
3. Normality of Marriage ..	..	142
4. Forms of Marriage ..	..	143
5. Qualifications of Parties to the Union ..	..	147
6. Age of Marriage ..	..	149
7. Choice of Partners ..	..	150
8. Marriage Preliminaries and Ceremonies ..	..	162
9. Consummation of Marriage ..	..	169
10. Polygyny ..	..	170
11. Dissolution of Wedlock ..	..	173
12. The Position of Woman ..	..	177

CHAPTER V

JAINA ETHICS AND MISCELLANEOUS CUSTOMS AND MANNERS

1. Introductory ..	..	194
2. Meaning of Jainism ..	..	194
3. Fundamental Principles of Jainism ..	..	195
4. Jaina Philosophy ..	..	196
✓ 5. The Theory of Karma ..	..	203
6. Moksha Marga or Way to Salvation ..	..	206
7. Jaina Ethics ..	..	211
8. Criticism of Jaina Ethics ..	..	225
9. Jaina Worship ..	..	234
10. Festivals and Fasts ..	..	245
11. Jaina Superstitions ..	..	254
12. Jaina Sam-skaras ..	..	258
13. Jaina Tirthakshetras or Places of Pilgrimage ..	..	270
14. Occupations and Professions ..	..	277
15. Food and Drink ..	..	279
16. Dress and Ornaments ..	..	282
17. Language and Literature ..	..	283
18. Jaina Institutions ..	..	286

CHAPTER VI
THE WORKING MODEL

		Page
1.	Introduction	299
2.	Names and Surnames	305
3.	Occupations and Professions	306
4.	Sects and Sub-sects	307
5.	Gotra	307
6.	Sāṅgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Sākhā	310
7.	Castes and Sub-Castes	311
8.	Population and Distribution of Castes	312
9.	Inter-relations of Castes	313
10.	Hierarchical Organisation of Castes	316
11.	Caste Pañchāyatas	317
12.	Caste Feasts	320
13.	Jaina and Hindu Castes	321
14.	Rules of Endogamy and Exogamy	322
15.	Castes and Charitable Institutions	324
16.	Choice of Occupations	326
17.	Caste and Education	327
18.	Religious Sanction to Castes	328
19.	Institution of Bhāṭṭāraka	330
20.	Origin of Castes	335
21.	Jainas in Ascetic Stage	336
22.	Religious Disabilities	338
23.	Widow Remarriage	338
24.	Polygyny	340
25.	Number of Criminals	340
26.	Castes and Social Reform	341
27.	Castes and Temples	342
28.	Family Deity	343
29.	Migration of Families	345
30.	Distinguished Personalities in Families	346
31.	Family Organisation	348
32.	Inter-marriages	349
33.	Jaina Festivals	350
34.	Jaina Rites	351
35.	Jaina Saṃskāras	353

	Page
36. Jaina Language	355
37. Sacred Thread	356
38. Jaina Priests	358
39. Jaina Fasts	359
40. Death Ceremonies	360
41. Religious Education	362
42. Worship of Hindu Deities	363
43. Problem of Widows	364
44. Jaina Culture	366
45. General	367

CHAPTER VII

RETROSPECT

1. The Historical Background	374
2. Achievements of Jainas	386
3. Reasons for Survival of Jainas	397
4. Causes of Decline of Jainism	407
5. Present Problems and the Way Out	411

CHAPTER VIII

EPILOGUE

424

<i>Appendix A:</i> Jaina population according to 1951 census ..	433
<i>Appendix B:</i> Copy of the Questionnaire issued ..	438

Bibliography:

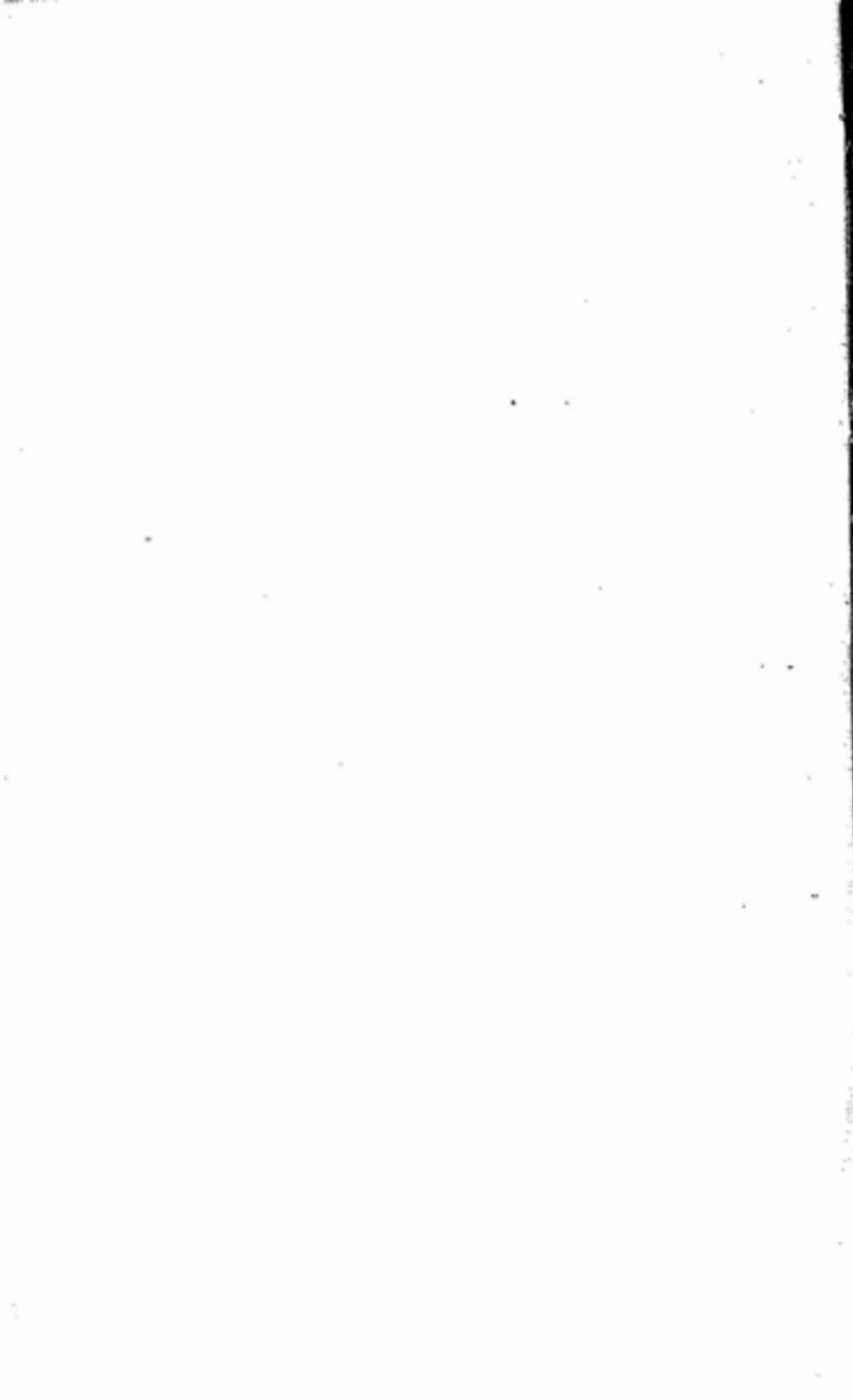
(a) Works in English, Hindi, Gujarathi and Marathi ..	445
(b) Works in Sanskrit and Prakrit	453
(c) Articles	455
(d) Journals	459
<i>Index</i>	460
<i>Errata</i>	476

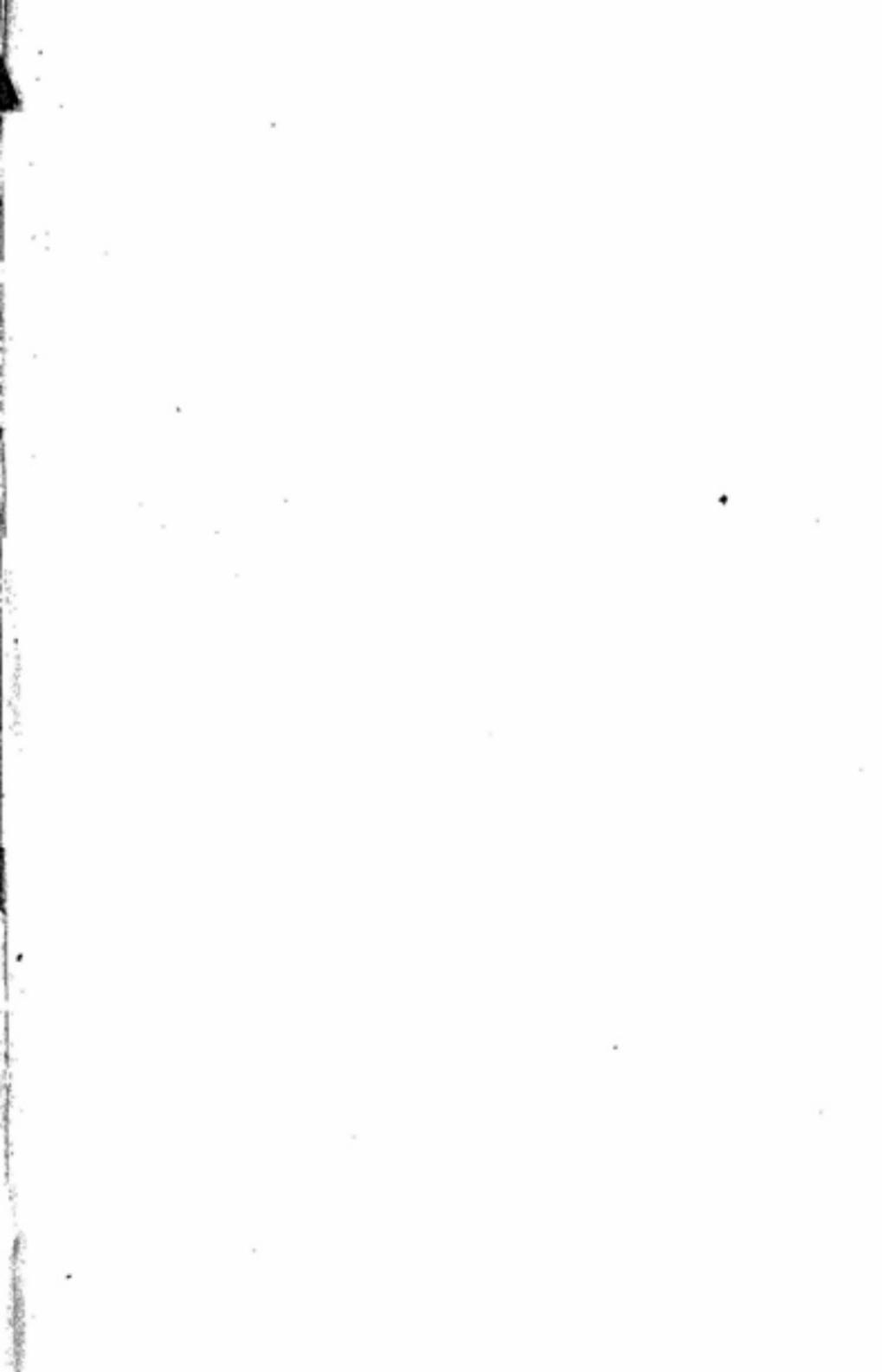
ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THIS BOOK

A. P.	Ādi Purāpa
A. S.	Ātmānuśāsana
A. Su.	Āchārāṅga Sūtra
B. G.	Bombay Gazetteer
C. H. I.	Cambridge History of India
C. P.	Central Provinces
Cul. H. I.	Cultural Heritage of India
D. S.	Dravyasaṅgraha
E. R. E.	Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics, Edited by Hastings (14th Edition)
G. S.	Gommatasāra
I. A.	Indian Antiquary
I. C.	Indian Culture
I. H. Q.	Indian Historical Quarterly
J. A.	Jaina Antiquary
J. B. B. R. A. S.	Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society
J. G.	Jaina Gazette
J. H.	Jaina Hitaishi
J. R. A. S.	Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society
J. S. B.	Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara
J. U. B.	Journal of the University of Bombay
K. S.	Kalpa Sūtra
M. D. J. G.	Māṇikachanda Digambara Jaina Grantha- mālā, Bombay.
M. T. C.	Mysore Tribes and Castes
N. I. A.	New Indian Antiquary
N. S.	Niyamasāra
N. V.	Nītvākyāṁṭam
P. S.	Purushārthaśiddhyupāya
Pn. S.	Pañchāstikāyasāra
R. S.	Ratnakarāṇḍaśrāvakāchāra

S. B. E.	Sacred Books of the East
S. B. J.	Sacred Books of the Jainas
S. D.	Sāgāradharmāmṛtam
S. S.	Samayasāra
T. C. B.	Tribes and Castes of Bombay
T. C. C. P.	Tribes and Castes of Central Provinces
T. C. N. D.	Tribes and Castes of Nizam's Dominions
T. C. N. W. P.	Tribes and Castes of North Western Provinces and Oudh.
T. C. S. I.	Tribes and Castes of Southern India
T. S.	Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra
T. S. P. C.	Trishashthīśalākāpurushacharitam
T. V. A.	Trivarṇikāchāra
U. P.	United Provinces
U. S.	Uttarādhyayana Sūtra
V. S.	Vikrama Sāmvat

JAINA COMMUNITY
A SOCIAL SURVEY





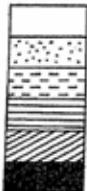
MAP OF INDIA

SHOWING DISTRIBUTION OF JAINAS
1941 CENSUS



REFERENCES

NUMBER OF JAINAS
PER 10,000 POPULATION



CHAPTER ONE

POPULATION

1. TOTAL JAINA POPULATION

The Jaina population in India according to the 1941 census is only 14,49,286. It was 12,21,896 in 1881. This means that the Jaina population has increased only by 19% in the last 60 years. The growth was not steadily maintained but it has varied from decade to decade. The figures of percentage increase of Jaina population are as follows:

1881-1891	..	+ 15·9 per cent.
1891-1901	..	- 5·8 per cent.
1901-1911	..	- 6·4 per cent.
1911-1921	..	- 5·6 per cent.
1921-1931	..	+ 6·2 per cent.
1931-1941	..	+ 15·8 per cent.

These figures do not, however, portray the real facts since all Jainas have not been enumerated as Jainas. In the case of Jainism it is doubtful whether any student of comparative religion could possibly class Jainism as a sect of Hinduism. Yet, it is a fact that many Jainas regard themselves and are regarded as Hindus. That is why instructions were issued to the census enumerators that Jainas should be entered as "Jainas and not as Hindus, even though they themselves regard themselves as such." This fact that the Jainas regard themselves and are regarded as Hindus necessarily vitiates the census figures and obscures the increase or decrease of the Jaina population from census to census. On some occasions more and on others less Jainas will be incorrectly returned as Hindus. It is not likely that the converse case of Hindus returned as Jainas would ever extremely occur. Incorrect enumeration thus lurks as a dominant factor in the census figures of Jainas. This tendency among Jainas to regard themselves as Hindus is very prominently noticeable from the beginning of this century and that is why there appears a continuous decrease in the Jaina population. Since the last 15-20 years this tendency

has been largely overcome by various methods adopted by the Jainas to reorganize their community. This is clearly visible in the figures of 1931 and 1941 census reports. There would have been a considerable change in the 1931 census figures if there would not have been non-co-operation movement in the form of boycotting the census operations which affected the Jaina community to a very large extent. Many discrepancies in the figures relating to the Jainas even in the 1941 census report have been brought to light by various organisations in the Jaina community. But due to the communal awakening, which is clearly noticeable all over India, it can be hoped that the Jaina figures will, in future, be more authentic and reliable.

Taking the figures as they stand, we can safely say that the Jaina community is gradually decreasing in number proportionately to the population of the country as a whole. The Jaina community now stands at 0·37 per cent of the population of India instead of the 0·48 per cent of 1881. From the statement showing the number of Jainas per 10,000 of the whole population at the last seven censuses, it will be seen that the proportion of Jainas in the total population is gradually decreasing¹ in almost all Provinces. Taking into consideration the more or less settled nature of the Jaina community the rate at which the population is decreasing is apt to cause alarm. There are many causes to which this gradual decline has been attributed. "This (gradual decrease) is probably due in part to the practice of child marriage and the prohibition of widow remarriage, and partly also to the small size of the community which, attracting as it does no adherents from outside, cannot increase at the same rate as much larger ones. Dr. Guha suggests with some force that the Jainas have a lowered fertility and an increased infant mortality rate on account of their division into small endogamous groups, some of which in Ahmedabad do not exceed 500 souls.²" The relative significance of these causes for the decline of Jaina population

1. Vide Appendix I—Statement showing the distribution of Jaina population and Appendix II—Diagram showing the variation of Jaina population.

2. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 380.

will be discussed at a greater length later on.¹ But let it be mentioned here that this continuous downfall, if not properly checked at this stage, will undoubtedly result in effacing the Jaina community from the surface of the earth, in not too distant a future.

2. DISTRIBUTION OF JAINA POPULATION

The Jaina community is spread all over India—right from Kashmir to Travancore and from Sind to Bengal. The Jainas seem to have preferred States and Agencies to Provinces as their permanent abodes. According to 1941 figures, 60 per cent of the Jainas live in States and only 40 per cent are in the Provinces. The similar figures for 1901 census stand at 64 per cent and 36 per cent respectively. Even though the Jainas have dispersed over a wide area, they show signs of concentration in certain localities.² Out of the total Jaina population more than 40 per cent are found in the Bombay Province and its Native States including Baroda, nearly 25 per cent live in Rajputana and Ajmer-Merwara, about 8 per cent are seen in the Central India Agency and 7 per cent in the United Provinces. The rest are scattered over other parts of India and are most numerous in the Central Provinces and Berar, the Punjab, Mysore, Madras, Hyderabad and Delhi. It will be seen from the accompanying map that the Jainas are proportionately most numerous in the Western India States, Rajputana, Ajmer-Merwara and Deccan and Kolhapur States. This distribution brings out one fact clearly that the Jainas are concentrated in the Hindu dominated areas and are very sparsely populated in the areas dominated by the Muslims. Jainism is more nearer to Hinduism than to any other religion in India and this might have resulted in the Jainas choosing the Hindus as their neighbours. The sudden disappearance of the Jaina population in the direction of Sind is somewhat remarkable and so also is the fact that

1. Vide Chapter VII.

2. Vide Appendix III—Diagram showing the Jaina population by Province or State according to 1941 census and Appendix IV—Statement showing the distribution of Jaina population at the last four censuses.

there are no Jainas among the indigenous inhabitants of Bengal, Bihar, where the Jaina religion had its origin, and Orissa where the caves of Udayagiri and Khaṇḍagiri bear witness to its popularity in the early centuries of the Christian era. It is really surprising to note that the Jainas are most scarce in the land where their Lord Mahāvira flourished. The predominance of the Jaina population in the eastern part of India could be seen from the Sarāks of Western Bengal, Chhota Nagpur and Orissa who are the Hinduised remnants of the early Jaina people to whom local legends ascribe the ruined temples, defaced images, and even the abandoned copper mines of that part of Bengal. Their name is a variant of ('Śravaka' Sanskrit 'hearer') the designation of the Jaina laity.¹ But it seems that the Jaina religion was not in a position to wield a continuous hold on the population and later on with the advent of Muslim predominance in that part of the country even the lay Jainas had no course open but to migrate to other areas.

The relative absence of the Jainas in Madras and their comparative insignificance in Mysore are noteworthy factors in the distribution of the Jaina population. The Jainas reigned supreme in the South India for a considerable period and there are ample evidences to show that in every walk of life their influence was felt by all people. In many places, the Jaina religion was the State religion and numerous villages and towns seem to have been occupied by Jainas only, as can be seen from the names of villages or places like 'Samana-halli' or the village of the Śramanas, 'Śravapa-Belgola' or the white pond of the Śramanas and Savanoor, Savanadurga, etc. But now only the temples and colossal statues of Gommateśvara bear witness to its popularity. This sudden disappearance of the Jaina population from the land where they had a continuous hold for a long time can, it seems, be attributed to the vigorous prosecutionist policy followed by the non-Jainas against the Jainas.

The Jaina community being composed mainly of traders and merchants is essentially urban in character. Taking India as a whole we find that in 1941, 41·4 per cent of the Jaina population

^{1.} Census of India, 1901, Vol. I Part II, page 523.

lived in towns, and in Provinces the urban Jaina population was 48·9 per cent and in States and Agencies it was 36·5 per cent. The corresponding figures for all religions are 12·9 per cent, 12·7 per cent and 13·4 per cent. There is a continuous increase in the Jaina urban population in almost all Provinces and States.¹ In India it increased by 11·4 per cent during the last four decades, while in Provinces the increase was 17·3 per cent and in States and Agencies 8·9 per cent. From the Statement² showing urban Jaina population per cent of the total Jaina population in 1941, it will be seen that the Jainas are more urban in localities, where they are less in number and more rural in areas where they are numerous. That is why in Cochin, Travancore, Madras and Orissa States all Jaina people are urban and in the Western India States, Rajputana Agency and Deccan and Kolhapur States, they are mainly rural. This is due to the fact that in any region with a pronounced majority of one religion it will be found that persons not of that religion are mainly to be seen in the towns. A Parsi or a Christian, unless by an accident brought up in a village, will not find himself at home in rural conditions. This sort of phenomenon is common all over the world. Everywhere the country is homogeneous and native, the town heterogeneous and cosmopolitan. All minorities thus find their way to and flourish in towns and that is why the Jaina community is essentially urban in character.

3. AGE DISTRIBUTION OF JAINA POPULATION

According to Sundbarg a normal population has about one half of its total between the ages of 15-50 and the proportion of those above that age group to those below it indicates whether the population is increasing, decreasing or stationary.³ The youngest of the three population groups must be double the eldest if the population is to continue to grow, just short of that point it may be stationary and if the elder continues to exceed the younger,

1. See Appendix V—Statement showing the number per 1,000 of the Jaina population who live in towns.

2. Vide Appendix VI.

3. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 87.

the population must be regressive or decreasing. These Sundbarg's categories need readjustment before they can be satisfactorily applied to the Indian conditions as the epidemics and other causes affect the elder population more in this country and the average age is lower than what it is in other countries. The distribution of the Jaina population according to the Sundbarg's categories is as follows:

Year	Percentage of Jaina population aged		
	0-15 years	15-50 years	50 years & more
1931	36.7	51.7	11.6
1921	35.5	51.6	12.9
1911	33.6	53.9	12.5

This clearly shows that the Jaina community has been progressive for all these years. Figures for the age distribution of the population are not available in the 1941 census report. But from the figures available upto 1931, it will be seen that the working population (15-50 years age group) of Jainas decreased in the 1921 census and showed a very slight increase in the 1931 census. But unless we know 1941 figures, no conclusion can be drawn from the above figures. Even though the Jaina community is progressive it is the least progressive when compared with the other communities in India. The table given below shows the population of different communities arranged in order of progressiveness as determined from the 1931 census returns.¹

Community	Percentage of population aged		
	0-15 years	15-50 years	50 years & over
Tribal	43.9	47.8	8.3
Muslim	42.2	49.3	8.5
Christian	41.7	49.2	9.1
Jew	37.7	53.6	8.7
Hindu	39.2	50.9	9.9
Sikh	39.5	48.2	12.3
Jaina	36.7	51.7	11.6
Parsi ²	27.2	56.7	16.1

1. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 57.

2. The Parsi population is stationary.

It would be interesting to see the age distribution of the Jaina and other communities. This is required not because there is any inherent connection between a man's religious beliefs and the number of years he lives. But in the social conditions of India religion is a real cleavage of peoples. It is due to the fact that in the social organization of Indian life each religion is associated with several customs and practices of its own which have a very important effect upon age. From the age distribution of all communities in the Bombay Presidency in 1931, it is marked that there is a very little difference in the age groupings of Hindus and Muslims, either for males or females. Jainas have fewer persons in the age groups from 0-20 years than have either Hindus or Muslims.¹ On the other hand Jainas have more persons in the ages above 40. In this respect, the Jainas resemble the Zoroastrians, who exhibit in an extreme form a lopsidedness in age distribution. Up to the age 20, the Jaina distribution is the same as that of the Christian. This tendency in the Jaina community to have less persons in the age-group 0-20 years and more in the age-group above 40 years as compared with other communities is observed all over India as can be seen from the mean age of the Jainas which is higher than that of Hindus, Muslims and other people. This is evident from the statement² showing the mean ages by sex for all religions according to the 1931 census.³ Moreover, the above tendency appears to be persistent in the Jaina community as is clear from the statement showing age distribution of 10,000 of each sex in the Jaina Community in the Bombay Presidency from 1881-1931.⁴

1. Vide Appendix VII— Census Report, Bombay Presidency, 1931, Part I, page 88.

2. Vide Appendix VII.

3. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part 1, p. 90

4. Census Report, Bombay Presidency, 1931, Part I, page 102.

JAINA COMMUNITY—A SOCIAL SURVEY

AGE	1931		1921		1911		1901		1891		1881	
	Male	Female	Male	Female	Male	Female	Male	Female	Male	Female	Male	Female
0- 5	1199	1525	955	1184	1025	1265	973	1137	1074	1314	1004	1205
5-10	1151	1233	1147	1333	1014	1178	1137	1249	1070	1211	1102	1211
10-15	1123	1106	1199	1101	1172	1014	1230	1125	1111	956	1249	1085
15-20	973	933	904	815	979	823	908	793	945	795	904	768
20-40	3429	3134	3592	3221	3610	3322	3479	3281	3526	3273	3558	3342
40-60	1708	1586	1735	1721	1750	1794	1829	1809	1798	1785	1766	1800
60 & over	417	483	468	625	450	604	444	606	476	666	418	589

4. SEX COMPOSITION OF JAINAS

The sex composition of the Jainas reveals a clear deficiency of females. There are only 930 females per 1,000 males in the Jaina community. This ratio is varying from census to census. In 1901, there were 929 Jaina females per 1,000 Jaina males, in 1911 the proportion was 940, in 1921, 931, and in 1931, 940.¹ No definite tendency is revealed by these figures and the alternate variation seems to be the result of incorrect enumeration of females. Compared with other communities the ratio of females to males in the Jaina community is too low.² There are 972 females per 1,000 males among Parsis, 969 among Scheduled Castes, 968 among Indian Christians, 961 among Jews, 939 among other Hindus and 935 among all communities. Even among the Jainas there is a wide variation in the sex composition from Province to Province. From the diagram³ showing the number of females per 1000 males among the Jaina population by Province or State according to 1941 census, it will be noticed that while in Western India States the number is 1,111, it is only 533 in Bengal. The proportion appears to be comparatively better in areas where the Jainas are sufficient in number e. g. in Western India States, Rajputana State, Baroda State, etc., and very meagre in areas where the Jainas are less in number e. g., in Sind, Bihar, Assam and Bengal. This means that the Jaina population in outlying Provinces like Sind, Bengal, Assam etc., is mainly composed of males who appear to have gone there for trading purposes and who do not, it seems, wish to settle there permanently.

A comparative statement showing the number of females per 1000 males in the Jaina community and all communities together by Province or State according to 1941 census is given below.

1. See Appendix VIII— Diagram showing the number of females per 1000 males among Jaina population. 1901-1941.
2. See Appendix IX— Diagram showing the number of females per 1000 males in all communities in India, 1941.
3. Vide Appendix X.

Province or State	Jaina Commu- nity	All Commu- nities	Province or State	Jaina Commu- nity	All Commu- nities
W. I. States	1111	979	Madras	898	1009
Rajputana	1016	907	Ajmer and Merwar	884	900
States & Agencies	990	941	C. I. States	866	947
Gujrat States	984	931	United Provinces	865	906
Baroda State	974	931	Mysore State	863	949
Punjab	881	847	Gwalior State	852	893
Punjab States	870	836	Provinces	846	933
Delhi	839	715	Bombay	830	927
INDIA	930	935	Sind	801	818
C. P. & Berar	921	994	Bihar	750	994
Deccan & Kolhapur States	905	982	Assam	578	896
Hyderabad State.	885	957	Bengal	533	899

From the above table it will be noticed that the proportion of females among the Jainas is greater than that of all communities together in the States and Agencies, especially in Western India States, Rajputana Agency, Gujrat States and Baroda State and Provinces of Punjab and Delhi. It may be recalled that these are the areas where the Jainas are concentrated and are proportionately more numerous in the whole population. Conversely, in the areas where the Jaina population is small in number, the proportion of females in the Jaina community is less than that of all communities together, e.g., Provinces like Sind, Bihar, Assam and Bengal. This disproportion in the sex composition of the Jaina community in the various localities clearly brings home the fact that the Jainas appear to be centred in and attached to the part of India bounded by Western India States and even though they are found in the outlying Provinces there does not seem to be any desire on their part to settle there permanently.

There are various causes which contribute to the deficiency of females, viz., (i) concealment of females, (ii) excess of males at birth, (iii) female infanticide, (iv) neglect of female children, (v) higher female mortality and (vi) religious conversion of males. It is very difficult to say which of these factors are responsible for creating the disparity among males and females in the Jaina community. The Jaina population being literate and intelligent would not indulge in concealing the females at the time of the census. Since the exact figures of sex of children at birth are not available we cannot say whether there is any excess of males at birth in the Jaina community. The Jainas are sufficiently advanced and as such there could not be any possibility of practising female infanticide by them. It is true that in a society where the female children are considered to be a burden, they are liable to be neglected. But this neglect perhaps arises out of the economic condition of parents and as economic condition of the Jaina community is comparatively well, there are very less chances of females being neglected. Female mortality is different at various age-periods. The death rate among females is higher than that of males in the 5-10 years age-group. This is due to the neglect of female children which varies to some extent with economic circumstances and, as said above, female mortality on this account must be low in the Jaina community. A study of specific death rate shows that after the age of 5, only in the 40 and over age-groups, the female death rate is lower than that of male. This means that the female death rate is higher in age-period 5-40. If the female ratio for any community is declining it might be due to the fact that the mortality amongst women aged between 5 and 40 might be more than offsetting the female superiority in the age-groups 1 to 5 years and over 60 years. There is every probability that female death rate between the age-period 5-40 might be higher in the Jaina community as many Jaina females are married at an early age and are called upon to bear children too early and possibly too often. But, due to the lack of figures of female death rate at various age-periods it is difficult to pronounce to what extent the high female mortality is responsible for the deficiency of females in the Jaina community. No religious conversion is resorted to

by the Jaina community and we should not, on this account, assume the excess of males among the Jainas.

With all these factors operating to reduce the number of females, the female wastage in the Jaina community is considerably low as compared with that in other communities. The table below shows the female ratio in the first year of life as compared to that at all ages censused in 1931, indicating the comparative wastage of female life from whatever causes.¹

Community 1	Females per 1,000 males (of population returned by age)		Variation per cent between columns 2 and 3 4
	Aged 0-1 2	All ages 3	
Sikh	947	784	—17.2
Muslim	999	904	— 9.5
INDIA	1013	941	— 7.1
Hindu	1017	953	— 6.3
Christian	1002	952	— 5.0
Parsi	981	940	— 4.2
Jaina	972	941	— 3.2
Tribal	1045	1009	— 3.4

The continuous deficiency of females has resulted in stunting the growth of the Jaina community. The figures of Jaina population for the Bombay Presidency from 1881 to 1931 are given below:—

Year 1	Jaina Population		
	British Districts 2	Bombay States 3	Total for Bombay Presidency 4
1881	2,40,436	1,00,631	3,41,047
1901	2,27,530	98,106	3,25,636
1911	2,12,074	79,013	2,91,087
1921	2,14,401	77,331	2,91,732
1931	1,99,814	87,353	2,87,167

1. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 206.

In the Bombay Presidency, the number of Jaina females to 1000 males of the population at the last five censuses is as follows:—

1901:	876;	1911:	841;	1921:	821;
1931:	847;	1941:	830 ¹ .		

In consequence of the difficulty which arises from this disproportion of males to females, as the Census Reporter observes, brides are both difficult to find and costly to secure. Marriage, therefore, can only be undertaken when the potential bridegroom has gathered together the necessary funds. This disparity gets still more intensified as the whole community has been divided and sub-divided into various small endogamous groups where marriage with outside the group is strictly forbidden by the caste rules. As regards the improvement in the decade 1921–1931 the Census Superintendent remarks that the improvement is primarily due to the revolt of the younger generation, which has initiated the practice of securing brides from outside the Presidency, generally from the Northern and Central India and even, in rare cases, from outside the Jaina community. Though the improvement has not been maintained in the succeeding decade (1931–1941), the innovation started by the younger generation will gain ground if the restrictions on choosing the bride are not loosened and no permission is given to convert the brides from other communities to Jainism. Since the community as a whole is in affluent circumstances, and the general level of intelligence is high, it is not unlikely that the schism will end in the acceptance, by the seniors, of the innovations introduced by the juniors, more particularly as the alternative may quite possibly be a drift towards Hinduism and the total rejection of Jainism. The movement is in its infancy and clearer indications are necessary for the formations of definite conclusions.

It is generally recognised that the ratio of females to males increases inversely with social standing among Hindus.² This is well illustrated by figures in Bombay Presidency where the whole Hindu population has been divided up according to education

1. Includes Sind.

2. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 198.

and social status into advanced, intermediate, backward and depressed classes. For the advanced classes, the ratio of women to men is 878 per 1000, for intermediate it is 935 per 1000, for the aboriginal tribes it is 956 per 1000, for other backward classes 953 per 1000, while for the depressed classes it rises to 982 per 1000 males. The Jainas (excepting Chaturtha, Pafchama and Šetavāla sub-castes thereof) have been classified in Bombay into advanced class. It will be interesting to note the ratio of females to males in each of the sub-castes in the Jaina community and to verify whether the contention that the ratio of females to males varies inversely according to social status is true also in the case of various sub-castes of the Jaina community. The population figures of several castes in the Jaina community are not readily available and special efforts will have to be made to ascertain the sex composition of these castes.

5. FERTILITY AND LONGEVITY OF JAINAS

As an indication of comparative fertility, the proportion borne by children 0-10 to married females of 15-40 may be examined and the table below gives figures for some communities.¹

Community	Number aged 0-10	Number of married women aged 15-40	Number of children 0-10 to each married woman aged 15-40
Tribal	24,43,237	12,47,270	1.96
Christian	17,60,983	9,08,570	1.94
Sikh	11,94,247	6,21,095	1.92
Muslim	2,29,72,076	1,28,70,165	1.78
Jaina	3,19,953	1,95,063	1.64
Hindu	6,61,77,624	4,03,78,332	1.64
Parsi	19,404	12,142	1.60

Even though the fertility of Jaina women is low as compared with that of Christian, Sikh, and Muslim women, it is showing signs of improvement as seen from the table given below:

1. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 89.

Year	Number aged 0-10	Number of married women aged 15-40	Number of children 0-10 to each married woman aged 15-40
1931	3,19,953	1,95,063	1.64
1921	2,79,748	1,71,458	1.63
1911	2,93,714	1,96,754	1.49

Similarly the proportion of persons aged 60 and over to those aged 15 to 40 is an indication of comparative longevity. Such figures¹ for some communities according to 1931 census are given below in the ascending order of comparative longevity.

Community	Sex	Number aged 60 and over	Number aged 15-40	Percentage of those aged 60 and over on those aged 15-40
				1 2 3 4 5
Tribal	M	1,23,846	14,55,660	8.5
	F	1,39,208	15,29,419	9.1
Hindu	M	47,82,296	5,00,89,524	9.5
	F	50,44,122	4,83,54,902	10.4
Muslim	M	15,47,638	1,61,79,065	9.6
	F	12,77,130	1,50,11,484	8.5
Jaina	M	28,276	2,66,275	10.6
	F	30,340	2,46,619	12.3
Sikh	M	1,47,828	9,63,229	15.3
	F	1,06,023	7,19,448	14.7
Parsi	M	3,957	24,150	16.4
	F	3,730	23,348	16.0

The comparison of figures of fertility and longevity suggests that fertility and longevity, though not quite in inverse ratio, approach such a position. Moreover, from the figures of longevity given above, it will be seen that only among the Tribal, Hindu and Jaina communities the longevity is more among females than what is among males and that the difference is more marked among the Jainas. From the following table showing the longe-

1. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, part V, page 89.

vity figures of Jaina males and females from 1911 to 1931 it will be noticed that no definite conclusions or tendencies can be drawn from them except the fact that the marked difference between the longevity of males and females remains unaltered.

Year	Sex	Number aged 60 and over	Number aged 15 to 40	Percentage of those aged 60 and over on those aged 15-40
1931	M	28,276	2,66,275	10·6
	F	30,340	2,46,619	12·3
1921	M	31,498	2,51,201	12·5
	F	35,499	2,25,803	15·7
1911	M	29,747	2,79,635	19·6
	F	35,177	2,53,854	13·9

6. PROPORTION OF UNMARRIED, MARRIED AND WIDOWED AMONG JAINAS

Before discussing the distribution of the Jaina population according to the three well-known categories of civil condition, viz. unmarried, married and widowed, let us see what is the effective period of marriage of Jaina females. As observed above, in our social organisation, each religion has got a separate set of rules of behaviour and customs regarding the marital relations among the community by the observance of which the age of marriage is fixed and thereby the effective period of marriage is determined. Naturally, this period will be different in each community but broadly we can divide the communities into two groups:—(i) communities other than the Parsis and (ii) Parsi community. The effective period of marriage or period of potential maternity has been fixed as follows:—(i) for communities other than Parsis 15 to 37½ and (ii) for Parsi community 17½ to 42½. Moreover, the inner period of effective marriage for all communities has been taken as 17½ to 37½.

The areas of potential maternity, especially when the inner period, 17½ to 37½, alone is considered, show three different types:

- (i) In the case of Christians and Muslims, the individuals in this period are evenly spread over it, the weight being in the centre from $22\frac{1}{2}$ to $32\frac{1}{2}$, and the values of the two other portions low.
- (ii) In the case of Hindus and still more of Jainas, the weight is all towards the early period.
- (iii) In the case of Parsis, the weight is all towards the late periods.

This means that the majority of children among Muslims and Christians should be born to mothers between the ages of $22\frac{1}{2}$ and $32\frac{1}{2}$; among Hindus to mothers between the ages of $17\frac{1}{2}$ to $32\frac{1}{2}$; among Jainas to mothers between the ages of $17\frac{1}{2}$ to $27\frac{1}{2}$; and among Parsis to mothers between the ages of $27\frac{1}{2}$ to $37\frac{1}{2}$. It clearly reveals the fact that of all females, the Jaina females are required to bear the incidence of child birth at a comparatively early age which has considerably told upon their health and finally resulted in high rate of female mortality.

Let us now turn to the question of the distribution of Jaina population according to civil conditions. The distribution of 1,000 of each sex of various communities according to 1931 census is given below¹:-

Community	Sex	Unmarried	Married	Widowed
INDIA	M	476	470	54
	F	388	505	157
Hindu	M	463	480	57
	F	324	507	169
Jaina	M	503	415	82
	F	337	442	221
Sikh	M	550	370	80
	F	411	475	114
Muslim	M	500	456	44
	F	358	513	129

1. For the diagram see Appendix XI.

This shows that the Hindus, except the Muslims, have got the highest number of females married and the lowest number of females unmarried. The Jainas have fewer unmarried females except the Hindus, fewer married females and more widowed, both male and female, than the general figures. The proportion of unmarried females is nearly the same in the Hindu and Jaina communities, but the difference arises in the disparate proportions of married females and widows, on account of the high proportion of widows amongst the Jainas. This unusually high proportion of widowed, especially among the females, seems to be the predominant feature of the Jaina community for all these years as seen from the statement¹ given below :

Unit	Year	Sex	Unmarried	Married	Widowed
INDIA	1931	M	503	415	82
		F	337	442	221
	1921	M	507	392	101
		F	327	420	253
	1911	M	493	418	89
		F	301	446	253
	1901	M	473	436	91
		F	299	470	231
	Bombay	M	472	457	71
		F	327	471	202
		M	480	434	86
		F	307	456	237
		M	466	452	82
		F	281	474	245
		M	454	470	76
		F	272	499	229
		M	459	480	61
		F	269	516	215
Rajputana	1931	M	517	390	93
		F	321	432	247

1. See appendix XII diagram showing distribution of Jaina persons by civil conditions.

The proportion of widows has continued to increase upto 1921 and has suddenly fallen in 1931. This does not show that the situation has improved but is the result of comparatively more increase in the proportion of married persons due to the fear of the Sarda Act. The 1941 figures of civil conditions are not available but they will clearly reveal a distinct increase in the proportion of widows, if not in 1941 at least in 1951, since the proportion of married females aged 0-15 which was declining all the while has risen in 1931 for the reason mentioned above. This will be evident from the statement given below showing the number of females per 1,000 aged 0-15 who were returned as married for the six decades.

Community	Married females aged 0-15 per 1000 females of that age.						1931 as adjusted
	1881	1891	1901	1911	1921	1931	
Hindu	208	193	186	184	170	199	213
Muslim	153	141	131	123	111	186	210
Jaina	189	172	164	130	117	125	130
Sikh	120	143	101	88	72	80	86
Christian	33	37	38	37	32	43	—

The increase during 1921-31 in the proportion of married females aged 0-15 in the case of Jaina community is comparatively less than what it is in the Hindu and Muslim communities. This means that the Sarda Act did affect the Jainas but not to a great extent.

From the statement¹ showing the distribution by main age-periods of the 10,000 unmarried, married and widowed in the five main religions and all religions together for 1931 in the Bombay Presidency, it will be seen that the Jainas have 497 females per 10,000 married under 5 years of age, Hindus have 360, Christians 294, Muslims 166 and Zoroastrains 36. In the 5-10 years age-group, Hindus have 2,498 females married, Jainas 1,925, Christians 1,085, Muslims 985 and Zoroastrians 67. Between the

1. Vide Appendix XIII.

ages of 10–15, Hindus have 4,613 females married, Jainas 3,998, Muslims 2,637, Christians 1,756 and Zoroastrians 185. Thus, it will appear that the Jainas have the highest number of infant girls married and that both Hindus and Jainas have very high figures for marriages of girls under the age of 15.

The highest proportion of married persons is found for all religions in the 40 to 60 age-group for males (8,094 per 10,000) and in the 15 to 20 age-group for females (8,604 per 10,000). In the case of Jainas the highest proportion of married persons is found in the 20–40 age-group for males (7,421 per 10,000) and in the 15–20 age-group for females (8,650 per 10,000).

The difference in the proportion of males and females in the last age-group in respect of civil conditions are considerable in the various communities. Of 10,000 males aged 60 and over, 866 Parsis are unmarried, 496 Christians, 331 Jainas and 297 Muslims as against only 186 Hindus. Of widows aged 60 years and over, there are 8,954 per 10,000 amongst Jainas, 8,434 amongst Hindus, 8,037 amongst Muslims, 7,605 amongst Christians and 6,308 amongst Parsis. In every community the majority of males in the 60 and over age-group are married, and the majority of the females are widows. The disproportion between the married men and widowers in the last age-group is least in the case of Jainas, who have 5,497 married males as against 4,172 widowers.

Apart from the fact that the Jainas are an early marrying community one can expect that due to impact of Western ideas, there should not have been married persons upto the age of 10. But from the statement¹ showing the distribution of Jaina population in the Bombay Presidency by civil condition of 1,000 of each sex and main age periods from 1881–1931, it will be seen that there are persons married as well as widowed in the early age-groups and moreover their number has not been appreciably reduced as was expected in the case of the Jaina community which is considered to be more advanced, well placed in the economic life and having a high proportion of literate population. Unless

1. Vide Appendix XIV.

a concentrated effort is made by the community to stop the prevalence of early marriages, no improvement can be possible in the near future. So is the case with the problem of widows. The Jainas are continuing to top the list of widows and if the things are allowed to take their own course, no definite improvement can be expected. But on the contrary situation will go from bad to worse. Even now in Rajaputana, where 25 per cent of the Jaina-population is concentrated, there are 247 widows per 1,000 females. This means that out of four females one female is necessarily a widow. Due to this unusually high proportion of widows, who are effectively debarred from marrying again, the sex composition of the community becomes very unbalanced. The ban on widow remarriage considerably reduces the proportion of females in the reproductive period. The relative shortage of females in the age-period 15-45 as compared with males in the age-group 20-50 in some communities is given in the following table.¹

Community	Increase per cent 1921-1931	Females 15-45 per 1000 males 20-50	Remarks
Christian	32	1,080	
Muslim	13	1,026	
Hindu	10	897	After exclusion of widows.
Jaina	6	810	After exclusion of widows.
Sikh	34	848	

From this it will be seen that in the case of Hindus there are in fact 1,059 females in the reproductive period to every 1,000 males. But the factor of the ban on the widow remarriage is important and when the widows in the reproductive period are excluded, the female excess is reduced to a deficiency of over 10 per cent of females in the reproductive period. In the case of the Jainas there are 2,81,517 females of the reproductive ages to 2,75,463 males, an excess of 6,054 females or 1,022 females to every 1,000 males in the reproductive period. But there are

1. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Part I, page 202.

58,289 widows in the reproductive ages and when these are excluded the female excess is reduced to a deficiency of nearly 20 per cent, i. e., leaving only 810 females per 1,000 males in the reproductive period. Sikhs have an actual deficiency of over 15 per cent of females at the reproductive period in any case, and though a considerable number of their potentially reproductive males remain unmarried in consequence, they are, compared to Hindus and Jainas, a late marrying community, while the remarriage of widows is not banned. In the case of the Muslims there is an excess of females (1,026 per 1,000 males) at the reproductive period, in spite of the fact that the female ratio for the whole Muslim population is only 901 per 1,000 males. The Christians have a still greater excess of females at the reproductive ages, having 1,080 females per 1,000 males of that period.

It seems likely that these proportions have some definite bearing on the rates of increase in the different communities. It offers an explanation of the particularly small rate of increase of Jainas, and a reason why Hindus have increased at a slower rate than Muslims. The comparative rate of Hindus' increase would be lower still, were it not for the large additions received from Tribal communities. The exceptionally high Christian rate of increase is of course similarly affected by the inclusion of converts. But the sex ratio is probably contributive. In the case of Jainas, there is no possibility of increase by additions of newcomers to the religion as conversion is never resorted to by Jainas. On the contrary there are indications of Jainas being converted to other religions. Thus, if conversion is not practised, the removal of ban on widow remarriage appears to be the most pressing and urgent need for the growth of the community.

7. PROPORTION OF LITERACY IN THE JAINA COMMUNITY

The Jaina community, being mainly a trading community, for whom literacy is essential, has got a fairly high percentage of literacy. From the diagram¹ showing in the descending order the number per mille literate in each sex in different main communities

1. Vide Appendix XV.

in 1931, it will be seen that the Jainas are next to Parsis and Jews in the spread of literacy. The striking feature of literacy among Jainas is that the males are comparatively very advanced than the females.¹ Even though the proportion of literacy among Jainas is relatively high than what it is in other communities, it appears that the efforts are being made by the Jainas to increase their literacy as can be seen from the table given below² :—

Community.	Variation in literacy per mille aged 5 and over during 1921-31		
	Total.	Males.	Females.
Sikh	+ 23	+ 31	+ 13
Jaina	+ 12	+ 7	+ 19
Muslim	+ 11	+ 14	+ 6
Hindu	+ 9	+ 14	+ 5
Tribal	- 2	- 3	+ 1
Parsi	- 3	- 9	+ 3
Christian	- 6	- 3	- 7

The above table shows the variations in the descending order of the total increase of literacy in the decade 1921-31. It will be noticed that this order is not always retained if the sexes are taken separately. Thus the Jainas, although only second in the rate of growth of general literacy, come first in the growth of literacy among females, but are behind both Hindus and Muslims in the growth of literacy among males.

The table given below shows the growth of literacy per mille (all ages) of the total Jaina population during 1901-1931²

Year	Persons	Males	Females
1901	252	470	18
1911	275	495	40
1921	303	514	76
1931	304	506	91

1. Vide Appendix XVI diagram showing literacy among Jainas by sex and locality, as also Appendices XVII and XVIII.
2. Census of India, 1931, Vol I, Part I, page 329.
3. Vide also Appendix XIX.

From this it will be seen that the progress has been well maintained among the females and among the males there is a slight decrease. This might possibly be due to the boycott of census operations which affected the Jaina community to a very great extent.

The literacy in English is comparatively less in the Jaina community and it stands next to the Parsis, Jews and Christians. The Parsis have 5,041, Jews 2,636, Christians 919, Jainas 306, Sikhs 151, Indian Buddhists 119, Hindus 113, Muslims 92 and Tribal 4 persons literate in English per 10,000 of their population aged 5 and over. Literacy in English is generally high in cities on account of the greater opportunities for its acquisition and its greater economic value in use. The table given below shows the growth of literacy in English in the Jaina community per 10,000 of the population (all ages) during 1901–1931.¹

Year.	Persons.	Males.	Females.
1901	70	134	1
1911	106	202	3
1921	199	370	16
1931	264	496	18

It will be seen that there is a rapid progress in literacy in English especially for males. The figures for females are exceedingly low and those for males are far from satisfactory taking into consideration the fact that the Jainas are mainly an urban community.

From the diagram² showing literacy among Jainas by sex and locality, it will be seen that among males the literacy is highest in the Baroda State (849 per 1,000) and among females in the Jammu and Kashmir States (386 per 1,000). In the Western India States and Rajputana Agency, where the Jaina population is concentrated, the proportion of literacy is comparatively low. The lowest literacy among females is found in

1. See Appendix XX also.

2. See Appendix XV.

Rajputana where the number of females is greater than that of males.

APPENDIX I

The statement showing distribution of Jaina Population

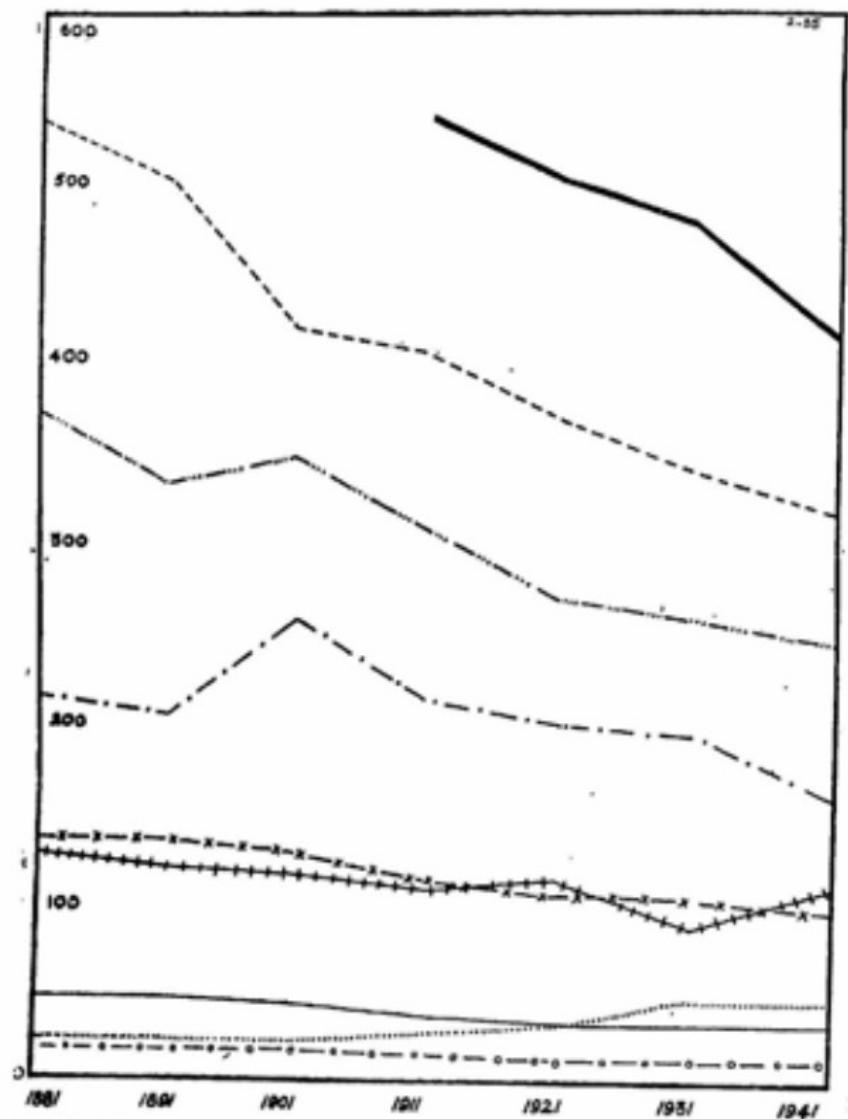
Province or State	Number per 10,000 of the population who are Jainas						
	1881	1891	1901	1911	1921	1931	1941
INDIA	48	49	45	40	37	36	37
Provinces	23	22	21	19	18	17	19
Madras	8	8	7	7	6	7	6
Bombay	132	127 ¹	123 ¹	108 ¹	111 ¹	111	127
Bengal	..	1	1	1	3	2	2
U. P.	18	18	18	16	15	14	19
Punjab	21 ²	21 ²	21 ²	20 ²	17	15	13
Bihar	..	1	1	1	1	1	1
C. P. and Berar	55	52	56	50	49	50	50
Assam	..	2	3	3	5	3	7
Ajmer-Merwara	528	497	418	405	372	348	323
Coorg	6	7	6	6	12	5	2
Delhi	..	..	..	..	96	84	124
Panth Piploda	..	..	..	..	..	..	118
States & Agencies	140	140	136	114	104	101	96
Baroda	214	208	247	214	203	198	164
Central India	54	87	..	..	74	76	76
Deccan	..	..	..	..	..	..	302
Gwalior	..	..	..	..	122	128	131
Hyderabad	8	24	18	16	15	15	15
Kashmir &							
Feudatories	..	2	1	1	2	2	2
Mysore	26	27	25	30	35	45	45
Rajputana	375	338	349	316	284	268	247
Western India	..	..	..	564	535	509	434

1. Includes Sind.

2. Includes Delhi.

APPENDIX II

Graph showing the variation since 1881 of the Jaina Population per 10,000 of the whole population in main Provinces and States



REFERENCES:

INDIA —————
PROVINCES — + — + — + —
STATE & AGENCIES — x — x —

SOMBAY -----
ATMER-MERWARA -----
BARODA -----

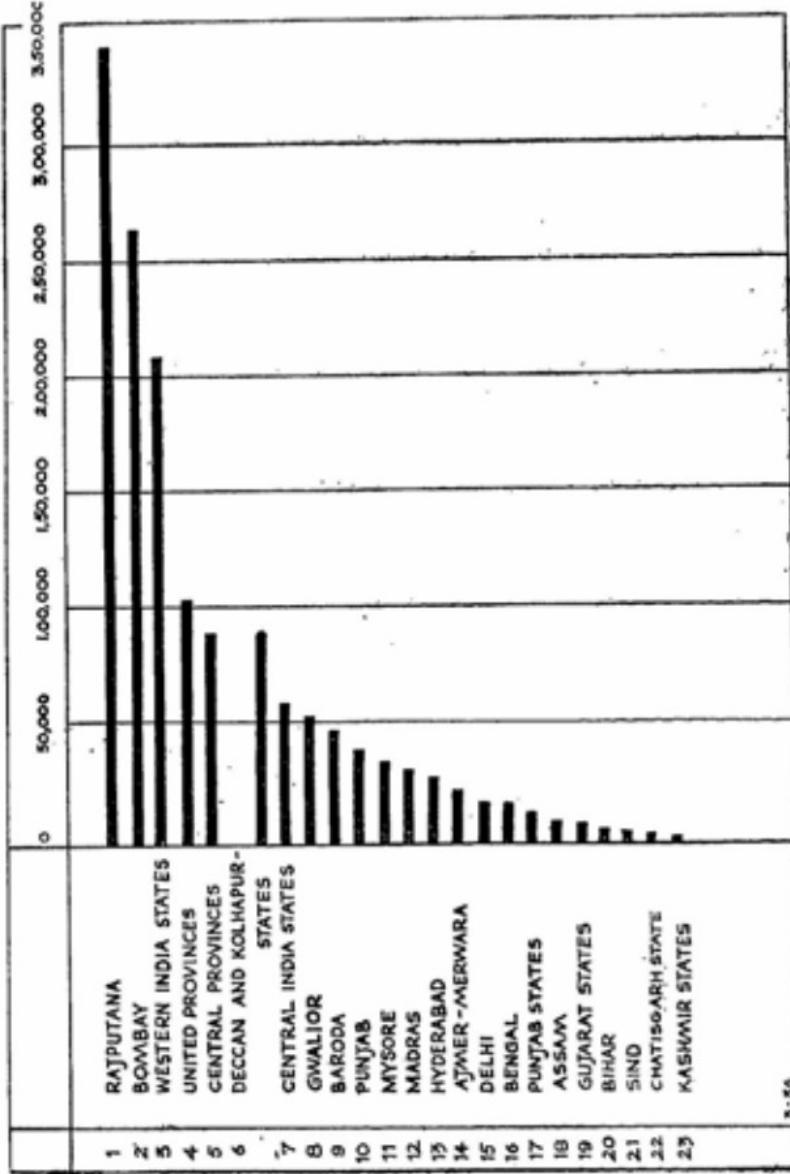
mysore —————
RAJPUTANA —————
WESTERN INDIA STATES —————

APPENDIX III

Diagram showing Jaina Population by Provinces or States according to 1941 census

POPULATION

27



APPENDIX IV

*The statement showing distribution of Jaina Population
according to Provinces or States*

Province or State	1911	1921	1931	1941
INDIA	12,48,182	11,78,596	12,52,105	14,49,286
Provinces	4,58,578	4,55,855	4,53,569	5,78,372
Madras	29,995	25,493	31,206	30,136
Bombay	2,10,725	2,12,867	1,98,670	2,66,231
Bengal	6,206	12,863	9,167	11,126
U. P.	75,427	67,887	67,954	1,02,768
Punjab	39,637	34,432	35,284	38,233
Bihar	4,282	4,213	3,626	4,602
C. P. & Berar	70,258	68,286	77,895	84,593
Assam	2,398	3,397	2,636	6,639
N. W. F. P.	4	3	—	1
Orissa	158	98	108	139
Sind	1,349	1,534	1,144	3,687
Ajmer-Merwara	20,302	18,422	19,497	18,827
Andaman-Nicobar	—	—	—	—
Baluchistan	10	17	32	7
Coorg	97	202	83	34
Delhi	—	4,098	5,345	11,287
Panth-Piploda	—	—	—	62
States & Agencies	7,89,604	7,22,741	7,98,536	8,70,914
Assam	110	106	107	201
Baluchistan	—	—	—	—
Baroda	43,462	43,223	48,408	46,866
Bengal	576	506	502	582
Central India	87,471	44,431	50,268	57,374
Chhattisgarh	—	—	—	2,158
Cochin	—	101	210	355
Deccan (& Kolhapur)	—	—	—	84,226
Gujarat	—	—	—	5,540
Gwalior	—	38,906	45,079	52,714

Province or State	1911	1921	1931	1941
Hyderabad	21,026	18,584	21,543	24,853
Kashmir & Feudatories	345	529	597	910
Mysore	17,630	20,732	29,613	32,858
N. W. F. P.	—	—	—	1
Orissa	—	—	—	99
Punjab	7,138	6,889	7,448	6,844
Punjab Hill	—	—	408	449
Rajputana	3,32,397	2,79,722	3,00,748	3,41,788
Sikkim	—	7	2	7
Travancore	—	33	41	62
U. P.	308	224	214	210
Western India	—	—	2,03,626	2,12,796
Madras	150	—	31	21

APPENDIX V.

*The statement showing number per 1,000 of the Jaina Population
who live in towns*

Province or State	1941	1931	1921	1911	1901
INDIA	414	346	339	296	300
Provinces	489	373	398	354	316
Madras	215	229	164	106	81
Bombay	471	322 ¹	419 ¹	369 ¹	316
Bengal	794	616	650	592	545
U. P.	483	458	397	397	271
Punjab	770	613	530	533	543 ²
Bihar	520	496 ³	312 ³	378 ³	..
C. P. & Berar	405	321	297	255	C. P. 260 Berar 349

1 Includes Sind.

2 Includes N. W. F. P.

3 Includes Orissa.

Province or State	1941	1931	1921	1911	1901
Assam	444	334	342	233	287
N. W. F. P.	..	..	1,000	750	..
Orissa	309	..	..	..	..
Sind	112	..	..	..	..
Ajmer-Merwara	463	333	340	283	266
Baluchistan	..	1,000	529	900	..
Coorg	706	602	203	670	..
Delhi	954	857	822	not given	..
<i>States and Agencies</i>	<i>365</i>	<i>331</i>	<i>302</i>	<i>262</i>	<i>276</i>
Assam	940	844	764	973	..
Baluchistan	..	..	..	..	..
Baroda	499	421	406	388	446
Bengal	875	711	609	351	..
Central India	435	363	311	240	302
Chhattisgarh	583	..	..	..	..
Cochin	1,000	995	1,000	992	1,000
Deccan (& Kolhapur)	206	..	..	..	..
Gujarat	710	..	..	..	..
Gwalior	420	377	250	..	..
Hyderabad	348	285	268	182	229
Kashmir & Feudatories	882	995	994	977	991
Madras	1,000	1,000	1,000	927	..
Mysore	276	252	311	201	250
Orissa	1,000	..	..	..	..
Punjab	566	507	464	508	..
Punjab Hill	782	..	..	..	..
Rajputana	340	308	280	235	246
Travancore	1,000	1,000	1,000	1,000	..
U. P.	833	579	589	578	..
Western India	397	375	..	..	..
Bihar & Orissa States	..	3	50	132	..
Bombay States	..	228	306	283	..
C. P. States	..	495	464	399	..
Punjab State Agency	..	488	..	..	..

APPENDIX VI

Statement showing urban population per cent in the total Jaina Population, 1941

S. No.	Province or State	Total Jaina population	Urban Jaina population	Urban population per cent in total population
1.	Cochin, Travancore, Madras, Orissa States	537	537	100-0
2.	Assam States & Sind	201 & 3,687	189 & 3,480	94-0
3.	Kashmir States	910	803	88-2
4.	Bengal States	582	509	87-5
5.	United Provinces States	210	175	83-3
6.	Bengal	11,126	8,836	79-4
7.	Punjab Hill States	449	351	78-2
8.	Punjab	38,233	29,434	77-0
9.	Gujarat States	5,540	3,932	71-0
10.	Coorg	34	24	70-6
11.	Chhattisgarh State	2,158	1,259	58-3
12.	Punjab States	6,844	3,875	56-6
13.	Bihar	4,602	2,394	52-0
14.	Baroda States	48,866	23,387	49-9
15.	Provinces	5,78,372	2,82,535	48-9
16.	United Provinces	1,02,768	49,672	48-3
17.	Bombay	2,66,231	1,25,513	47-1
18.	Ajmer-Merwara	18,827	8,719	46-3
19.	Assam	6,639	2,947	44-4
20.	Central India States	57,374	24,956	43-5
21.	Gwalior	52,714	22,157	42-0
22.	INDIA	14,49,286	6,00,379	41-4
23.	Central Provinces & Berar	84,593	34,218	40-5
24.	Western India States	2,12,796	84,493	39-7
25.	States & Agencies	8,70,914	3,17,844	36-5
26.	Hyderabad State	24,853	8,659	34-8
27.	Rajputana States	3,41,788	1,16,119	34-0
28.	Orissa	139	43	30-9
29.	Mysore State	32,858	9,081	27-6
29.	Madras	30,136	6,478	21-5
31.	Deccan & Kolhapur States	84,226	17,362	20-6

APPENDIX VII

Statement showing the Mean Ages by sex for the different Provinces and States and for religions according to 1931 census

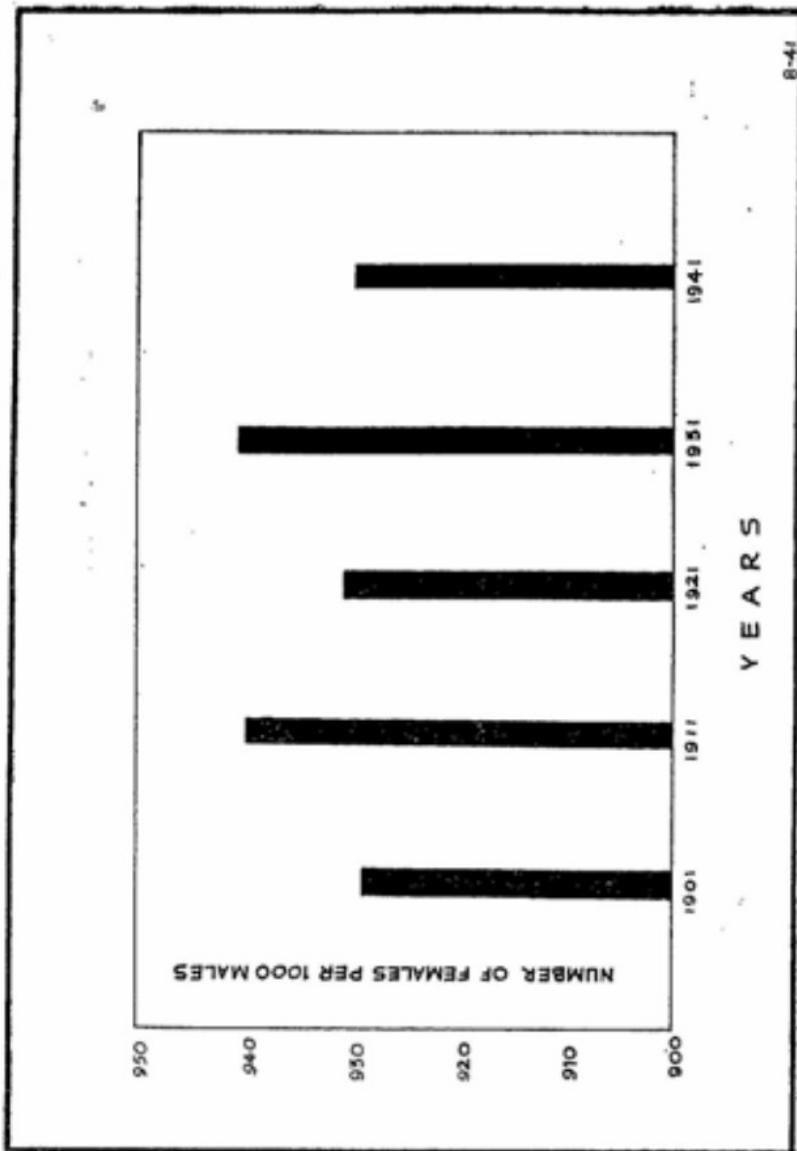
Province or State	ALL RELIGIONS		HINDU		JAINA		MUSLIM	
	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females
INDIA	23.2	22.8	23.5	23.3	24.6	24.5	22.4	21.5
Ajmer-Merwara	23.8	23.5	23.7	23.6	25.8	26.1	23.9	22.8
Assam	27.7	21.6	23.9	22.2	—	—	22.0	20.1
Baluchistan	25.2	20.0	—	—	—	—	—	—
Bengal	23.3	21.7	—	—	—	—	—	—
Bihar and Orissa	23.0	23.6	23.4	24.0	—	—	22.6	23.0
Bombay	23.4	22.8	—	—	24.9	23.7	—	—
C. P. & Berar	23.7	23.8	24.2	24.3	25.0	25.	24.2	23.3
Coorg	25.0	23.2	—	—	—	—	—	—
Delhi	24.4	22.2	24.4	22.4	—	—	24.4	21.8
Madras	24.4	24.3	24.5	24.4	27.3	27.3	23.1	23.0
N. W. F. P.	22.6	21.8	24.0	21.9	—	—	23.2	22.5
Punjab (including Agency)	24.3	23.1	24.7	23.4	—	—	23.8	22.7
U. P.	24.5	24.5	24.1*	24.3*	—	—	23.8	23.3
Baroda	23.7	23.6	23.7	23.6	25.2	25.8	24.0	23.9
Central India Agency	23.3	23.2	23.3	23.3	26.1	25.7	24.3	23.4
Gwalior State	23.4	23.2	24.4	24.2	26.0	23.7	24.2	23.2
Hyderabad State	23.5	22.6	—	—	—	—	23.6	22.9
Jammu and Kashmir	23.6	23.1	26.9	25.2	—	—	23.5	22.5
Cochin State	23.7	24.1	23.9	24.6	24.0	21.5	23.0	22.5
Travancore State	23.0	22.8	23.3	23.3	—	—	22.2	21.6
Mysore State	25.1	24.4	24.7	23.8	25.5	24.6	23.9	21.9
Rajputana Agency	23.5	23.4	23.6	23.5	24.8	25.8	23.5	22.7
W. I. S. Agency	22.6	22.8	—	—	—	—	—	—

— Figure unavailable or unimportant.

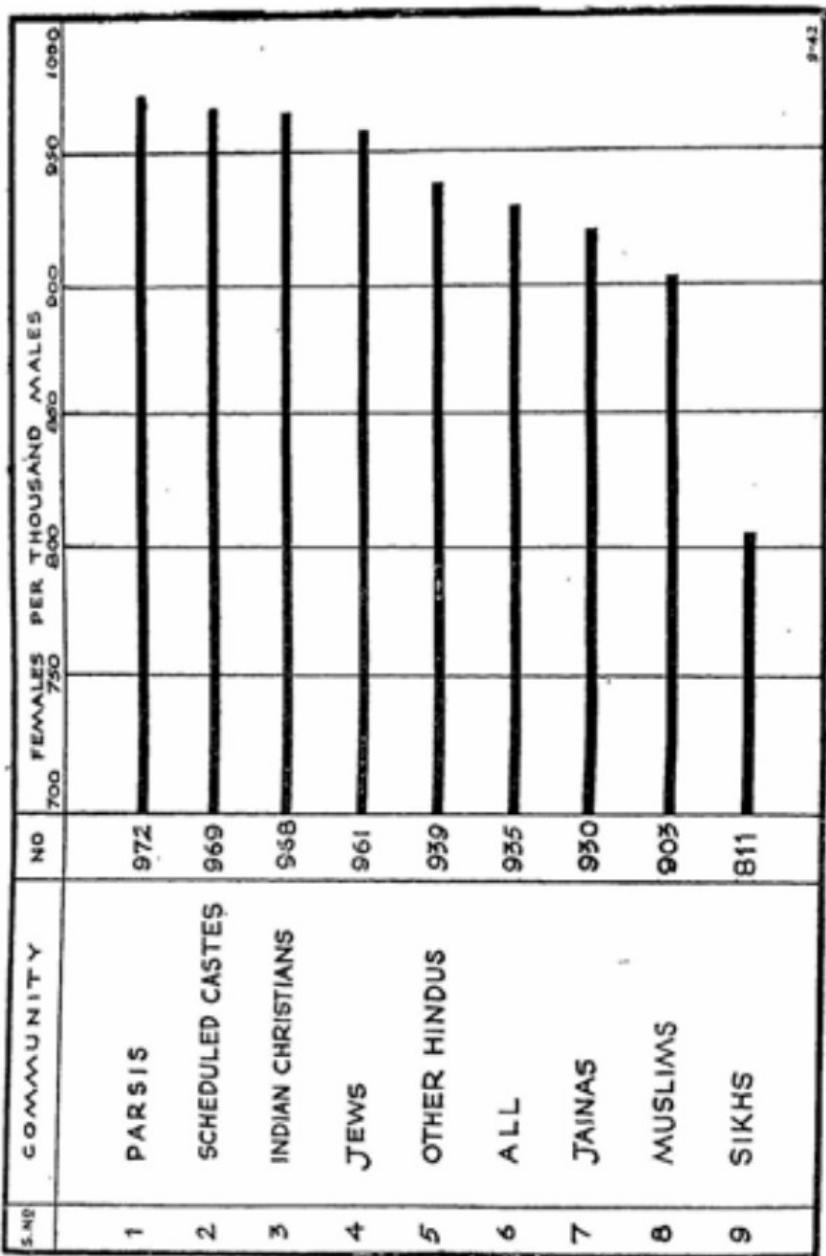
* Brahmanic Hindus only.

APPENDIX VIII

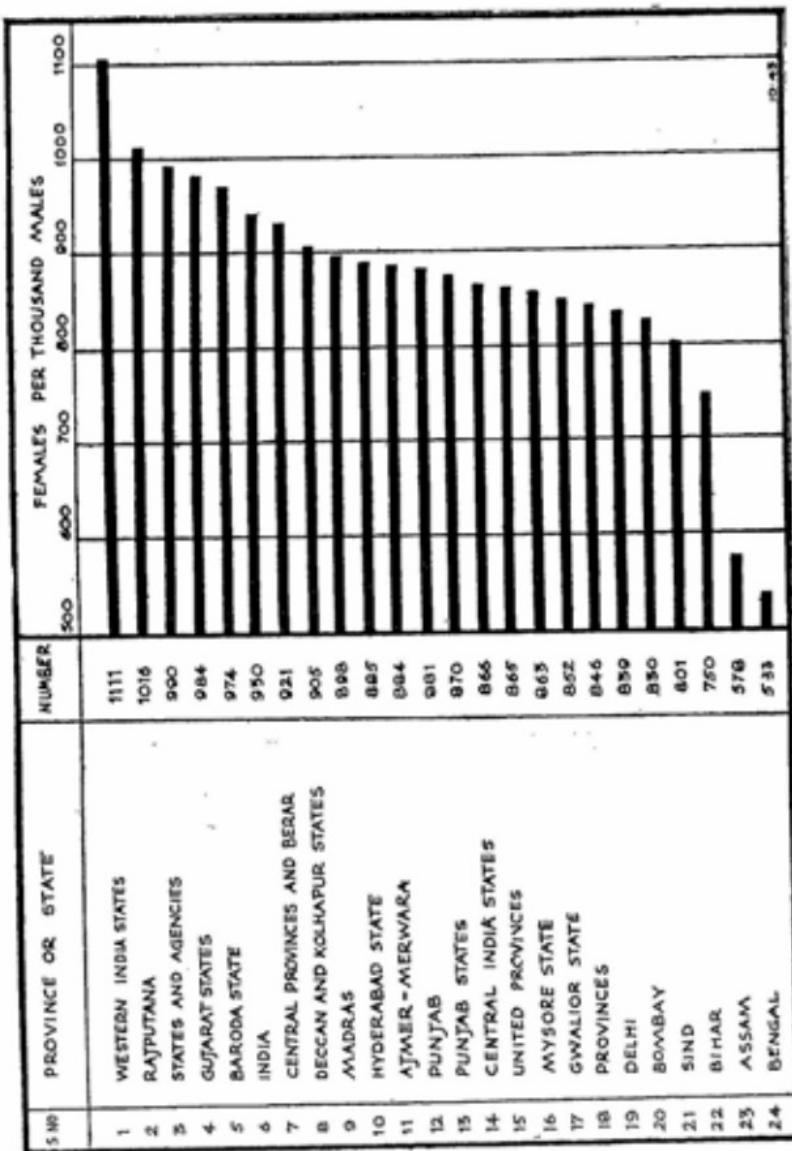
Diagram showing number of Females per 1,000 Males among Jaina Population, 1901-1941



*APPENDIX IX
Diagram showing number of Females per 1,000 Males in all Communities in India, 1941*

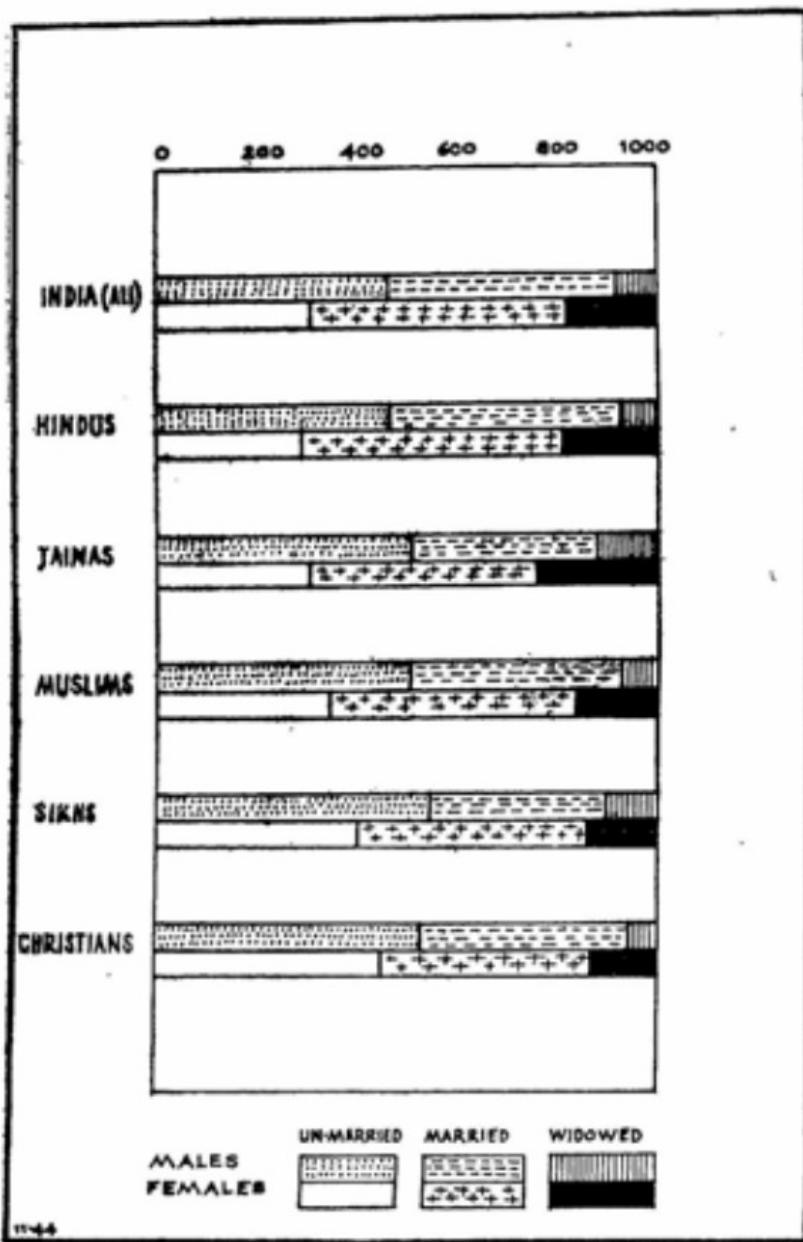


APPENDIX X
*Diagram showing number of Females per 1,000 Males among Jaina Population
 by Province or State according to 1941 Census*



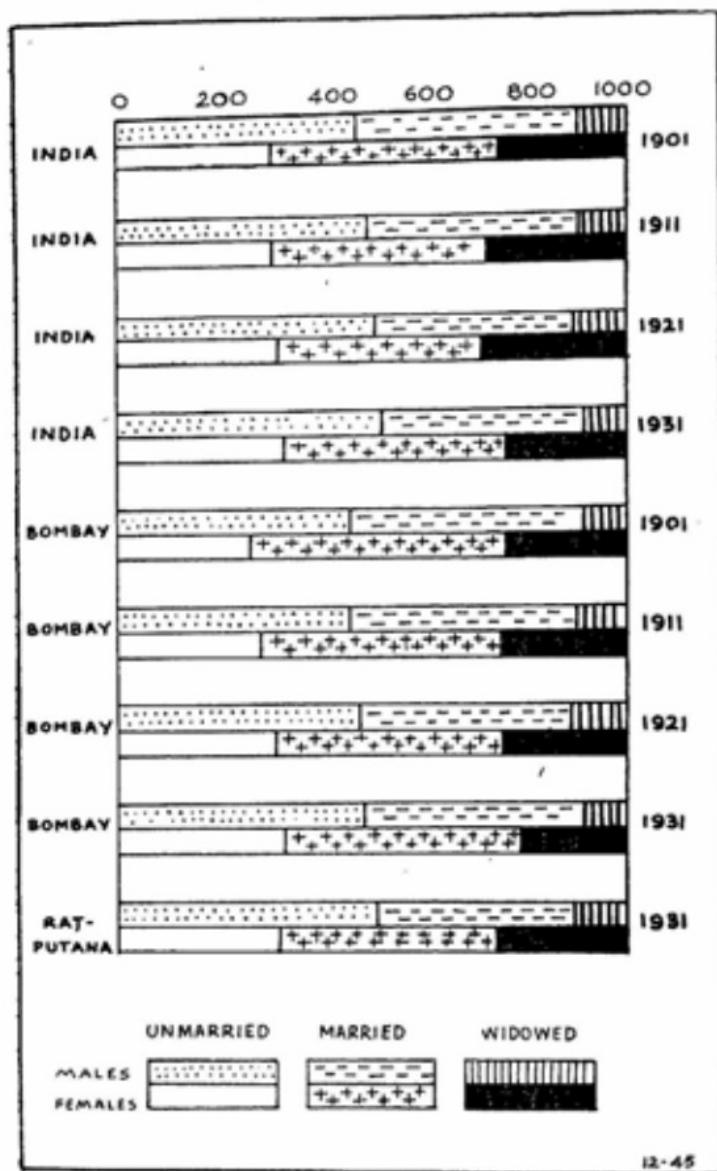
APPENDIX XI

Diagram showing distribution of 1,000 persons by Civil Condition according to 1931 Census



APPENDIX XII

*Diagram showing Distribution of 1,000 Jaina Persons
by Civil Conditions.*



APPENDIX XIII

The statement showing distribution by Main Age-periods and Civil Condition of 10,000 of each sex and religion in the Bombay Presidency according to 1931 Census

Age and sex	All Religions		HINDU	MUSLIM	JAINA	ZOROASTRIAN	CHRISTIAN	
	Unmarried	Married	Unmarried	Married	Unmarried	Married	Unmarried	
0- 5 Males	9835	158	7 9822	171	7 9885	111	4 9857	132
Females	9667	323	10 8629	360	11 9828	166	6 9488	497
5-10 Males	9324	658	18 9249	731	20 9587	400	13 9626	359
Females	7758	2192	50 7446	2498	56 8993	985	22 8005	1925
10-15 Males	8648	1325	34 8491	1472	37 9168	806	26 9214	756
Females	4212	5687	101 5275	4613	112 7308	2637	55 5874	3998
15-20 Males	5487	4392	121 5091	4788	121 6758	3114	128 6363	3514
Females	1086	8604	310 842	8930	328 1750	8906	244 950	8650
20-40 Males	1660	7893	447 1351	8225	424 2568	6868	564 2061	7421
Females	263	8436	1301 211	8415	1374 344	8621	1035 129	8092
40-60 Males	3113	8094	1593 254	8159	1587 495	7831	1674 519	7401
Females	111	4612	5277 101	4495	5404 111	5102	4787 57	3696 6247
60 & over Males	214	6415	3371 186	6452	3362 297	6246	3457 331	5497 4172
Females	90	1561	8349 83	1483	8434 95	1608	8037 99	947 8954

APPENDIX XIV

Statement showing distribution of Jaina Population in the Bombay Presidency by Civil Condition of 1,000 of each sex and main age-period from 1881-1931

Age-period	1931			1921			1911			1901			1891			1881		
	Males	Females	Male	Females	Male	Females	Males	Females	Male	Females	Male	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females
UNMARRIED																		
All ages	472	327	480	307	466	281	454	272	459	269	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
0-5	936	949	988	966	980	961	988	970	990	962	982	866	982	982	982	982	982	982
5-10	962	801	979	843	974	820	971	807	964	758	758	758	758	758	758	758	758	758
10-15	921	587	925	545	900	439	871	565	845	383	820	337	820	337	820	337	820	337
15-20	636	95	724	71	667	45	609	42	596	22	563	18	563	18	563	18	563	18
20-40	206	13	225	17	213	10	185	9	203	5	199	4	199	4	199	4	199	4
40-60	52	6	63	8	64	6	60	4	60	4	64	3	64	3	64	3	64	3
60 and over	33	10	38	6	44	5	54	5	41	1	47	1	47	1	47	1	47	1
MARRIED																		
All ages	457	471	434	456	452	474	470	499	480	516	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
0-5	13	50	10	31	71	37	12	29	10	37	17	17	17	17	17	17	17	17
5-10	36	192	18	145	21	173	26	182	35	238	238	238	238	238	238	238	238	238
10-15	76	400	69	427	91	530	121	403	148	601	172	634	172	634	172	634	172	634
15-20	352	865	260	877	314	897	370	903	393	940	431	947	431	947	431	947	431	947

APPENDIX XIV (continued)

Age-periods	1931		1921		1911		1901		1891		1881	
	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females
MARRIED												
20-40	742	809	699	768	715	763	749	804	754	839	749	813
40-60	740	369	705	372	714	370	762	423	789	450	777	417
60 and over	550	95	579	106	538	85	530	170	612	105	611	116
WIDOWED												
All ages	71	202	86	237	82	245	76	229	61	215	—	—
0-5	1	1	2	3	9	2	—	1	—	1	4	4
5-10	2	7	3	12	5	7	3	1	1	1	4	4
10-15	3	13	6	28	9	31	8	32	7	16	8	29
15-20	12	40	16	52	19	58	21	55	11	38	6	35
20-40	52	178	76	215	72	227	65	187	43	156	52	183
40-60	208	625	232	620	222	624	178	573	151	546	159	580
60 and over	417	895	443	888	418	910	410	825	347	894	342	883

APPENDIX XV

Diagram showing Literacy per mille of the Population aged five and over in Main Communities, 1931.

POPULATION

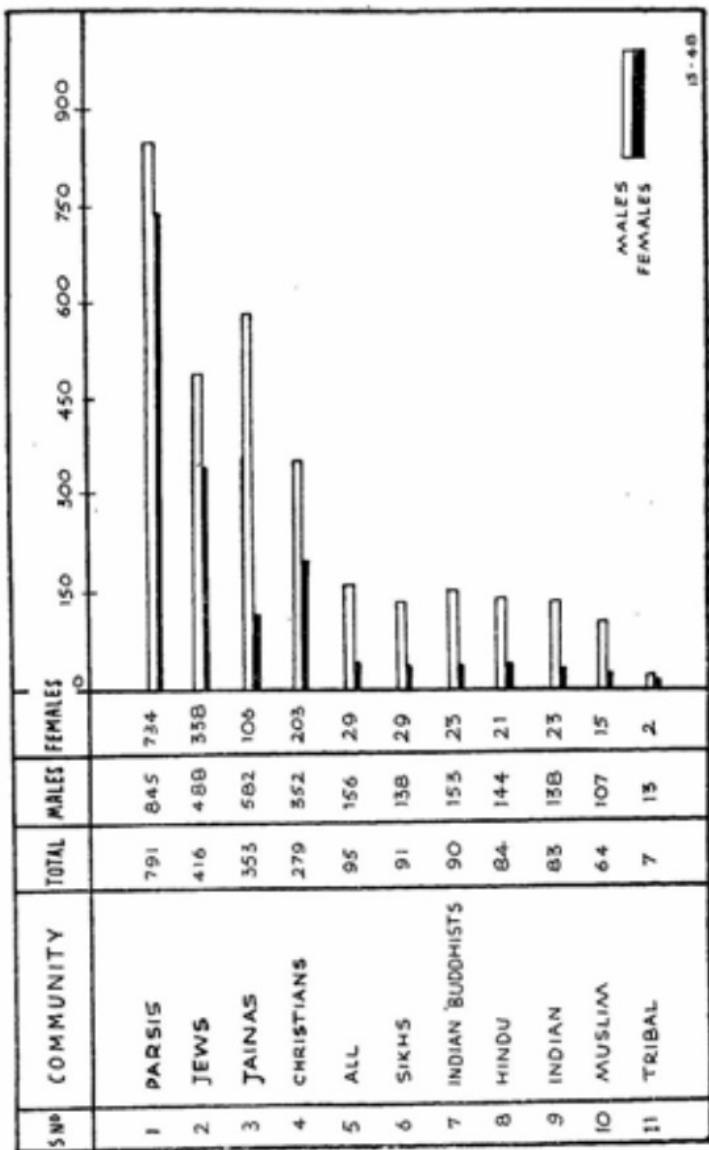
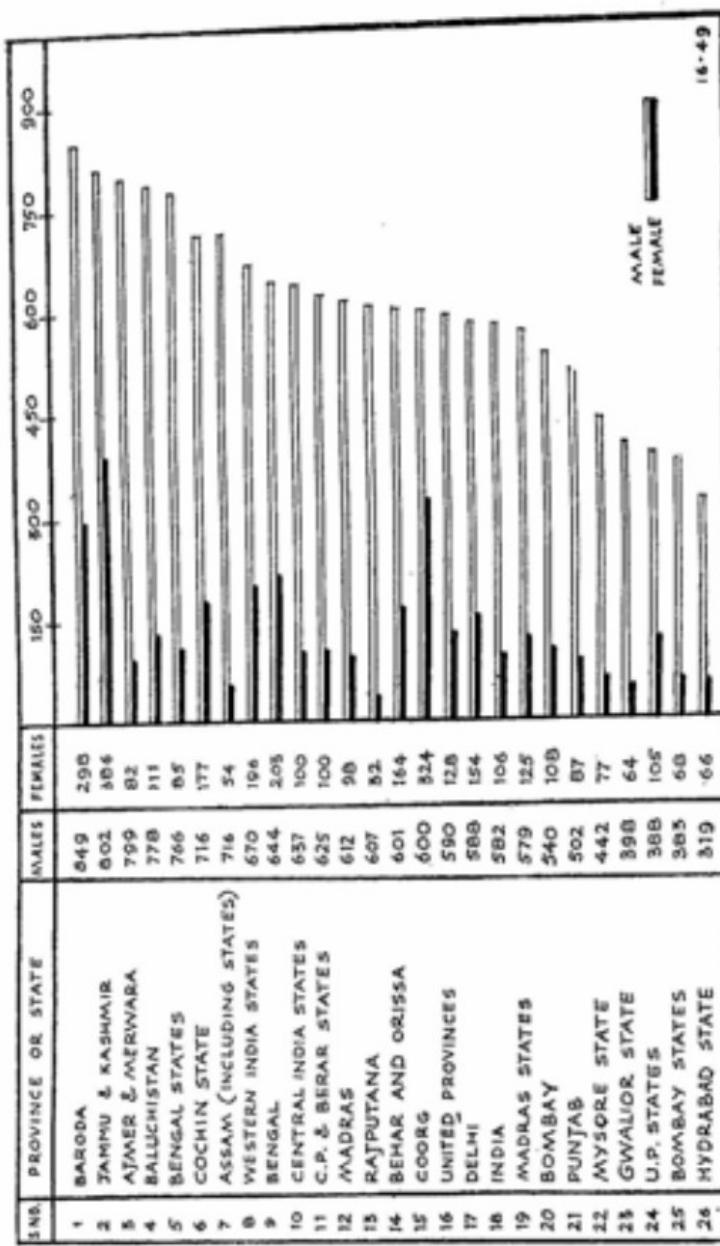


Diagram showing Literacy among Jains by Sex and Locality, 1931.

APPENDIX XVI



POPULATION

APPENDIX XVII
Statement showing number per 1,000 Jainas who are literate according to Provinces and States

Province, State or Agency	1931		1921		1911		1901	
	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females
INDIA	582	106	575	87	495	40	470	18
Ajmer-Merwara	799	82	789	60	641	21	557	11
Assam	716*	54*	697	111	729	51	—	—
Baluchistan	778	111	818	250	—	—	—	—
Bengal	644	203	—	—	765	106	739	83
Bihar & Orissa	601*	164*	—	—	656	111	—	—
Bombay	540	108	578	127	496	62	400	27
C. P. & Berar	625*	100*	531	78	478	30	C. P. 455) Berar 462)	16) 9)
Coorg	600	324	124	25	667	115	—	—
Delhi	588	154	699	162	—	—	—	—
Madras	612	98	566	82	463	29	415	16
Punjab	502	87	506	47	464	24	480\$	18\$
U. P.	590	128	567	77	469	52	397	17
Baroda State	849	298	820	204	698	86	687	19
Bengal States	766	85	—	—	—	—	—	—
Bombay States	383	68	—	—	—	—	—	—

APPENDIX XVII (continued)

Province, State or Agency	1931		1921		1911		1901	
	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females	Males	Females
Central India Agency	637	100	548	65	388	20	361	8
Cochin State	716	177	660	81	367	43	500	—
Gwalior State	398	64	443	50	—	—	—	—
Hyderabad State	319	66	399	35	375	14	342	6
Jammu and Kashmir	802	386	612†	129†	398†	—	602	—
Madras States	579	125	476	66	—	—	—	—
Mysore State	442	77	—	—	398	38	424	24
Rajputana	607	32	562	23	503	13	464	8
U. P. States	388	105	—	—	—	—	—	—
W. India States Agency	670	196	—	—	—	—	—	—
Provinces	—	—	581	117	499	53	477	24
States and Agencies	—	—	564	33	489	21	456	9

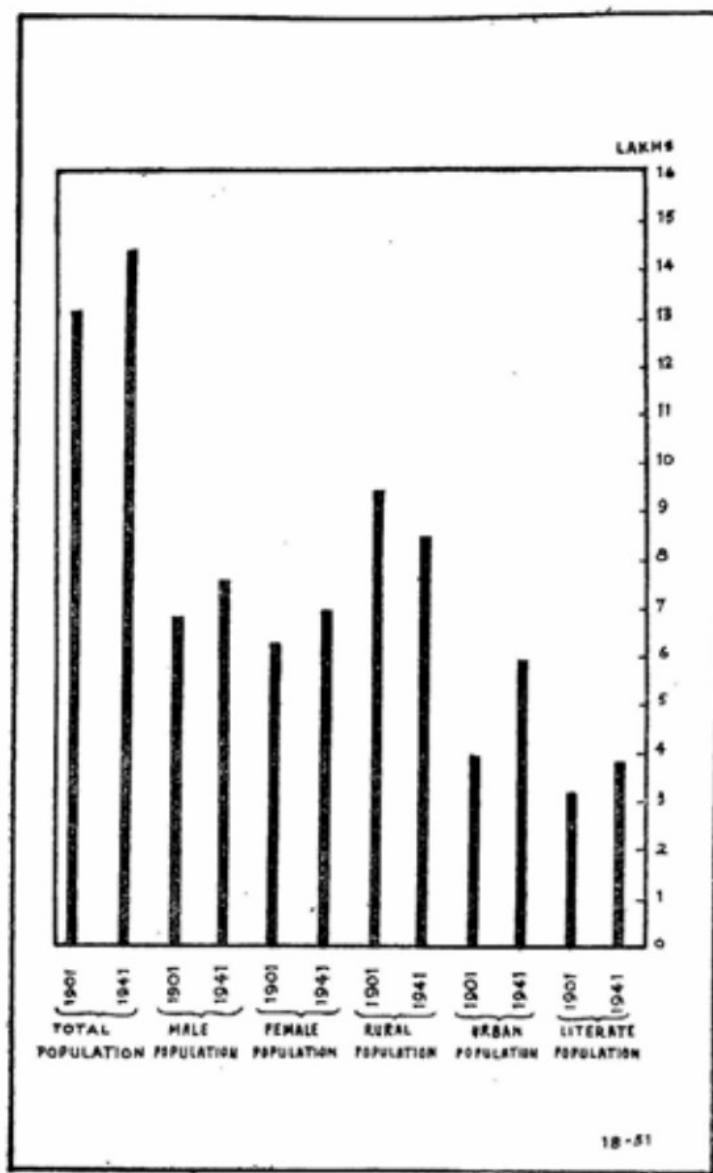
* Including States.

§ Including N. W. F. P.

† Only Kashmir.

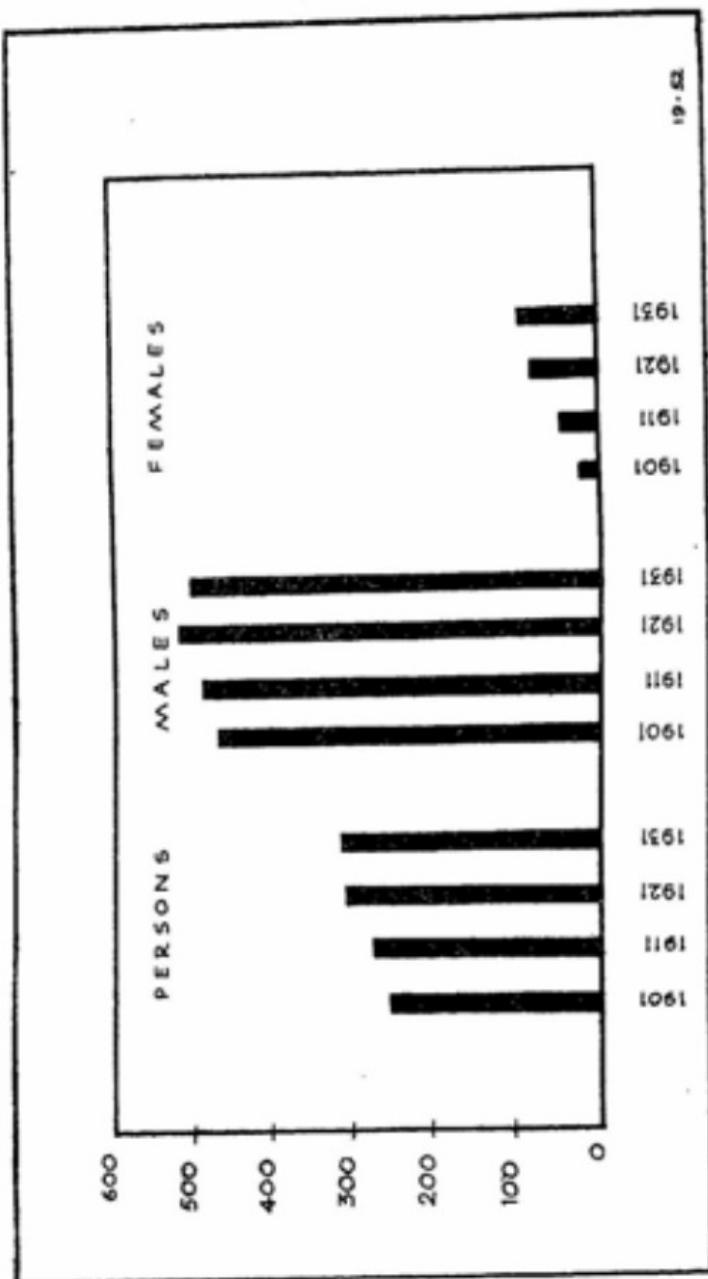
APPENDIX XVIII

Diagram showing changes in Jaina Population in various respects.



APPENDIX XIX

Diagram showing Growth of Literacy per mille of Jaina Population, 1901-1931.



CHAPTER TWO

DIVISIONS IN THE JAINA COMMUNITY

RELIGIOUS DIVISIONS

1. EARLY HISTORY OF JAINA RELIGION

'Jainism' is a religion propounded by *Jina*, i.e., one who has conquered the worldly passions and Jainas are the followers of *Jina*. According to the Jaina tradition Lord Rshabhadeva was the first *Jina* of the present age who was born in very primitive times when people were illiterate and did not know any art. It is believed that Rshabhadeva was the first person to initiate the people into various arts and crafts like cooking, writing, making pottery, painting and sculpture and to establish the social institutions like marriage, family, *Varna* or class, education, etc. He taught the people how to behave in society, introduced social customs and manners and showed the way of performing religious practices. He was also known as the first *Tirthankara*, i.e., one who guides the people to attain liberation. Rshabhadeva was followed by 23 *Tirthankaras* and they tried to reform the society and preach the religion as handed over to them from the times of Rshabhadeva.

Even though, according to the above tradition, the Jainas claim to have a hoary antiquity, it should be remembered that so far no historical evidence has been brought forward to establish beyond doubt the real existence of the first 22 *Tirthankaras*. The last two *Tirthankaras*, viz., Pārvanātha, the 23rd, and Mahāvira, the 24th, are proved as historical personages.¹ There are various literary evidences in the Jaina and Buddhist texts which presuppose the existence of a Nirgrantha Order headed by Pārvanātha before the advent of Mahāvira and, therefore, it can be said that there is much truth in the Jaina tradition that Mahāvira was no more than promulgator of an older Nirgrantha Order.²

1. Law B. C.: *Mahāvira: His Life, and Teachings*, p. 1. Indian historians now recognise that some predecessors of Lord Pārvanātha had historical existence, Vide Bool-Chand : *Lord Mahāvira*, pp. 14-15.

2. Jain J. C.: *Life in Ancient India as depicted in Jain Canons*, p. 22.

Pārvanātha flourished towards the end of the ninth century B. C., i.e., 250 years before Mahāvīra. He was a religious teacher of great eminence and had to fight against the Brahmanic tyranny of caste system and the preponderance of '*hiṁsā*' (i.e. killing) of animals in Vedic sacrifices which was gradually filtering into the East from the Western part of India. He, therefore, threw open the doors of his religion to all persons without any distinction of caste, creed or sex. Both males and females could enter the Order of Pārvanātha on the basis of equality. He preached the four great vows, i.e., '*Ahiṁsā*' (i.e. non-injury), '*Satya*' (i.e. truth), '*Asteya*' (i.e. abstinence from stealing) and '*Aparigraha*' (i.e. non-attachment to worldly things) and emphasised the necessity of observing strict asceticism as a means for the attainment of salvation. Moreover, Pārvanātha divided the followers of Jaina religion into four categories according to sex and the strictness with which the members practise the injunctions laid down by the Jaina religion, viz., (i) *Yatis* or *Sādhus* or *Munis*, i.e., male ascetics; (ii) *Arjikās* or *Sādhvis*, i.e., female ascetics; (iii) *Śrāvakas*, i.e. male laity and (iv) *Śrāvikās*, i.e., female laity. This foundation of four orders in the community with their leaders to look after and supervise the conduct of members comprising the order shows that there was a pretty good arrangement to govern and organise the Jaina community from the earliest times. In fact, this is one of the important reasons put forward for the survival of Jainism in India as against its rival Buddhism.¹

After Pārvanātha, Mahāvīra became the leader of the Jaina church. The religion preached by Mahāvīra was substantially the same as preached by his predecessor Pārvanātha. It is said that Mahāvīra added '*Brahmacharya*' (i.e. chastity, perhaps already included in *Aparigraha*) as the fifth great vow to the four great vows already preached by Pārvanātha.² Mahāvīra continued further the practice of fourfold division of the community and it is stated that at the time of his death there were 14000 *Yatis*, 36,000 *Sādhvis*, 1,59,000 *Śrāvakas* and 3,18,000 *Śrāvikās*.³ Mahāvīra

1. Vide Chapter VII.

2. Sen, A. C.: Schools and Sects in Jaina Literature, p. 43.

3. Barodia: History and Literature of Jainism, p. 40.

had in all eleven Gapadharas. They were all religious teachers well-versed in Jaina scriptures. After the nirvāṇa of Mahāvīra, the fifth Gapadha Sudharman became the head of the Jaina Church, others either having attained salvation or 'Kevalinship' (i.e., omniscience) before the death of Mahāvīra. Sudharman is said to have narrated the Jaina Canon to his disciple Jambūsvāmī in the manner he had heard from his Master. The Nirgrantha Śramanas of the present time are all spiritual descendants of the monk Ārya Sudharman, the rest of the Gapadharas having left no descendants.¹

From the history of Jaina religion upto Mahāvīra it appears that sects and sub-sects had not arisen till that time. But later on, we find that various schisms arose in the Jaina community as a result of which Jainism was divided into several sects and sub-sects. There were various reasons which contributed to the splitting of Jainism in small sects and sub-sects. In the first place it may be mentioned that during the lifetime of Mahāvīra the spread of Jainism was limited and Jainism did not seem generally to have crossed the boundaries of the kingdoms of Aṅga and Magadha, comprising modern Bihar, Orissa and Western Bengal, where the Teacher mainly lived and concentrated his attention, but after the death of Mahāvīra, his successors and followers succeeded to a large extent in popularising the faith throughout the length and breadth of India, so that it did not fail to enlist for a long period the support of kings as well as of commoners. As the number of adherents to the Jaina religion fast increased and as they were scattered practically in all parts of the country, the Gapadharas and religious pontiffs must have found it very difficult to look after and organise their followers. Naturally, different conditions, customs, manners and ways of life prevailing in different parts of the country in different periods might have influenced in giving rise to various religious practices which might have ultimately resulted in creating factions among the followers of Jainism. Secondly, the religious doctrines, principles and tenets as they were enunciated and taught by Mahāvīra were not

1. *Jaina J. C.* : Op. Cit., p. 25.

committed to writing during the lifetime of Mahāvīra or immediately after his death. The religious teachings of Mahāvīra were memorised by his immediate successors and they were thus handed down from one generation to another till they were canonised at the Council of Pātaliputra in the early part of the 3rd century B. C. By this time much water had flown down the Ganges and what was canonised was not acceptable to all, who vigorously maintained that the canon did not contain the actual teachings of Mahāvīra. Again, there was the question of interpreting what had been canonised. As time passed on, differences of opinion regarding the interpretation of many doctrines arose and those who differed established a separate school of thought and formed themselves into a sect or sub-sect. Thirdly, it may be maintained that sects and sub-sects arise as a direct result of the revolt against the actions and policy of ruling priests or heads of the Church. Those who are at the helm of religious affairs are likely to swerve from their prescribed path and debase themselves or they are likely to be too strict in maintaining and preserving the religious practices in a manner they think it proper, without taking into account the needs of the changing conditions. In both the cases natural indignation is bound to occur on the part of the thinking population and there should not be any surprise if this accumulated indignation and discontent take a turn in formulating and organising a separate sect. Martin Luther revolted against the high-handed policy of Popes and priests in the Christian religion and founded the section of Protestants in that religion.

2. THE GREAT SCHISM

The history of the Jaina Church is full of references to the various schisms that had taken place from time to time and some of these schisms contributed to the rise of sects and sub-sects in the Jaina religion. There is no unity of opinion on the manner and nature of such schisms. According to Śvetāmbaras, there were eight schisms, of which the first was caused by Mahāvīra's son-in-law, Jamāli; and eighth, occurring in 83 A. D., gave rise to the Digambara sect. But the Digambaras seem to be ignorant of the

earlier schisms.¹ As the first seven schisms² were comparatively unimportant, we may deal with only the eighth schism which ultimately split the community into two rival sects. In this connection it should be remembered that in order to prove the antiquity of their sect both the sects have put forward their own theories regarding the origin of the other sect.³ As regards the origin of the Digambara sect, it is ascribed by the Śvetāmbaras to Śivabhūti,⁴ who started the heretical sect of the *Bhoṭikas* in 83 A. D. This report is denied by the Digambaras; they maintain that they have preserved the original practices, but that, under the 8th successor of Mahāvīra, Bhadrabāhu, a sect with laxer principles arose, and that this sect, which was called that of the Ardha-phālakas, developed into the present sect of Śvetāmbaras in 80 A. D.⁵ Recent researches in Jaina history tend to prove the real existence of Ardhaprālaka sect and to consider the Ardha-phālakas as forerunners of the Śvetāmbaras.⁶

Really speaking, one cannot arrive at any definite conclusion from all these mutually conflicting traditions, and hence, it is almost impossible to fix an exact date for this great schism in the Jaina community. The main point of difference between the two sects was the question of considering whether the practice of nudity was an absolute necessity for achieving salvation. Taking into

1. (i) Jacobi H.: Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics, Vol. 7, page 474.
 (ii) Glasenapp: Jainism, pages 354 - 356.
2. For description of these 7 Schisms vide :—
 (i) Vaidya P. L.: Jaina Dharma āṇī Vāgmaraya, pp. 51 - 54.
 (ii) Kapadia H. R.: Jaina Religion & Literature, Vol. I, pp. 35 - 38.
 (iii) Sen, A. C.: Schools & Sects in Jaina Literature, pp. 43 - 45.
3. (i) Vide Nahar, P. C.: A note on the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Sects, Indian Antiquary, Vol. LVIII, p. 167-168. (ii) Jain K. P.: A further note on the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Sects — Indian Antiquary, Vol. LIX p. 151-154. (iii) Nahar P. C.: Antiquity of the Jaina Sects—Indian Antiquary, Vol. LXI p. 121-126. (iv) Jain C. R.: Origin of Śvetāmbara Sect in "Change of Heart", pp. 96-105.
4. For the story of Śivabhūti vide S. Stevenson: Heart of Jainism, p.79.
5. Jacobi H.: Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics, Vol. 4, p. 704.
6. (i) Jain K. P.: Samkshipta Jaina Itihāsa, Vol. II, part II, p. 76-77.
 (ii) Jain K. P.: "Ardhaprālaka—Sampradāya", J. S. B., December, 1941, pp. 63-66..

consideration these facts it seems probable that the separation of the sections of the Jaina Church took place gradually, an individual development going on in both the groups living at a great distance from one another, and that they became aware of their mutual difference about the end of the 1st century A. D.¹ In view of this, it can safely be asserted that the origin of the two sects cannot be attributed to any specific incident² which instantly divided the community into two opposite camps.

3. THE TWO MAIN SECTS

It is now necessary to see what is the exact difference between these two sects. Literally Digambara means 'sky-clad' and Śvetāmbara means 'white-robed', i. e., the monks of the Digambaras are naked while those of the Śvetāmbaras wear white clothes. In fact there is very little difference between the two branches as regards the essentials of doctrine. For example, the most authoritative book of the Digambaras, viz., *Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra* by Umāsvāti, is one of the standard books also of the Śvetāmbaras. However, there are some major as well as minor tenets on which the two sections are opposed to one another. The major points of difference between the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras are as follows:—

- (i) While the Digambaras believe that a monk who owns any property, i. e., wears clothes, cannot attain salvation: the Śvetāmbaras assert that the practice of complete nudity is not essential to attain liberation.
- (ii) The Digambaras hold the view that woman is not entitled to *Moksha* in this life. On the contrary the Śvetāmbaras believe that woman can reach *Nirvāṇa* in this life.
- (iii) According to the Digambaras, once a saint had attained '*Kevala Jñāna*' i. e., omniscience, needed no food, but

1. Jacobi H : Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics, Vol. 7, page 473.

2. Vide the article "On the Śrāvakas or Jainas" by Major Delamaine in Transactions of the R. A. S. of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. I, (1827), P. 416.

could sustain life without eating. This view is not acceptable to the Śvetāmbaras.

Leaving aside the trivial differences in rituals, customs and manners¹, the following are some of the minor points on which the two sects do not agree:—

- (i) The Digambaras maintain that the embryo of Mahāvīra, the last Tīrthāṅkara, was not removed from the womb of Devanandā, a Brahmin lady, to that of Triśalā or Priyakāriṇī, a Kshatriya lady, as the Śvetāmbaras contend.
- (ii) The Digambaras believe in the complete disappearance of the ancient sacred literature of the Jainas and as such disown the canonical books of the Śvetāmbaras.
- (iii) The Digambaras assert that Mahāvīra never married but according to the Śvetāmbaras Mahāvīra married Yaśoda and had a daughter from her by name Anojjā or Priyadarśanā.
- (iv) The Śvetāmbaras consider Mallinātha, the 19th Tīrthāṅkara, as a female but the Digambaras state that Mallinātha was a male.
- (v) According to Digambaras, the Tīrthāṅkaras must be represented as nude and unadorned, and with downcast eyes. This need not be so according to Śvetāmbaras.²

4. THE MAJOR AND MINOR SUB-SECTS

The division of the Jaina Church into two sects mentioned

1. vide (i) Lt Col. William Miles: "On the Jainas of Gujarat and Marwar". Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. III (1835), pages 335-371.
(ii) Wilson : Works by H. H. Wilson, I, page 340.
2. In this connection I am informed by Prof. Dalasuka Malavaniya that in the beginning the idols worshipped by Śvetāmbaras used to be made like those worshipped by Digambaras. But later on this practice gave rise to quarrels between Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras over the possession of temples. Hence, with a view to put an end to such incessant and troublesome quarrels, Śvetāmbaras began, probably from the 12th or 13th century A. D., to put on clothes on their idols.

above was only the beginning of splitting the religion into various sects. Each of the two great divisions again got sub-divided into different major and minor sub-sects according to the difference in acknowledging or interpreting the religious texts. These major and minor sub-sects gradually sprang up for the most part on account of different interpretations the pontiffs put on the canonical texts from time to time.

The Digambaras are divided into following sub-sects:—

(a) Major sub-sects:—

- (i) Bisapanthi.
- (ii) Terapanthi.
- (iii) Tarapanthi or Samaiyapanthi.

(b) Minor sub-sects:—

- (i) Gumanapanthi.
- (ii) Totapanthi.

The Bisapanthis worship the idols with flowers, fruits and sweatmeats. In their temples they keep the idols of Kshetrapala, Bhairava and other deities along with the idols of Tirthankaras. They perform '*Ārati*' (i. e. waiving lights over the idol) and offer sweatmeats (i. e. Prasāda) in the temple even at night. While worshipping they sit and do not stand. They consider Bhāṭṭārakas (i. e. ascetics below the order of *Yatis* or monks) as their religious teachers (i. e. Dharma-gurus), and heads of the religion (i. e. Āchāryas).

Terapanthis worship the idols not with flowers, fruits and other green vegetables (known as *Sachitta* things), but with sacred rice called '*Akshata*', cloves, sandal, almonds, dry cocoanuts, dates, etc.¹ In their temples they do not maintain the idols of Kshetrapala, Bhairava and other deities. They neither perform '*Ārati*' nor offer sweatmeats in the temple. While worshipping they stand and do not sit. They do not treat Bhāṭṭārakas as their religious teachers or heads. The last characteristic of Terapanthis, i. e., non-recognition of the Bhāṭṭāraka system is the main and important difference from Bisapanthis. From this it is clear that

¹ Vide Indian Antiquary, Vol. XXXI (1902), page 66-67.

the Terāpanthis appear to be reformers. They oppose to various religious practices, as according to them these are not real Jaina religious practices. Digambara Terāpanthis have no connection with Śvetāmbara Terāpanthis. Among the Digambaras Bispanthis and Terāpanthis are so proud of their practices that they do not visit the temples of other Panthas or sects. Bisapanthis are more in Marwara and Gujratha and Terāpanthis in Marwara, U. P. and C. P.¹ Terāpantha arose in 1683 V. S. as a revolt against the loose conduct of Bhāttārakas and now it claims practically two-third members of the Digambara sect as its followers. Terāpantha had performed a valuable task of rescuing Digambara sect from the clutches of Bhāttārakas and hence the Terāpanthis occupy a peculiar position in the Digambara Jaina community.²

The sub-sect Tārapapantha is known after its founder Tārapa Svāmī or Tarapa Tāraṇa Svāmī. This sub-sect is also called Samaiyāpantha because its followers worship *Samaya*, i.e., sacred books. The population of Tārapapanthis is nearly 10,000 and they are mainly found in the Central Provinces, Central Indian States and some parts of Khandesha District. Members from the following six castes, viz., Paravāra, Asaiti, Golālare, Charanāgare, Ajudhyābāsi and Dosakhe Paravāra, are the followers of this sub-sect. Tārapasvāmī (1505–1552 V. S.) founded the sub-sect in the latter part of the 16th century of the Vikrama Era. He died at Malhāragarh, in Gwalior State, and this is the central place of pilgrimage of Tārapapanthis. They do not worship the idols but they do worship their own sacred books. Even though at present there are six castes among the Tārapapanthis, they were really against the caste distinctions. Tārapasvāmī was looking with equanimity towards all persons and in fact he threw open the doors of his sub-sect to Muslims and low caste people. Ruiramapa, one of the main disciples of Tārapasvāmī, was a Muslim. Further, Tārapapanthis gave more importance to spiritual values and the study of sacred literature. That is why we find a complete absence of outward

1. Dr. Glasenapp : Jainism, pages 366–67.

2. Nathuram Premi : Jaina Hitaishi, Vol. 7, page 3–8.

* religious practices among them. These three main traits of Tārapāpanthis, viz., hatred of idol-worship, ban on caste distinctions and removal of outward religious practices, were evolved as a revolt against the religious practices and beliefs then prevailing in the Digambara Jaina Church and it appears that Tārapasvāmi might have formulated these principles under the direct influence of Islamic doctrines and teachings of Loṅkāśāha, the founder of non-idolatrous sub-sect among the Śvetāmbaras.¹

Gumānapanthis and Totāpanthis are not so important and very little is known about them. Gumānapantha flourished of late in the 18th century A. D. and was so called from the name of its founder Gumāna Rāma.

Like Digambaras, the Śvetāmbaras are also split up into following sub-sects:—

- (i) Pujerā or Mūrtipūjaka or Derāvāsi or Mandiramārgī.
- (ii) Dhundiyā or Bistolā or Sthānakavāsi or Sādhumārgī.
- (iii) Terāpanthi.

The original stock is now known as Mūrtipūjaka-Śvetāmbaras, as they are the thorough worshippers of idols. They offer fruits, flowers and saffron etc. to their idols and adorn them with rich clothes and ornaments. Their ascetics cover their mouth with strips of cloth while speaking, otherwise they keep them in their hands. Again their ascetics have no objection to wearing yellow clothes.

The Sthānakavāsis do not believe in idol-worship at all. Their ascetics cover their mouths with strips of cloth for all the time and they do not use the cloth of yellow or any other colour (of course, except white). The Sthānakavāsis arose not directly from the Śvetāmbaras but as reformers of an older reforming sect, viz., Loṅkā sect. The Loṅkā sect was founded in about 1474 A. D. by Loṅkāśāha, a rich and well-read merchant of Ahmedabad, and the main principle of this sect was not to practise idol-worship. Later on, some of the members of the Loṅkā sect disapproved of the lives of their ascetics, declaring that they lived less strictly than

1. For a detailed and critical account of Tārapāpantha vide, Nathuram Premi : Jaina Hitaishi, vol. 8, pages 290-303, 549-557; Vol. 9, pages 33-38; 198-206 and 532-539.

Mahāvīra would have wished. A Loṅkā sect layman, Viraji of Surat, received initiation as a *Yati* and won great admiration on account of the strictness of his life. Many people of the Loṅkā sect joined this reformer and they took the name of Sthānakavāśī (i.e. those who do not live in temples but in Apāsara) whilst their enemies called them Dhundhiyā (i.e. Searchers). This title has grown to be quite an honourable one.¹ Except on the crucial point of idol worship, Sthānakavāśīs do not differ much from other Śvetāmbara Jainas² and nowadays they invariably call themselves as Śvetāmbara Sthānakavāśīs.

It is interesting to note that the two non-idolatrous sub-sects—Tāraṇapanthis among Digambaras and Sthānakavāśīs among Śvetāmbaras—came very late in the history of the Jaina Church and to some extent it can safely be said that the Muhammedan influence on the religious mind of India was greatly responsible for their rise. In this connection Mrs. S. Stevenson observes: "If one effect of the Muhammedan conquest, however, was to drive many of the Jainas into closer union with their fellow idol-worshippers in the face of iconoclasts, another effect was to drive others away from idolatry altogether. No oriental could hear a fellow oriental's passionate out-cry against idolatry without doubts as to the rightousness of the practice entering his mind. Naturally enough it is in Ahmedabad, the city of Gujarat that was most under Muhammedan influence, that we can first trace the stirring of these doubts. About 1452 A.D.³ the Loṅkā sect, the first of the non-idolatrous Jaina sects, arose and was followed by the Dhundhiyā or Sthānakavāśī sect about 1653 A.D., dates

1. Vide S. Stevenson : Heart of Jainism, page 88.

There is another version regarding the meaning of Dhundhiyā. "They are so called because its followers were persecuted by the orthodox and compelled to take refuge in ruins (Dhundja)." Vide M. Millett : "Some Modern Jaina Sects—Hindu Antipathy to Jainas", Indian Antiquary, Vol. XXV (1896), page 147.

2. Vide Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics, Vol. 12, page 124.

3. There is a slight difference in date. At other place the writer gives the date as 1474 A.D.

which coincide strikingly with the Lutheran and Puritan movements in Europe."¹

The foundation of Terāpanthī sub-sect was laid by Svāmī Bhikkhanaji Mahārāja in V. S. 1817. He was formerly a Sthānakavāsi and when he perceived some difference in the religious practices of Sthānakavāsi ascetics, he began to convert the people to his own views. As he laid stress on the thirteen religious principles, viz., five *Mahāvratas*, five *Samitis* and three *Guptis*, his sub-sect was known as the Terāpanthī sub-sect. About 150 male ascetics, 300 female ascetics and one lakh ordinary laymen are the followers of Terāpanthī sub-sect. Terāpanthis are non-idolatrous and are very finely organised by their Āchārya (i.e. religious head) and every year on the 7th day of the bright half of the month of Māgha a festival known as '*Maryādā Mahotsava*' is celebrated when all ascetics and lay disciples, male and female, meet together and discuss the various problems of Terāpanthis. The penance of Terāpanthis is considered to be very severe.²

4. RISE OF SECTIONS AND SUB-SECTIONS

Apart from the splitting of the Jaina Church into various sects and sub-sects, we find that every main sect was further divided into several sections and sub-sections like Samgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Śakbhā. In the Digambara sect, there arose a number of Samghas, viz., Mūla (i.e. original) Samgha, and others like Drāviḍa Samgha, Kāshṭhā Samgha, Māthura Samgha, etc. The Mūla Samgha was further split up into four small Samghas for very trivial reasons. On this subject the following stanzas occur in the '*Nītisāra*', a work of Indranārdin:—

अहंदुली गुरुक्षेसंवसंदृनं परम् ॥ ६ ॥
सिंहसंबो नंदिसंबः सेनसंबो महाप्रभः ।
देवसंब इति स्पष्टे स्थानस्थितिविशेषतः ॥ ७ ॥

1. S. Stevenson : Heart of Jainism, page 19.

2. (i) Vide Chopra, C. : A Short History of the Terāpanthī Sect of the Svetāmbara Jainas and its Tenets, pages 1-11 and 17-26.
(ii) History of Ośavālas, p. 234-236.

The Guru Arhadbalin effected the excellent organisation of Samghas : the Simha Samgha, the Naradi Samgha, the famous Sena Samgha and the Deva Samgha were well-known as they were distinguished by the places of their establishment. Thus those who used to keep their rainy season's retreat in the den of a lion formed into a Simha Samgha, those in the lower part of a tree of the Naradi species, Naradi Samgha, those under the bushes, Sena Samgha and those in the house of a courtesan named Devadatta, Deva Samgha. Further, in the Samghas there were small sections like Gapas and Gachchhas, e. g., the Naradi Samgha had Balatkara Gapa and Parijata Gachchha.

Even though there were sections and sub-sections among the Digambaras, really there was no difference in them regarding religious practices and beliefs and it should be remembered that this fact was impressed on lay disciples. In this connection ' Nitishara ' observes that :—

गणगच्छादयस्तेभ्यो जातास्ते परसौख्यदाः ।
न तत्र भेदः कोऽप्यस्ति प्रवज्यादिषु कर्मसु ॥८ ॥
चतुःसंघे नरो यस्तु कुरुते भेदभावनाम् ।
स सम्यग्दर्शनातीतः संसारे संचरत्यरम् ॥ १२ ॥
न तत्र प्रतिमाभेदो न प्रायश्चित्कर्मणः ।
नाचारवाचनापद्यवाचनासु विशेषतः ॥ १३ ॥

The Gapas, Gachchhas and others that have arisen from them, are the grantors of eternal bliss. There is between them no difference whatever in their monastic and other practices. If a man imagines any difference in the four Samghas, he has travelled beyond the truth and is gone completely into the world. In them there is no difference of images nor of penitential observances, nor is there any distinction in their rules and readings.¹

A number of Gachchhas came into being in the Svetambara sect also. They originated from the different Jaina teachers, who assumed themselves as heads of their own Gachchhas, alleging

1. A. F. R. Hoernle: "Three further Paṭṭāvalis of the Digambaras." Indian Antiquary, Vol. XXI (1892), p. 57-84.

differences in religious practices and holding different interpretations of the texts of the Sūtras, i. e., holy scriptures. The literature of Śvetāmbara sect has preserved the list of the Sūris or hierarchs, right from Ārya Sudharman, Mahāvīra's successor as head of Jaina Church, noting down the important events during their time. Therein, we find that after Udyotana Sūri, his eighty-four disciples started eighty-four Gachchhas as all of them were created Āchāryas¹ by him. This happened in 937 A. D. at a place named Teli near the famous Mount Abu. The following is a list of the names of the Gachchhas² commonly found and most of them have become now extinct.

1. Āgama	2. Añchala	3. Anpuri
4. Bagheravāla	5. Baherhā	6. Bāpanā
7. Barhgachha	8. Barodiyā	9. Beliā
10. Bharuyachhā	11. Bhaṭanerā	12. Bahavaharsha
13. Bhaverīdra	14. Bhavarāja	15. Bhīmapalli
16. Bhīmasena	17. Bhīnmalā	18. Bidyādhara
19. Bijaya	20. Birejivāla	21. Boresīngha
22. Brāmhapa	23. Chitourhā	24. Chitravāla
25. Dashiya	26. Dekacharha	27. Dhārdhusha
28. Dharmaghosha	29. Dobamīdanika	30. Dokarha
31. Gachhapāla	32. Gapadhara	33. Gamgesara
34. Ghanīghodhara	35. Ghoghera	36. Ghoshavāla
37. Gubela	38. Guptauba	39. Hamsaraka
40. Jalori	41. Jamgorhā	42. Javāharaka
43. Jherāntiyā	44. Jirāvalā	45. Chhapara
46. Kachhela	47. Kamalakalaśa	48. Kabroja
49. Karṇobiya	50. Kapurasīngha	51. Kattakapura

1. For the names of these 84 Āchāryas vide Vidhipaksha (Añchala) Gachchhiya Mhoṭi Paṭṭāvali, p. 70-74.

2. For the names of 84 Gachchhas please see the following :—

(i) Marathi Encyclopedia: Article on Jainism, Vol. 14, p. 323.

(ii) Buhler: On the Indian Sect of the Jains, p. 78-79.

(iii) Vidhipaksha (Añchala) Gachchhiya Mhoṭi Paṭṭāvali, p. 70-74.

(iv) Rāmalālaji: Mahājana-Vamśa-Muktāvali, p. 115-116.

It is interesting to note that these lists do not agree in various respects.

52. Kavala	53. Khambhya	54. Kharatara
55. Koramitavāla	56. Koshipura	57. Kṛṣhparshi
58. Kuchorā	59. Kutubapura	60. Luṁpāka
61. Madhukara	62. Maṁdaliyā	63. Mandharapa
64. Mandovara	65. Manghosha	66. Maladhora
67. Masena	68. Māthura	69. Muhasorarha
70. Muramidavāla	71. Nadola	72. Nagadraha
73. Nagarakaṭa	64. Nagaravāla	75. Nāgerīndra
76. Nagori	77. Nāgapura	78. Nanavāla
79. Narhiya	80. Jithara	81. Nigama
82. Pālanapura	83. Pallikiya	84. Pallivāla
85. Pañchabahali	86. Pārvachandra	87. Pippalakā
88. Pūrnatalla	89. Pūrima	90. Rāmasena
91. Raṅgavijaya	92. Revati	93. Rudrapalliya
94. Sāgara	95. Sañchara	96. Sañderaka
97. Sañjāta	98. Sarasvatī	99. Śaravāla
100. Sārdhapunamīya	101. Sevantara	102. Siddhārīta
103. Siddhapura	104. Soratha	105. Surana
106. Tanavāla	107. Tapā	108. Thambhana
109. Treṅgaliyā	110. Tribhaviya	111. Upakeśa
112. Ustavāla	113. Utabiya. ¹	

Like Mārtipajaka Śvetāmbaras, the Sthānakavāsi Śvetāmbaras also have been sub-divided into 32 Gachchhas.²

6. ATTEMPTS OF RECONCILIATION

From the above discussion it will be seen that the Jaina Church which was one and undivided at the time of Mahāvīra has now been split up into sects, sub-sects, Samghas, Gapas, Gachchhas, etc. Apart from the religious divisions existing at present there might have been other divisions in the past. Such divisions must have flourished in the past but it appears that they could not survive upto the present day for want of followers or some other

1. Nahar and Ghosh: Epitome of Jainism, p. 668-670. It is regretted that the original source does not use diacritical marks for the names of Gachchhas.

2. (i) Jaina-Jagat, Vol. 8, No. 8, p. 13.
(ii) 'Vira', dated the 15th March 1947.

reasons. As an instance the name of 'Yāpaniya' or 'Yāpya' Samgha can be cited. This Samgha was established by Sri Kalaśa Āchārya at Kalyāṇa town in Gulbarga District. Like Svetāmbaras, it recognised the existence of sacred books and believed that women could attain salvation and saints could take food after attaining omniscience; but at the same time it was, like Digambaras, against using clothes and it followed the rules and regulations of Digambara ascetics.¹ Neither its literature² nor any of its followers is existing today. It appears that this Samgha was a connecting link between the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras or probably it was a solution to iron out the differences between the two sects. But this solution was not, it seems, accepted by the people and as such it had to remain as a separate Samgha and vanish within a short period for want of following. Afterwards no attempt worth the name was made in the long history of the Jaina Church to cement the outstanding differences between the sects and among the sub-sects within a sect. On the contrary it is a pity that more importance was attached to small differences of practice and this ultimately gave rise to various Samghas, Gachchhas, etc. The main difference between the Mūla Samgha and Kāshthā Samgha of Digambaras lies in the fact that while the ascetics of the former use the bunch of peacock feathers for warding off insects, those of the latter use a tuft of cow's tail's hair. There was a third section which did away with the use of a bunch or tuft and hence it was called 'Nihpichchhika Samgha'. Even though the differences were meagre, the Mūla Samgha declared the other two Samghas as Jainābhāsa, i.e., false Jaina Samghas. Exactly on the same lines various Gachchhas like Kharatara, Añchala, Paurpiṇiyaka, Kaṭuka, etc. arose among the Śvetāmbaras due to little differences and there was practically constant rivalry among them. Books like Kupakshakauśikasaha-

1. Kapadia, H. R.: *Jaina Religion and Literature*, Vol.-I, Part I, p. 43-44.

2. It may, however, be noted that Śākaṭayana alias Pālyakīrti is described as a Yāpaniya, and three works, namely, a Saṃskrit grammar, a treatise on *Stemuktī* and another on *Kevalibhukti* are attributed to him.

srakirapa, Tapomatakuattna, Añchalamatadalana, indicate this spirit of rivalry.¹ Thus it will be found that there is nothing like unity in the Jaina Church but on the contrary there is a vivid tendency to magnify the differences and to split up the Jaina Church into small sections spread all over India. Moreover there was not during the last 2000 years even a single powerful personality in the Jaina community who could iron out the differences between the two main sects which insist more on their mutual differences. It goes without saying that this unusually large number of religious sections or divisions in a small Jaina community can hardly serve as an incentive for unity in that community.

1. Nathuram Premi : *Jaina Religion and Its Sects.*

Ātmānanda Birth Centenary Commemoration Volume, p. 197-201.

CHAPTER THREE

DIVISIONS IN THE JAINA COMMUNITY

Social Divisions

1. INTRODUCTION

Just as there is an unusually large number of divisions in the religious sphere of a small Jaina community, we witness the same phenomenon, possibly in an aggravated form, in the social sphere of that community. We have seen that these religious divisions have created rival sections and sub-sections in the community to such an extent that sectarian feelings get an upper hand and make their adherents to forget the important fact that the Jaina Church was one and undivided up to the time of Lord Mahāvīra. Further we have noticed that various sub-sects arose very late in the history of the Jaina Church and that in many cases their rise was inevitable in the sense that they were created with a view to meet the demands of the changing conditions in different parts of the country and to correct the laxity in the religious practices of several religious heads and pontiffs. Moreover, the influence of teachings of other important religions on the religious practices and behaviour of the Jainas was but natural and cannot be over-looked; and in this connection we find that the Islamic doctrines were more or less responsible for creating the non-idolatrous sub-sections in the two main sects of the Jaina Church. It is proposed in this Chapter to show the manner in which the Jaina community got itself divided and sub-divided in the social field.

2. JAINA CONCEPTION OF VARNAS OR CLASSES

During the Vedic period (2000 B. C. to 300 B. C.) Pārvatīnātha was the first person to launch a successful attack against the religious beliefs and practices of Brahmanism and the same policy was vigorously followed by Mahāvīra. The latter succeeded in getting a large number of followers whom he organised into

a compact social order quite distinct from that of the Brahmanic social order of the Vedic period.

The Vedic society was composed of four classes, viz., Brāhmaṇa, Rājanya, Vaiśya and Śūdra. They are said to have come from the mouth, the arms, the thighs and the feet of the Creator. The particular limbs ascribed as the origins of these divisions and the order in which they are mentioned probably indicate their status in the society of the time. The fact that the four classes are described as of divine origin could be taken as a sufficient indication that they were of long duration and very well defined.¹ Not only the four classes were distinct and separate, but they were also affected by the spirit of rivalry among themselves. Even in early Rgvedic times the Brahmanical profession had begun to set up claims of superiority or sacredness for itself and accordingly we find that different rules were prescribed for different classes. Thus the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa lays down different modes of address for the four castes, differing in degrees of politeness, as ēhi, agachchha, adrava and adhava. The Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa recommends the spring season to the Brahmins for the performance of sacrifices, the summer to the Kshatriyas, and the autumn to the Vaiśyas. The Atharva Veda proclaims in the strongest language sin, peril and ruinous consequences of insulting Brahmins and robbing them of their property.² This inordinate extension of the pretensions and prerogatives of the sacerdotal class naturally created cleavages in the society. The Kshatriyas were assigned a position next to Brahmins, and Vaiśyas and Śūdras were comparatively neglected.

The Rgvedic people, including the Brahmins, were fond of meat-eating and practically all the important ceremonies and sacrifices were attended with the slaughter of animals. The principle of '*Ahimsā*' or non-injury to animals was then unknown to the Rshis or ascetics. Offerings of flesh were frequently made to the gods, and the worshippers, including the priests, ate the offerings. The meat of cows and bulls does not seem to have been excluded.

1. Ghurye, G. S., : Caste & Race in India, p. 40-41.

2. Dutt, N. K.: Origin and Growth of Caste in India, P. 86-87.

It was a custom to entertain a distinguished guest with the meat of a bull or a barren cow. At the wedding ceremonies oxen were slain, evidently for the feeding of the invited guests. From the Brähmapas we learn that the sage Agastya slaughtered one hundred bulls at a sacrifice. In fact, the sacrifice of cows and bulls was not only optional as in the case of the arrival of a guest, the Ashtaka sacrifices offered to the Fathers, and marriage, but compulsory on certain occasions and ceremonies. At Śrāddhas, or periodical oblations to the manes, the sacrifice of cows is recommended, as substances like rice, barley, sesamum, fruits, etc. keep the manes satisfied for a month, the flesh of goats for six months, while beef satisfies them for a year.¹ Meat was almost compulsory at the Annaprásana (or first feeding with solid food) ceremony of a child and from then till death and cremation, sacrificing of animals was necessary on most of the ceremonial occasions of life.

In the latter part of the Vedic period women had practically been reduced to the status of Śūdras. Like the latter, they were debarred from the right of initiation and investment with the sacred thread. They were considered to have no business with sacred texts. In many passages we find that woman and Śūdra were bracketed together. The sight of women was considered as inauspicious and people were asked to avoid seeing women, Śūdras, dead bodies, etc.² From this it appears that woman had practically no place in the religious life of the society and as such she was neglected and degraded by the people.

Thus the Vedic society was class-ridden in the sense that unusual importance was given to the Brahmin class to the detriment of other classes and nobody was allowed to change his class. People widely indulged in meat-eating and the sacrificial rites were the main religious rites. Women were completely excluded from the religious field. Against these glaring draw-backs of the Vedic society, so far as the historical period is concerned, Pārvanātha and Mahāvīra had to fight. They recognised the division of society into four classes but based them on activities and not on birth. They gave full freedom to one and all, including women and

1. Dutt, N. K.: *Origin & Growth of Caste in India*, pp. 64-65 & 191-194.

2. Dutt, N. K.: *Origin and Growth of Caste in India*, p. 233-34.

Sūdras, to observe religious practices and admitted them into their religious order.¹ They launched an attack against meat-eating and the performance of sacrificial rites. In this connection Dr. N. K. Dutt observes: "Animal sacrifice had been of so long standing among the Aryans and such was the respect for the authority of the Vedas which made it obligatory to sacrifice with flesh offerings, that the abolition of sacrifices, even of cows, became a very slow process, affecting only a very small minority, the intellectual section of the people, and might not have succeeded at all if Jainism and Buddhism had not over-whelmed the country and the mass of the people with the teachings of Ahimsā and inefficacy of sacrificial rites."² The doors of Jainism were thrown open to all and equal opportunity was given to everybody to practise religion according to his capacity. Those who followed religion as house-holders were known as Śrāvakas and Śrāvikās and those who observed it fully by leaving their houses were called as Sādhus and Sādhvis.

After Pārvanātha and Mahāvīra, various Jaina Āchāryas made no distinction whatsoever among people in the matter of following religion and conceived that the Varṇa system, that is, the division of society into four Varṇas or classes, is based upon differences in professions. In their view birth played no part in determining the class or Varṇa of a particular person. As regards the division of the society into four Varṇas Jinasena Āchārya states³ in the following manner.

मनुष्यजातिरेकैव जातिनामोदयोद्भवा ।
वृत्तिभेदा हि तद्रभेदात् चातुर्विध्यमिहाश्रते ॥
ब्राह्मणा ब्रतसंस्कारात् क्षत्रियाः शख्खारणात् ।
वणिजोऽर्थार्जिनान्न्यायात् शूद्रा न्यगृहितिसंश्रयात् ॥

The whole mankind came into existence due to the rise of Jātis Nāma-Karma; and the mankind was divided into four categories of Brāhmaṇa, Kshatriya, Vaiśya and Sūdra according to the

1. Bool Chand : Lord Mahāvīra, p. 4-5.

2. Dutt, N. K. : Origin & Growth of Caste in India, p. 204.

3. Ādi Purāṇa, Parva 38, 45-46.

differences in the vocations they followed for their livelihood. Those who observed 'Pratas' (i. e. religious injunctions to a greater degree) were known as Brāhmaṇas, those who carried weapons as Kshatriyas, those who acquired wealth by just means as Vaiśyas and those who maintained by resorting to low professions as Śūdras.

In the same way Āchārya Ravishēna asserts¹ that it is not birth but activities that determine one's class in the society.

ऋषिश्रृंगादिकानां च मानवानां प्रकीर्त्यते ।
ब्राह्मणं गुणयोगेन न तु तथोनिसंभवात् ॥
न जातिर्गाहिता काचिद् गुणाः कल्याणकारणम् ।
व्रतस्थमपि चाण्डालं तं देवा ब्राह्मणं विदुः ॥
चातुर्वर्णं यथान्यज्ञ चाण्डालादिविशेषणम् ।
सर्वमाचारभेदेन प्रसिद्धि भुवने गतम् ॥

The Brāhmaṇahood of best ascetics as well as of ordinary people is considered on their actions and not on their birth in the Brāhmaṇa class. No class has been despised. The actions alone lead to good prosperity. Gods regard a Chāṇḍāla, i. e., an outcast, as a Brāhmaṇa if he follows religious mode of life. The epithets of classes and Chāṇḍāla which are applied to mankind are famous in this world due to the difference in their ways of life.

Āchārya Amitagati also attaches no importance to birth and considers one's mode of life as the determinant of one's class.²

आचारमात्रभेदेन जातीनां भेदकल्पनम् ।
न जातिब्राह्मणस्यास्ति नियता कापि तात्त्विकी ॥
ब्राह्मणक्षत्रियादीनां चतुर्णामपि तस्यतः ।
एकैव मानुषी जातिराचारेण विभज्यते ॥
शीलवन्तो गताः स्वर्गं नीचजातिभवा अपि ।
कुलीना नरकं प्राप्ताः शीलसंयमनाशिनः ॥

1. Padma Purāṇa, prava XI, 200, 203 and 205.

2. Dharma-parikṣāḥ; Pariccheda XVII; 24-25, 31-33.

गुणैः संपदते जातिर्गुणध्वसैर्विपद्यते ।
 यतस्ततो ब्रूधैः कार्यैः गुणेभेदादरः परः ॥
 जातिमात्रमदः कार्यैः न नीचत्वप्रवेशकः ।
 उच्चत्वदायकः सद्ग्रीः कार्यैः शीलसमादरः ॥

The idea of differentiation of classes comes in only because of differences in the ways of life. No single class has been settled as that of the true or real Brahmin class. Really there is only one class of four divisions, viz., Brāhmaṇas, Kshatriyas, Vaiśyas and Śūdras, and that is the class of human beings. They have been divided because of differences in the ways of life. People of good conduct had attained heaven even though they were born in low families and on the contrary men devoid of good conduct and restraint had gone to hell in spite of the fact that they had taken birth in high families. A class is formed by following a particular mode of life and it perishes when that mode is left and that is why wise people should respect ways of life only. The good people should not have pride in any class as it leads to degradation but they should observe good conduct which might give them high position.¹

It is clear that the Jaina religion as such is not concerned in dividing the society into classes. The division was effected by the people with a view to facilitate their living. The classes were not hereditary but they were based on the ways of life. It naturally follows that as a class is composed of persons observing a particular mode of life, if that mode is changed a person has automatically to change his class. There was no restriction to change the class. On the contrary it was for each person to decide in what class to enter. Jainism has enjoined upon a person to perform fifty-three rites (i.e. Kriyās) in his life and among those the 18th rite is that of Varna-lābha, i.e., getting into a class.² After completing his education and marriage ceremony, a person

1. For a similar denunciation of the division of society into four classes based on birth and for the necessity of considering all people on the same level see Varāmgacharita, XXV, 2-11.

2. Ādi Purāṇa, Parva 38, Stanzas 55-62 and Parva 39, Stanzas 61-71. Also see Chapter V, section (12).

should approach some leading members of the class and request them to admit him into their class. The leaders also reciprocate his wishes and allow him to get into their class. Thus admitted he attains the same status as that of the others.¹ This is what is known as Varṇa-lābha Kriyā.

From the above discussion it will be seen that the society as envisaged by Pārśvanātha, Mahāvīra and other Āchāryas was a society wherein classes were not watertight compartments and complete freedom was granted to the people to change to the class of their own aptitude. The society was not divided into distinct separate sections and no differentiation was made in the status of the classes. All were considered as different ways of life and utmost importance was attached to individual character and mode of behaviour. There was no room for anybody to feel that he was neglected or degraded as he was free enough to follow any profession he liked and he could observe all religious rites and practices along with others. It is important to note that Brāhmaṇa, Kshatriya, Vaiśya and Śūdra were the main divisions and nowhere in ancient literature even a mention has been made of the castes existing as at present in the Jaina community. The caste system is a comparatively later development in the Jaina community and it appears that the castes might have arisen from the former four classes.² It is stated that the persistent Brahmanical tendency to give a hereditary character to occupational distinctions by birth-right led to the formation of castes and castes within castes. Even though the early records of the Jainas, along with those of the Buddhists, reveal a powerful movement of thought counteracting this rapidly increasing tendency,³ still it is a fact that later on the Jainas formed in their community a large number of castes and sub-castes.

We now turn to the discussion of castes in the Jaina community.

1. Ādi Purāṇa, Parva 39, Stanza 71.

दृष्टुकैवल्यं समाधास्य वर्णाभेन युञ्जते ।

विद्यिवद् सोऽपि तं लभ्यता याति तत्समक्षताम् ॥

2. Jaini, J. L.: Jaina Law, p. 9.

3. Law, B. C.: India as Depicted in Early Texts of Buddhism and Jainism, p. 143.

3. SOME IMPORTANT THINGS ABOUT JAINA CASTES

At the outset we should remember some important things about castes in the Jaina community. In the first place, the exact number of Jaina castes is not available. Proverbially it is said that there are eighty-four castes in the Jaina community. As regards the number 84 it is believed that once a rich Jaina of Padmāvatī town invited at his place members of the Jaina community from all places to consider the possibility of establishing one Vaiśya-Mahāsabhbā (i.e. Central Association of Traders) and in response to this invitation Jaina representatives from 84 places participated in the function. From that time representatives of different places were considered as belonging to different castes and as the representatives came from 84 places there became 84 castes in the Jaina community. The names of these castes and the places from which they originated are given in Appendix I.¹ There is another list of 84 original castes in the Jaina community and they are entered in Appendix II.² If we compare the names of castes included in the two Appendices, it will be found that the first 26 caste names are common to both and the remaining names of castes in the one are not found in the other. This means that the number 84 cannot be relied upon. Moreover these two lists are not exhaustive. There is a prayer in the name of 84 castes known as 'Chavaryāṁśi-Jñāti-Jayamāla'³ and many of the caste names mentioned in this prayer are not found in the lists given either in Appendix I or Appendix II, for example, Kumābāda, Rohinivāla, Vāyadā, Bhaṭerā, Ayavāla, Mahalavāla, Saharu, etc. Again a list of names of 84 Jaina castes is given by Prof. H. H. Wilson⁴ (Appendix III) and it will be noticed that many of the castes from this list are not found in the lists mentioned above. Further, it is believed that in the original 84 castes in the Jaina community as a whole, other groups of Jainas were admitted as separate castes

1. Vide (i) Yati Śripālchandraji : Jaina Sampradāya Śikshā, pp. 686-87.
and (ii) Rāmalālaji : Mahājana-Vansā-muktāvali, pp. 164-165.

2. Jain, P. D. : Vijātiya Vivāha Mimānsā, p. 35.

3. From Dharmasārasamgraha or Daśalakshapāṇḍipūjā.

4. Wilson : Works by Wilson, Vol. I, p. 345.

according to circumstances in different provinces, and in this way some provinces came to have their own 84 Jaina Castes. The Appendix IV and Appendix V give the names¹ of Jaina castes from Gujaratha and Deccan respectively. Similarly a long list of Jaina castes in Gujaratha and Marwar is given by Lt. Col. William Miles.² All this shows that several castes arose in the Jaina community in various parts of the country.

Secondly, apart from exclusive Jaina castes (i.e. castes in which all members are Jainas) we find that there are Jaina sections or divisions in several Hindu castes. These are mainly occupational castes some members of which happen to follow the Jaina religion and as such they form into distinct groups or sub-castes in those castes. It cannot be definitely said whether these small sections were converted to Jainism or they continued to follow the Jaina religion while the rest of the caste members changed their religion. In any case it appears that these sections are of sufficiently long standing and they have a fixed mode of behaviour with other sections of the same caste. Among the Devāṅgas, also known as Haṭakaras, Koshṭis or Sālis, there are 33 endogamous divisions of which the 10th is a Jaina division.³ Jaina Guravas, an endogamous division of Guravas, resemble local Brahmins in matters of religion and custom. They abstain from flesh and liquor and do not take food and water from any Hindu caste, even from Brahmins. They are mainly servants in village temples which, though dedicated to Brahmanic gods, have still by their sides broken remains of Jaina images. This, and the fact that most of the temple land grants date from a time when Jainism was the state religion, support the theory that the Jaina Guravas are probably Jaina temple servants who have come under the influence partly of Līmgāyata religion and partly of Brahmanism. They are found mainly in Malvan Taluka of the Ratnagiri District.⁴

1. Vide Yati Śripālachamdrājī : *Jaina Sampradāyaśikshā*, p. 617.

2. Vide "On the Jains of Gujaratha and Marwar," *Transactions of Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. III, 1835, pp. 335-371.

3. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. I, p. 303.

4. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. II, pp. 22 and 33-34.

In the north Gujarātha a few Mālis are Jainas and form a separate division of Jaina Mālis.¹ In the United Provinces there are Jaina sections among Rajputs and Unai or Unaya caste.² According to the 1911 census there are more than 125 Hindu and other castes among whom there are Jaina followers.³ Thus we find Agaravālas among Jainas, Hindus, Sikhs, Buddhists and Mussalmans. Moreover some Jaina castes completely merge into Hindus and consider themselves as Hindus. There was a sub-caste of Jaina Kalāras in the Central Provinces, but they are said to have gone to Hinduism.⁴

Thirdly, as a small Jaina community is divided into more than 100 castes, we find that each caste forms a very small group. Excepting a few castes like Osavāla, Śrīmāla, Agaravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Saitavāla, Paravāra, Chaturtha, and Pañchama, the rest claim a meagre strength. Since all these small castes are endogamous, many have necessarily to remain unmarried and as such their population is fastly declining. There are nearly sixty castes whose population is less than one hundred. There are seventeen castes which are on the way of being wiped out. The population of 'Disavāla' caste according to 1901 census was 971, it fell to 355 in 1911 and by this time it might have possibly ceased to exist. There was 'Kukekari' caste in Berar but now there is not even a single person belonging to that caste. The same is the story of 'Bañjārā' caste.⁵ It seems that this is the reason why many castes mentioned in the lists are not found at present. There are, no doubt, new castes which are not found in the list mentioned above and their rise in recent times is explained by the fact that as the practice of re-admitting ex-communicated members into the caste after some sort of fine or penance has fallen into disuse, such out-cast persons, finding no other way, join together and form into a separate group.⁶ Lādavā or Pāñchā Śrīmālis,

1. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. II, p. 426.

2. W. Crooke : T. C. N. W. P., Vol. IV, pp. 221-223 and 428.

3. Census of India, 1911, Vol. II.

4. Russel, R. V. : T. C. C. P., Vol. I, p. 225.

5. Jain, P. D. : Vijātiya Vivāha Mimānsā, p. 49.

6. J. H., Vol. IX, p. 416.

Chau Sake Paravāras are instances in point.

Fourthly, along with the decline of population of Jaina castes we find the assimilation of one caste into another. Various causes can be attributed to the assimilation of one caste into another but the main reason seems to be to save the persons of declining castes from joining another religion. The present Athasake Paravāra caste might be a combination of two castes, viz., Ashta-Śākhā and Paravāra. The Ashta-Śākhā caste is not existing at present but there are historical evidences which go to show the prior existence of that caste. It is likely that for some reason both the castes might have mixed together and formed a new caste of 'Ashta-Śākhā Paravāra'.¹ In the year 1906 of Vikrama Era the Siṁhapura caste was incorporated into the Narasiṁhapurā caste.² Seeing the declining population of "Bijāvargi" caste, the Khapdelavālas incorporated them into their own caste. At times even non-Jainas were converted to Jainism and assimilated into another caste. When members of 'Padmāvatī Poravāla' caste found that Vaishpava Brahmins were not ready to perform their marriage rites, they converted Gauda Brahmins to Jainism and maintained close relationships with them, by resorting to inter-dining and inter-marrying with them. Recently there was a proposal of incorporating 'Budhelā' caste into 'Padmāvatī Poravāla' caste. Some scholars think that in the social history of the Jaina community there might have been many instances of such assimilation.³ But at present the assimilation is not resorted to. On the contrary any such proposal is resented. The move of assimilating Pañchabisās into Golālāres was turned down.⁴

Fifthly, Jaina religion as such does not recognise the castes in the Jaina community. They were not found in the Jaina community from the very beginning. They are comparatively of a recent growth. If they were existing, they would have been men-

1. Jain K. P.: 'Ashta-Śākhā Upajātī', *Jain Antiquary*, March 1938, p. 246
Jain K. P.: (ii) Prāchīna Jaina Lekha Samgraha, Part I, p. 79.

2. Jain P. D.: *Vijātiya Vivāha Mīmāṃsā*, p. 37.

3. J. H., Vol. IX; pp. 415-417; 549-550.

4. J. H., Vol. IX, p. 419.

tioned by the Jaina Āchāryas in their biographical or other works. But it is a fact that no mention is made of them by the Jaina Āchāryas. The Jaina books do not give more importance to them than to consider them as a social practice. The castes are therefore not ancient at all; and it is most likely that they might have been formed during the last one thousand years.¹ This is the view of Digambara Jainas. In response to a question whether the castes following the Jaina religion are according to the Jaina sacred books or not, when they were formed, Svāmī Ātmānanda, a Śvetāmbara Jaina ascetic, declared that the Jaina castes were organised by the Jaina Āchāryas of their own accord and that they were not found formerly at all.² The Sthānakavāsi Jaina ascetics also made it clear that the caste-system was not sanctioned by the Jaina religion.³

Sixthly, it is interesting to note that only a few castes like Osavāla, Poravāda, Huṁbāda, Narasiṁgapurā and Nemā are common to both the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras. There are as many as 87 castes and sub-castes recorded among the Digambaras⁴ and 38 among the Śvetāmbaras.⁵ When a small community is divided into several sections, naturally the latter are composed of a very few members. According to the Digambara Jaina Directory, out of 87 castes there are 41 whose population is less than 500, 12 whose population is between 500 and 1000, 20 whose population is between 1000 and 5000 and there are only 15 castes whose population is more than 5000. There are some castes whose population is merely 2, 3, 4, 8, 16, 20, etc. The same is the case with the Śvetāmbaras. Excepting the castes of Śrīmāla, Osavāla, Poravāda, Nīmā, Bhāvasāra and Bhojaka, all the remaining castes have a population less than 500 in Gujarātha, where the Śvetāmbaras are mainly con-

1. (i) J. H., Vol. IX, p. 413 and Vol. XI, p. 627.

(ii) Jain, P. D.: *Vijātīya Vividha Mimāmsā*, p. 40.

(iii) Jain Hiralal; *Jaina Itihāsa-ki Pūrva Pīthikā aura Hamāra Abhyutthāna*, Part II, p. 42.

2. J. H., Vol. XI, pp. 383-84.

3. *Jaina Jagat*, Vol. VIII, No. 14, p. 1.

4. Vide Digambara Jaina Directory.

5. Vide Śvetāmbara Jaina Directory.

centrated, and there are several castes whose population is merely 1, 2, 3, 4, 7, 9, 10, 15, 16, 21, etc. The names of castes and sub-castes with their population figures as given by the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras are entered in Appendices VI and VII respectively. As many castes in the Jaina community are engaged in commercial activities, they are spread over a wide area, especially in big commercial towns and ports. In cities like Bombay, Calcutta, Delhi, Nagpur, etc., nearly fifty Jaina castes can be easily found. As regards the names of different castes found in each Province, Appendix VIII gives the names of the Digambara Jaina castes with their population according to Provinces.¹ Even though castes have spread over a wide area, yet there are different places where different castes have been concentrated. Thus Śrimālis will be found mainly in Gujarātha and Kathiawar, Osavālas in Gujaratha and Marwar, Khapdelavālas in Marwar and Maļavā, Agaravālas in the U. P. and Delhi, Hūmbādas in Marwar, Paravāras in Bundelkhandā, Saitavālas in the C. P. and Berar, Chaturthas and Pañchamas in Karnātaka and Deccan States. This is the reason how they could keep up their identity up till now.

4. JAINA CASTE SYSTEM

We have seen that the caste-system among the Jainas is a social, and not religious, institution. Jainism does not recognise castes as such and at the same time the Jaina books do not specifically obstruct the observance of caste rules by the members of the Jaina community. The attitude of Jainism towards caste is that it is one of the social practices, unconnected with religion, observed by people; and it was none of its business to regulate the working of the caste system. Naturally the Jainas evolved a caste system of their own which is more or less similar to the caste system found in the Hindu society. This was bound to occur sooner or later because the Jainas were surrounded on all sides by the Hindus, and at times they were recruited from the Hindus, and as such they could not escape from copying the most important characteristic of the Hindu society, viz., its caste system. Practi-

1. Such figures for Śvetāmbaras are not available.

cally all noteworthy features of the caste-system among the Hindus found a place, to more or less extent, in the caste system among the Jainas. It is therefore necessary to see what are the prominent features of the Hindu caste system and to what extent they are discernible in the Jaina caste system.

Uptil now many efforts have been made by various scholars to give a workable definition of caste with a view to present its all remarkable aspects. But the system is such a peculiar and complex thing that no satisfactory definition, it seems, is possible and no unanimity on the subject could be expected. Senart states that a caste is a close corporation, exclusive and in theory, at any rate, rigorously hereditary. It is equipped with a certain traditional and independent organisation, including a chief and a council; meeting on occasions in assemblies endowed with more or less full authority. Often united in the celebration of certain festivals, it is further bound together by a common occupation and by the practice of common customs which relate more particularly to marriage, food and questions of ceremonial pollution. Finally, it rules its members by the exercise of a jurisdiction the extent of which is fairly wide and which by the sanction of certain penalties, especially of exclusion, either absolute or revocable, from the group, succeeds in enforcing the authority of the community.¹ According to Sir H. Risley, a caste may be defined as a collection of families or groups of families bearing a common name; claiming common descent from a mythical ancestor, human or divine; and regarded by those who are competent to give opinion as forming a single homogeneous community. The name generally denotes or is associated with a specific occupation. A caste is almost invariably endogamous in the sense that a member of the large circle denoted by the common name may not marry outside that circle, but within the circle there are usually a number of smaller circles each of which is also endogamous.² Sir E. A. Gait observes that the main characteristics of a caste are the belief in a common origin held by all the members and the possession of the traditional occupation. It may be defined as an endogamous group

1. Senart, E. : *Caste in India*, p. 20.

2. Risley, H. H. : *People of India*, p. 68.

or collection of such groups bearing a common name, having the same traditional occupation, claiming descent from the same source, and commonly regarded as forming a single homogeneous community.¹ Dr. S. V. Ketkar considers caste as a social group having two characteristics:—(i) membership is confined to those who are born of members and includes all persons so born; (ii) the members are forbidden by an inexorable social law to marry outside the group. Each one of such groups has a special name by which it is called. Several of such small aggregates are grouped together under a common name, while these larger groups are but sub-divisions of groups still larger which have independent names.² Without attempting to make a comprehensive definition Dr. N. K. Dutt states that the most apparent features of the present day caste system are that the members of the different castes cannot have matrimonial connections with any but persons of their own caste; that there are restrictions, though not so rigid as in the matter of marriage, about a member of one caste eating and drinking with that of a different caste; that in many cases there are fixed occupations for different castes; that there is some hierarchical gradation among the castes, the most recognised position being that of the Brāhmaṇas at the top; that birth alone decides a man's connection with his caste for life, unless expelled for violation of his caste rules, and that transition from one caste to another, high or low, is not possible. The prestige of the Brāhmaṇa class is the corner-stone of the whole organisation.³ Taking into account the views expressed by various scholars, the outstanding features of the Hindu society when it was ruled by the social philosophy of caste, unaffected by the modern ideas of rights and duties, are discerned by Dr. G. S. Ghurye to be six, viz., (1) Segmental division of society; (ii) Hierarchy; (iii) Restrictions on feeding and social inter course; (iv) Civil and religious disabilities and privileges of the different sections: (v) Lack of choice of occupation; and (vi) Restrictions on marriage.⁴

1. Gait, E. A.: *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 3, p. 234.

2. Ketkar, S. V.: *History of Caste in India*, p. 15.

3. Dutt, N. K.: *Origin and Growth of Caste in India*, p. 3.

4. Ghurye, G. S.: *Caste and Race in India*, p. 2.

By segmental division of society it is meant that a society is divided into a number of social groups known as castes. Unlike other social associations, membership of a caste depends not on social position or calling or wealth or aptitude for a particular art etc. but on birth alone. A person automatically becomes a member of a caste when he is born in it. These castes have regular standing councils known as *Pañchāyatas* for dealing with offences committed by their members. Such offences cover a wide range of subjects like behaving against the established religious practices, violating marriage rules, refusing to act up to caste-customs, non-payment of debt, etc. Punishment is meted out to defaulters and it generally consists of ex-communication, temporary or permanent, or fine or both. As far as these matters are concerned members of a caste cease to be members of the community of which they form a part. Thus in this caste-bound society, community-feeling is restricted as the members owe moral allegiance first to the caste and then to the community. It is but natural that due to diversities in laws administered by different castes, different moral standards are set up in various castes, and distinct segments are formed in a community. We find the same process in the Jaina community. The community is divided into a large number of castes, each having its own *Pañchāyata* regulating the life of its members according to its established rules and practices.¹ There is a vast difference in the moral standards adopted by various castes. Generally speaking while the Jaina castes in the North did not allow widow remarriage, some of those in the Deccan allowed and practised it. There are particularly different rules and regulations for each caste regarding birth, marriage, death and other ceremonies. Whether it is a question of marriage or of disposal of dead, the help of caste fellows alone is sought. In this way what is known as a cultural gulf is formed between the castes. Śrimālis, Agaravālas, Paravāras, Saitavālas and others differ very widely in their caste customs. Thus the Jaina castes have created segmental divisions in the Jaina community.

One of the principal characteristics of caste society among

1. Glaeserappa, H. V.: Jainisms, pp. 326-327.

the Hindus is the hierarchy of the groups. The Hindu castes can be arranged in a more or less definite order of social precedence with Brahmins as the head of the hierarchy. The highest position given to the Brahmin caste is considered as the corner stone of the caste organisation in the Hindu society. It was against this supremacy of Brahmins, Jainism, as we have seen, rose in revolt and therefore in the Jaina community we find that even though there are numerous castes, no prominent position is assigned to any caste, not even to the Jaina Brāhmaṇas. As the highest rung of the ladder is not fixed, naturally the question of arranging castes in an order of social precedence does not arise. All castes are treated on a footing of equality by the community and no differentiation is accepted between castes as regards social prestige. But among some Jaina castes we find a feeling of superiority over other castes or particular divisions of a caste due to differences in moral standards, social practices, customs and manners. Thus the castes which do not allow widow marriage consider themselves as superior to those which allow and practise widow marriage. In some castes like Śrīmālis, Poravādas, Hūmbadas and others there are sub-divisions like Visā, Dasā, Pāñchā and Adhīchā; and these are treated in a descending order of social respectability. Among the six castes of Terāpanthis, the Charanāgare caste is considered respectable as many religious and learned men happened to be from this caste.¹ Similarly in the former Nizams Dominions Śrāvagis are regarded as superior in rank to the Poravādas because of the great regard the former entertain for animal life.² In a small Lamechū caste there are two divisions, viz. Uñchā and Nīchā which suggest that a sense of high and low is present in them.³ There are three divisions of the Jainas in the North Kanara District, viz., the Chaturthas, the Tagara-Bogāras, and the Priests. But the Chaturthas and Pañchamas hold along from the Tagara-Bogāras, whom they look upon as inferiors though they do not differ from them in religion.⁴ It should be remembered that all these are trivial and

1. J. H., Vol. VIII, p. 290.

2. Hassan: T. C. N. D., Vol. I, p. 260.

3. J. H., Vol. IX, p. 483.

4. B. G., Vol. 25, Part I, pp. 229-30.

individual differences mainly found within a caste or between a few castes and there is nothing like even a faint plea of arrangement of castes as a whole according to social precedence in the Jaina community.

Among the Hindu castes there are minute rules as to what sort of food or drink can be accepted by a person and from what castes. For this purpose all food is divided into two classes, 'Kachchā' and 'Pakkā', the former being any food in the cooking of which water has been used, and the latter all food cooked in clarified butter without the addition of water. In general a man of higher caste cannot accept 'Kachchā' food from one of the lower, though the latter may regale himself with similar food offered by a member of one of the castes accepted to be higher than his own.¹ These restrictions, strictly speaking, have no place in the Jaina community for the simple reason that in it there is no hierarchical organisation of castes and as such there is no ban on dining with any other member of the Jaina community irrespective of his caste. Recently Svāmi Ātmānanda declared that as Jainism considers all its followers as equals there should be no objection in taking food from any Jaina and in fact this was practised in the past.² From the inscription at Śravāga-Belagola in Mysore it appears that even though there were several castes, only a slight difference existed in reality between them in the 14th century of our era.³ But later on, the Jainas, possibly due to the influence of the Hindus with whom they were closely in touch, introduced restrictions on feeding as a result of which inter-dining is prohibited in many castes.⁴ Even now when caste feasts are given members from other castes are generally not invited.

1. Ghurye, G. S. : *Caste and Race in India*, p. 7.

2. J. H., Vol. XI, pp. 383-84.

3. Maj. Delamaine : 'On the Shravacs or Jains'; *Transactions of Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. I, 1827, p. 413.

4. (i) Jain, P. D. : *Vijñatiya Vivāha Mimāmsā*, p. 35.

(ii) Dr. B. Hamilton : 'On the Shravacs or Jains'. *Transactions of Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. I, 1827, p. 531.

Along with the restrictions on feeding there are also restrictions on social inter-course based on the plea of transmission of impurity by even the touch of a low caste person. Believing in this idea certain inhibitions were put by Hindus on Śūdras and other low caste people. Theoretically, the touch of a member of any caste lower than one's own defiles a person of the higher caste. This belief was not copied by Jainas from Hindus and in the Jaina community there are no restrictions whatsoever as regards social inter-course between members of several castes. This might possibly be due to the fact that majority of the Jainas consider themselves as Vaiśyas and there are practically no Śūdras among Jainas.

When once the castes were graded according to degrees of respectability, certain restrictions, social as well as religious, were put on, and certain privileges were granted to different castes in the society. Amongst Hindus we find that some low castes are segregated and made to stay outside the villages. At times castes have been allotted distinct quarters of the village and called by the name of the caste, for example, Brāhmaṇa-ālli, Sonāra-ālli, etc. This tendency is not marked among Jainas. When Jainas were populous in the past it is not known whether they reserved some localities for particular castes among them. Most probably they must not have done this because castes are comparatively of a recent growth among them; and they do not accept the hierarchical order. However from the ancient Jaina literature it appears that some groups of people were despised and isolated from the civilised castes of the people. Amongst them are mentioned the peacock-tamers, acrobates, hunters, pole-dancers, fishermen, cobblers, etc.¹ These names suggest that the despised people were mainly flesh-eaters and as such they might have been isolated from the rest.

The religious disabilities among Hindus centred round in denying some religious rites to certain castes. The Vedic ritual was meant for high castes and the Purānic for low castes. The Śūdras were not allowed to study the most sacred literature. The innermost recesses of temples were reserved only for the Brahmins and no caste could employ any other priests than the Brahmins. In spite

1. Jain, J. C. : Life in Ancient India, p. 145.

of the fact that Jainism allows any person to follow the Jaina religion and to observe its religious practices, in reality we find that many persons have been debarred from practising certain religious rites. In some castes which have been divided into Visās and Dasās, at certain places the latter are not allowed even at present to perform worship in the temples. The ascetics decline to take food at the hands of people who practise widow remarriage. According to the Digambara sect the Sūdras cannot give food to the Jaina ascetics, they are not entitled to Moksha (i.e. liberation), they cannot become ascetics of high order and they are possibly not allowed to worship.¹

Considering the importance attached to the Brahmins and the prominent position they occupied in the Hindu society, many privileges were granted to them. They were made to be respected by others, exempted from capital punishment and paying taxes, allowed to use some services free of charge, could get their lands assessed at distinctly lower rates and could avail themselves of lenient treatment when imprisoned. Even though the superiority of the Brahmins over other people is not recognised by the Jainas and generally the primary position is supposed to be assigned to the Kshatriyas instead of the Brahmins, the latter were still held in respect and esteem by the people. King Bharata is said to have fed them daily and distinguished them from others by putting the mark of Kaikīpi—jewel on their person. They were receiving gifts from the kings. Other people also gave away charity to them. Besides, the Brahmins enjoyed certain other privileges, such as immunity from paying taxes and capital punishment.²

Along with civil and religious restrictions there were restrictions on the choice of occupations. Members of a particular caste were not allowed to follow any calling they liked. Occupations were considered as hereditary and it was not proper for a person to abandon his occupation in favour of another, even though the latter may be more profitable. Like castes occupations were also graded as high and low and naturally members of high

1. J. H., Vol. XII, p. 453.

2. Jain, J. C.: Life in Ancient India, pp. 141-142.

castes were barred from following low occupations for fear of degradation of the whole caste. It was not only the moral restraint and the social check of one's caste-fellows that acted as a restraint on the choice of one's occupation, but also the restrictions put by other castes, which did not allow members other than those of their own caste to follow their callings.¹ We have seen that the Jaina castes were named mainly after the places of their origin. Śrīmālis were so called because they came from Śrīmāla; Osavālas from Osia, Agaravālas from Agrohā, Khaṇḍelavālas from Khaṇḍelā, etc. In the circumstances no particular occupation can be assigned to these castes as hereditary occupation. The Jaina castes were not occupational in character. Members of a caste were allowed complete freedom to follow any occupation they liked. Later on when some members of a caste followed a particular occupation, divisions or sub-castes named after that occupation were formed in that caste. Among Dasa Śrīmalis there is a division by name 'Chanaṇpahuā'² which suggests that its members might be following in the past the occupation of selling grains and parched rice. Moreover, there are a few castes among the Śvetāmbaras which are known after their occupations, viz., Kāṇḍvī (sweet-meat sellers), Sutāra (carpenter), Darji (tailor), Modha-ghāñchi (oil-crusher), Kachhiā (vegetable dealer), etc.

One of the important restrictions observed by members of a caste is regarding the extent to which the members are allowed to contract their matrimonial alliances. For this purpose generally a caste is divided into smaller groups known as sub-castes and members were enjoined to choose their partners from their own sub-castes. This is what is known as the rule of endogamy and if this rule is violated expulsion from the membership of the group is generally the penalty which the offending parties have to suffer. Thus the Brahmins from Mahārāshtra are divided into Deśastha, Koṅkaṇastha, Karhāḍa, etc. Brahmins and as a rule a Deśastha person cannot marry a Koṅkaṇastha lady and so on. Among the Jainas the castes are endogamous where there are no subdivisions

1. Ghurye, G. S.: *Caste and Race in India*, p. 16.

2. B. G., Vol. IX, Part I, pp. 97-98

in the caste. Saitavālas, Chaturthas, Pañchamas, Khaṇḍelavālas, etc. marry among themselves. In other castes there are subdivisions which are treated as endogamous groups. Practically every important Jaina caste in the Gujarātha is divided into Visā and Dasā and some are even further sub-divided. Thus the Śrimālis are divided into Visā Śrimālis, Dasā Śrimālis and Lāḍavā Śrimālis. Among the Visā Śrimālis there are seven minor divisions and among the Dasā Śrimālis there are three. The three main divisions with their sub-divisions do not inter-marry.¹ Further, among the Visā and Dasā Śrimālis territorial limits have been put for contracting matrimonial alliances. To illustrate, in the constitution of the Visā Śrimāli sub-caste from Saurāshtra (i. e. mainly from Junagadhā, Dhoraji, Vagpathali, and Jetapura Talukas) it is laid down that their members should keep matrimonial relations with the Visā Śrimālis living up to Bhavanagar, Veraval, Porbunder, Jamanagar and Mangrol and not beyond this limit even though the other party may be a Visā Śrimāli. Moreover a bride-groom from Bhavanagar and other places must be below 25 years, a condition which is not applicable to the bridegrooms from proper Saurāshtra.²

From the above discussion it will be noticed that excepting a few features of the Hindu caste system all other features were more or less present in the Jaina caste-system. Among the Jainas the castes were not arranged in a hierarchical order of respectability, no restrictions were put on social inter-course between different caste members and there was no lack of choice of occupation. In all other respects we can perceive and gauge the influence of the Hindus on the Jaina caste system. The caste system is deeply rooted in the social organisation of the Jainas and in consequence a small Jaina community spread throughout the length and breadth of India is divided and sub-divided into water-tight compartments. So long as the rules of endogamy are going to be observed by the Jainas, these segmental divisions will perpetuate, a cultural gulf will be created between them and caste and sub-caste feeling

1. Enthoven, R. E.: T. C. B., Vol. III, p. 438.

2. 'Śri Saurāshtra Visā Śrimāli Jūātīno Dharo', p. 39.

instead of community feeling will be prominent. All the drawbacks of caste-system are present among the Jainas. Social effects of this caste system are described later on.¹ It will suffice for the present to state that caste system exists in the Jaina community in a more or less old form and all its important features are discernible even now.

The number of castes in the Jaina community is so large that their investigation in detail will form a separate subject matter for research. Therefore the general information about some important Jaina castes in all parts of India is given below.

5. JAINA CASTES IN THE NORTH

(i) *Agaravāla or Agravāla*

The Agaravāla is one of the most important castes of Digambara Jainas. The Agravālas are found mainly in the United Provinces, the Punjab, Rajputana and Malwa. There are Agaravālas among Hindus also and are mostly Vaishnavas.² As the Vaishnavas are vegetarians and in custom and manners agree with Jaina Agaravālas, inter-marriage between the two sections of Agaravālas is allowed and the wife adopts the religion of her husband. In this connection Mr. Risley observes that "Owing perhaps, to this uniformity of practice in matters of diet, these differences of religious belief do not operate as a bar to inter-marriage, and when a marriage takes place between persons of different religions, the standard Hindu ritual is observed. When husband and wife belong to different sects, the wife is formally admitted into her husband's sect and must in future have her own food cooked separately when staying in her mother's house."³

There are various explanations regarding the origin of Agaravālas and they do not agree on all points.⁴ Generally it is

1. See Chapter VII, Section 5 (c).

2. Jain, J. L. : *Jaina Law*, p. 17.

3. Risley, H. H. : *Tribes and Castes of Bengal*, Vol. I, p. 7.

4. (i) Rāmalilājī : *Mahājanavamī-muktāvalī*, pp. 132-136.

(ii) Jain, P. D. : *Vijātīy Vivāha Mimāmaś*, pp. 22-25.

(iii) Jain, K. P. : *Saṅkṣipta Jaina Itihāsa*, Vol. II, Part II, p. 82.

(iv) Crooke, W. T. C. N. W. P., Vol. I, pp. 14-16.

(v) *Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara*, Vol. I, No. 4, pp. 127-128.

believed that Agaravālas are the descendants of King Agra Sena of Champāvati in North India. He had 18 sons who were married to 18 daughters of a Nāga (i.e. Scythian) King. When Agra Sena died his 18 sons established a town Agrohā in the Punjab and they were called Agravālas from that time after their father. After the names of 18 sons, 18 gotras or exogamous sections were formed. For some reason the last gotra is considered as a half gotra and thus there are 17½ gotras among Agaravālas. There are considerable differences in the enumeration of these gotras. Messrs Crooke,¹ Risley,² Sherring,³ P. D. Jain⁴ and Rāmalālaji⁵ give different lists. As the names given by Mr. Risley and Mr. Bhāratendu Hariśchandra, the author of the History of Agaravālas, correspond to each other they are given below and the rest will be found in Appendix IX: (1) Garga, (2) Goila, (3) Gāvāla, (4) Batsila, (5) Kāsila, (6) Simghala, (7) Maṅgala, (8) Bhaddala, (9) Tingala, (10) Airāpa, (11) Tairāpa, (12) Thiṅgala, (13) Tittala, (14) Mittala, (15) Tundala, (16) Tāyala, (17) Gobhila, (17½) Goina.

Agaravālas again have the divisions of Dasā and Visā, the 'tens' and the 'twenties' like other Baniyā castes. One account of their origin is that when the daughters of Nāga king married the sons of King Agra Sena, they each brought a hand maid with them and their descendants are the Dasās.⁶ A third division has now come into existence in the Central Provinces, known as the 'Pāñchā' or 'Fives'; these are apparently of still more doubtful origin than the Dasās.⁷ All these sections do not inter-dine or inter-marry. But if a man of the Visā and Dasā cannot obtain a wife from his own group he will sometimes marry in a lower group.

1. Crooke, W.: T. C. N. W. P., Vol. I, p. 16.

2. Risley, H.: Tribes & Castes of Bengal, Vol. I, p. 5.

3. Sherring, M. A.: Hindu Tribes & Castes, Vol. I, pp. 286-287.

4. Jain P. D.: Vijātiya Vivāha Mimānsā, pp. 22-25.

5. Rāmalālaji: Mahājana-vamśa-muktāvalī, p. 137.

6. Crooke, W.: T. C. N. W. P., Vol. I, pp. 14-28.

7. Russell, R. V.: T. C. C. P., Vol. II, pp. 136-39.

Agaravālas are considered to be converted to Jainism by Sri Lohāchāryaji between 27 and 77 years of Vikram Era. They were originally Kshatriyas but after taking to commercial activities they are regarded as Vaiśyas. They are one of the most respectable and enterprising of mercantile tribes. They are bankers, money-lenders and land-holders. The greatness of Agrohā, their original settlement, is commemorated in the legend told by Dr. Buchanan that when any firm failed in the city, each of the others contributed a brick and five rupees which formed a stock sufficient for the merchant to recommence trade with advantage.¹ Two of Akbar's famous ministers are said to have been Agaravālas, viz., Todara Malla, who first introduced an assessment of land revenue based on the measurement and survey of land, and Madhusāha, who introduced 'Madhusāhi' pice.²

(ii) *Osavāla :*

Osavāla is one of the well-known castes of Jainas. Osavālas are concentrated in Rajputana States, Malwa, Gujaratha and Kutch. Being adventurous they will be found in every important city of India. There are Osavālas among the Hindus also, but Osavālas are mostly Jainas and that too Śvetāmbara Jainas. Even though marriages between the Jaina and Hindu Osavālas are allowed by custom, they are not popular, and marriages are generally contracted among Jaina Osavālas only.

The name Osavāla is derived from the town of Osiyā or Osiyānagara in Mārwar. According to one traditional legend³ of their origin the Rājā of Osiyānagara had no son and obtained one through the promise of a Jaina ascetic. The people then drove the ascetic from the town, feeling that the Rājā would become a Jaina; but Osadevi, the guardian goddess of the place, told the ascetic, Sri Ratnaprabha Sūri, to convert the Rājā by a miracle. So she

1. (i) Crooke, W. : T. C. N. W. P., Vol. I, p. 26.

(ii) Jain, B. L. : Agravāla Itihāsa, p. 21.

2. Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara ; Vol. I, p. 128.

3. (i) Jīanasundarajī : Jaina Jāti Mahodaye, Chapter IV. Appx. I.

(ii) Crooke, W. : T. C. N. W. P., Vol. IV, pp. 97-98.

(iii) Śripalinchandrajī : Jaina Sampradāya Śikshā, pp. 607-620.

took a small hank (puni) of cotton and passed it along the back of the saint, when it immediately became a snake and bit Jayachanda, the son of the Rājā, in the toe, while he was asleep beside his wife. Every means was tried to save his life, but he died. As his corpse was about to be burnt, the ascetic sent one of his disciples and stopped the cremation. Then the Rājā came with the body of his son and stood with hands clasped before the saint. He ordered that it was to be taken back to the place where the prince had been bitten, and that the princess was to lie down beside it as before. At night the snake returned and licked the bite, when the prince was restored to life. Then the Rājā, with all his court and people, adopted the Jaina religion and those who were thus converted were known as Osavālas. Another version of the story¹ of Osavālas' origin is that the Śrimāla King Desala allowed none but millionaires to live inside his city walls. One of the lucky citizens, a Śrimāli Baniyā named Ruada, had a brother named Sāada, whose fortune did not come upto the Chief's standard of wealth. Sāada asked his brother to help him to make up the required million; but as he met with no encouragement he and Jayachanda, a discontented son of the king of Śrimāla, and many Śrimālis, Rajputs and others left Śrimāla and settling in the town of Mandovada, called it Osa or the frontier. Among the settlers were Śrimāli Baniyas, Bhātti, Chohāna, Gheloṭa, Goda, Gohila, Paramāra, Rāthoda and Thara Rajputs, all devout worshippers of Śiva. Ratna Sūri, a Jaina ascetic, by working miracles, converted Jayachanda, their king, and all the settlers and calling them Osavālas, formed them into one caste. The first story is believed to have happened in the 400th year before Vikrama Era and the second in 222 of Vikrama Era. But recent researches in the origin of Osavālas do not accept these dates and now it is stated and generally accepted that the Osavāla caste was formed probably between 500 to 1000 years of Vikrama Era.²

According to Col. James Tod Osavālas are all of pure Rajput

1. (i) B. G. G., Vol. IX, Part I, p. 97.

(ii) Barodia, U. D.: History and Literature of Jainism, p. 50.

2. History of Osavālas: Pp. 18-19.

descent, of no single tribe, but chiefly Pañvāras, Soñamkīs and Bhātas.¹ From the legends mentioned above and the fact that their head-quarters are in Rajaputana, it may safely be asserted that the Osavālas are of Rajput origin.² When these Rajputs were converted they were divided into 18 gotras or exogamous sections, viz. 1. Tātahāda, 2. Bañapā, 3. Karpāta, 4. Balaharā, 5. Morāksha, 6. Kūlahāta, 7. Birahāta, 8. Śrīśrimāla, 9. Śreshthī, 10. Suchintī, 11. Āichapāṅga (or Ādityanāma), 12. Bhūri (or Bhatevarā), 13. Bhādra, 14. Chīchāta, 15. Kumbhāta, 16. Dīndū, 17. Kanoja, 18. Laghu-Śreshthī. Later on due to further additions made to Osavālas by conversion, the original 18 gotras were split up into 498 sub-gotras and afterwards the number was still more expanded. It is believed that there are 1444 gotras or sub-gotras among Osavālas. From the lists of available gotra names we can find certain principles on which they were formed. Some gotras were named after birds and animals (viz. Siyāla, Kāga, Garuda, Hīraṇa, Bakarā, etc.), some after places of residence (viz. Rāmapuriyā, Chitaudā, Bhopalā, Pāṭanī, etc.), some after professions (viz. Bhaṇḍārī, Koṭhārī, Khajāñchī, Kanuṅgā, Daftari, etc.) and some after occupations (viz. Ghiyā, Teliyā, Keśariyā, Gāndhī, Sarāfa, etc.).³ It seems that some gotras are prevalent in certain localities and some in other localities. The names of 84 gotras found among Osavālas of the U. P. are given by Crooke, W.⁴

Like other Baniyā castes Osavālas are divided into Visā and Dasā. The common story⁵ of the origin of the division is that an Osavāla widow, contrary to the rule against widow marriages, lived with a Jaina priest and had two sons by him. The sons grew rich and hit upon the following plan for forcing their caste-

1. Tod. Col. J. : Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II. p. 210.

2. Russel, R. V. : T. C. C. P., Vol. II, p. 155.

3. (i) Jñānasundarajī : Jaina Jāti Mahodaya, Chapter IV, Appendix I, pp. 35, 54–60.

(ii) Rāmalālaji : Mahājina-vamīa-muktāvalī. pp. 140–146.

(iii) Śripālachandrajī : Jaina Sampradāya Śikshā, pp. 620 and 656–661.

(iv) History of Osavālas, p. 24.

4. Crooke, W. : T. C. N. W. P., Vol. IV, p. 99.

5. B. G. G., Vol. 16, p. 45.

fellows to overlook their illegitimate descent. At the town of Raya, they made grand preparations for a dinner and asked the Osavālas, who, not knowing that the hosts were of illegitimate birth, attended the party in large numbers. A widow told her son the history of the men who were giving the feast. And he went before the assembled Osavālas and begged of them to allow his mother to remarry. They asked why he had come there to make his request and he told them the story of the birth of the two brothers who had invited them to dinner. On hearing that their hosts were outcasts there was a sudden confusion among the guests. Those who had touched the food became the followers of the two brothers and came to be called Dasās, while those who had not touched the food and remained pure were called Visās. The use of Visā and Dasā as names of caste sub-divisions is common. The terms seem to mean Visā or twenty in the score, i. e., pure blood, and Dasā, or ten in the score, i. e., half-caste.

Along with Visā and Dasā there are other divisions like Pāñchā, Adhaiyā, etc. according to, it appears, the purity of their lineage and there are different restrictions in different places regarding inter-marriage and inter-dining between these divisions. Generally speaking these are hypergamous divisions. The Pāñchā sub-caste permits the remarriage of widows and those degraded from Pāñchā are taken into Adhaiyā. Moreover difference of religion or sect is no bar to marriage among Osavālas, as, for example, a Digambarī Osavāla can marry a Śvetāmbarī girl, or a Jaina Osavāla boy can marry a Vaishpava Osavāla girl or vice versa. Further Osavālas can marry with other good Baniyā sub-castes so long as both the parties are Jainas. Thus in Bombay, Dasā Osavālas intermarry with the Dasā groups of Śrimālī and Poravāda Baniyās.¹

Osavāla is the most prominent trading caste in Rajputana. As they are derived from the Rajput stock, there were several generals of repute among Osavālas up to the advent of the British in India.² They have also frequently held high offices, such as Divāpa or Minister and Pay-master in Rajputana states.³ In

1. B. G., Vol. XVI, p. 46.

2. Jain, K. P.: Saṅkshipta Jaina Itihāsa, Vol. II, Pt. II, p. 84.

3. Bhattacharya, J. N.: Hindu Castes & Sects, p. 207.

Jodhpur, which is their strong-hold, there were nearly 100 ministers in the last 450 years. By their statesmanship and valour they helped various kingdoms loyally and faithfully in the days of prosperity as well as in the times of decline. The history of Jodhpur, Bikaner, Udaipur, Indore, Kishengarh States, among others, stands as testimony for their unswerving devotion to public duty.¹ The following discription of an Osavāla Jaina by Col. Tod deserves reproduction. "Ram Singh Mehta (an Osavāla Jaina Mahājana) was a fine specimen of the non-militant class of these countries, and although he had seldom passed the boundaries of Mevar, no country could produce a better specimen of a courteous gentleman; his figure tall, deportment easy, features regular and handsome, complexion fair with a fine slightly curbed beard and mustachios jet back..... He is of the Jaina faith and of the tribe of Osi, which now reckons 1,00,000 families all of Rajput origin, and descended from the Agnikula stock."²

(iii) *Srimālī*:-

Srimālī is a well-known caste of Jaina Baniyās. *Srimālis* are concentrated in Gujaratha, Kathiavar and Rajputana. They are found among Hindus also but they are mostly Jainas and especially Śvetāmbara Jainas. According to the Śvetāmbara Jaina Directory *Srimālis* claim the largest number of members among the castes following the Śvetāmbara sect.

The name *Srimālī* is derived from *Srimāla* (modern Bhinmāla) a place situated in Rajputana on the border line of Marwar. Two accounts are told about the origin of this caste. According to one, about 400 years before Vikrama Era Āchārya Svayamprabha Sūri converted a large number of the Hindu families to Jainism at *Srimāla*. Other Āchāryas thereafter converted more families and grouped them with the former converts. This process went on for

1. (i) History of Osavālas, Appendix, p. 2 and pp. 39-129 for the part played by Osavālas in the Political and Military field.

(ii) For a short description of the splendid role played by the Jainas - especially Osavālas - in the history of the Rajputana vide Tank, U. S. : Jaina Historical Studies.

2. Col. Tod ; op. cit., Vol. II, p. 765.

a considerable time and the persons so converted were formed into the Srimala caste.¹ According to another mythical account, at Srimala Lord Vishnu created, to please Lakshmi, 90,000 Baniyās to maintain 45,000 Brahmins. The Baniyās were created out of her garland, according to one account, and out of his thigh according to another.² Of the two stories the first seems to be more plausible. Later on 135 gotras or exogamous sections were formed the names of which are given in Appendix IX.³

The Srimalis are divided into Visas, Dasas and Ladavas. About the origin of the Visas and Dasas three stories are told. According to one, those Srimalis who had first settled after wandering through four quarters (Vidisha) were called Visas and those who settled after wandering the four directions (Disa) were called Dasas.⁴ According to another story, those Srimalis who sprang from the right side of Mahalakshmi's garland were called Visas and those from the left Dasas. According to a third, the Visas or twenties came to be so called because they are twice as high as Dasas or tens. The Ladva Srimalis were so called because they lived in the old Laṭa Desa or South Gujaratha. Visas Srimalis are mainly Jainas and Dasas Srimalis Vaishnavas. Among the Visa Srimalis there are seven minor divisions, viz., (i) Ahamadabadi, (ii) Kathariyās, (iii) Pālhanapuriyās, (iv) Pātanis, (v) Sorathiyyās, (vi) Talabadas and (vii) Tharadiyās; and among the Dasas Srimalis there are three, viz., (i) Horasatha, (ii) Chapāpahuā and (iii) Idadiyā. The Ladva Srimalis have no minor divisions. The three main divisions with their sub-divisions eat together but do not inter-marry. In some parts Dasas Srimali Jainas marry with Dasas Srimali Vaishnavas or with Dasas Osavala and Dasas Poravada Jainas.⁵

Because of their great number among Svetarnibaras, Srimalis occupy a prominent position. They are great merchant princes

1. Jñānasundarajī : Jaina Jati Mahodaya, Chapter IV. Appendix II, pp. 92-100.

2. Doshi, C. M. : Dasas Srimali Jaina Baniyās of Kathiawar, pp. 41-42.

3. Rāmalālaji : Mahājana-varṇa-muktāvali, pp. 109-110.

4. Doshi, C. M. : Dasas Srimali Jaina Baniyās of Kathiawar, p. 54.

5. B. G., Vol. IX, Part I, pp. 97-98.

and take a keen interest in social activities.

(iv) *Poravāda*:-

Poravāda is one of the important castes of Baniyā Jainas. Poravādas are found mainly in Marvar, Gujarātha, Kathiawar and Cutch. There are Poravādas among the Hindus and the relations between the Hindu Poravādas (known as Meśri Poravādas) and the Jaina Poravādas (known as Śrāvaka Poravādas) are cordial. Among the Jainas they are found in both the sects, viz., Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras but they are mostly Śvetāmbaras.

As regards their origin it is stated¹ that they were formerly people of Gujara tribe who came into India along with King Kanishka and settled in Eastern Rajputana. Under the orders of King Kanishka they migrated in large numbers for the protection of Śrimāla town in Marwar and stayed in the eastern part of Śrimāla town. As they were living on the eastern side of the town they were named as Prāgvāta² or Poravāda. Sometimes they are wrongly called as Poravala like Osavāla, Agaravāla, Khanḍelavāla, etc. It is also contended that the word Poravāda is derived from 'Prāgvatapura' a place on the banks of the Ganges³ or from Parevā (Padmāvatī Nagarā) town.⁴ The Poravādas are divided into 24 gotras or exogamous sections, viz., 1. Chaudhari, 2. Kalā, 3. Dhanaghāda, 4. Ratanāvata, 5. Dhanyautyā, 6. Majāvaryā, 7. Davakarā, 8. Bhādalyā, 9. Sethyā, 10. Kāmalyā, 11. Údhīryā, 12. Bañkhanḍa, 13. Bhūta, 14. Pharakyā, 15. Labheparyā, 16. Mañḍāvaryā, 17. Muniyāñi, 18. Ghāñtyā, 19. Galiyā, 20. Bhesautā, 21. Naveparyā, 22. Dānagadī, 23. Mahatā, 24. Kharaḍyā.⁵

In the beginning there were three sections among Poravādas, viz., (i) Pure Poravādas, (ii) Sorāthiyā Poravādas and (iii)

1. Dalal, C. m.; *Poravāda Vaṇikone Itihāsa*, pp. 7-11.

2. It appears that the word Prāgvāta was commonly used to denote the caste from 13th to 15th century of Vikrama Era, Vide Jinavijaya Muni: *Jaina-Pustaka-Praśasti-Saṅgraha*, pp. 24, 43, 44, 46, 47, 70, 114 and 141.

3. Jñānasundarajīt: op. cit., Chapt. IV, Appendix II.

4. Rāmalālājī: op. cit; p. 111.

5. Śripālachandarajī: op. cit., p. 608.

Kapola Poravādas.¹ Later on the Poravādas were divided into Visā, Dasā and Pāñchā Poravādas according to the degree of respectability. The Visā and Dasā divisions were constituted from the days of Vastupāla and Tejapāla in the 13th century A. D. and the same story like that of division of Osavālas is told. Vastupāla and Tejapāla were sons of a Poravāda father who had married a young Srimālī widow. Those who dined with Vastupāla and Tejapāla were known as Dasā and those who refused to dine with them as Visā.² Visā Poravādas are mainly Jainas and Dasā Poravādas mainly Vaishpavas. Visā and Dasā Poravādas eat together but do not intermarry. Dasā Poravādas have begun to marry with Dasā Srimālis and Dasā Osavālas but the old practice of inter-dining and inter-marriage between Jaina and Vaishpava Poravādas has of late fallen into disuse.³ Along with religious awakening this might possibly be due to the fact that while Vaishpava Poravādas live mainly in Gujaratha, Jaina Poravādas are in Cutch, Kathiawar, Marwar and Gujaratha. Further, the Poravādas are sub-divided according to their places of residence, e. g., in Gujaratha they are known as Suratī, Ahamadābādī, Bharuchi, Kapadavañjī, etc. and in Kathiawar as Bhāvanagarī, Jāmanagarī, Maṅgrolī, Porabandari, etc. and there are hardly any relations between them. Practically all these divisions are found in Bombay City but there also they live as separate groups. Widow remarriage is not practised at present but it seems that it was allowed in the past, for Asarāja married Kumāradevī, a young widow, from whom he had two sons, viz., Vastupāla and Tejapāla. Poravādas claim to have produced very capable persons most prominent among them are Vimala Śāha and Vastupāla, and Tejapāla, the well-known ministers of King Vīra Dhavala in the 13th century A. D.

(v) *Khandelavāla* :—

Khandelavāla is another important caste of the Jainas. Kha-

1. Jñānasundarajīt: op. cit., Chapt. IV, Appendix II.

2. Rāmalālaji: op. cit., p. 164.

For a full story vide Doshi, C. M.: op. cit., pp. 56-62.

3. B. G., Vol. IX, Part I, pp. 96-97.

ḍelavālas are found among the Hindus also but they are mostly Jainas. They are all Digambara Jainas and it is peculiar that practically there are no Svetāmbaras among Khapḍelavālas. They are spread in Rajputana, Malwa, Bombay, United Provinces, Central Provinces and Bihar but more than three-fourth are concentrated in Rajputana and Malwa.

Khapḍelavālas take their name from Khaṇḍelā, a capital town in Jaipur territory, ruled by king Khaṇḍelagira of Chavhāṇa dynasty. There were 84 towns under the sovereignty of Khaṇḍelā and they were governed by Rajputs of various dynasties like Suryavamīśa, Somavarīśa, Hemavarīśa, etc. In the year 1 of Vikrama Era cholera broke out in a virulent form and with a view to subside it the King, under the influence of Brahmins, performed human sacrifice in which a Jaina ascetic was sacrificed. The epidemic, instead of lessening, grew in intensity. At that time a Jaina ascetic by name Jinasena Āchārya was on his tour in that province and the King enquired from him the reason of epidemic. The ascetic replied that it was due to sacrificing a Jaina ascetic and advised him to accept Jainism. Accordingly the King and the inhabitants of all 84 places embraced Jainism. Jinasena Āchārya formed a caste of them, named it as Khaṇḍelavāla after the capital town Khaṇḍelā and created 84 gotras out of 84 towns. A list of these gotras, towns, dynasties and their family deities will be found in Appendix XI.¹ According to another account there were four brothers who were soldiers. One day they went out hunting and killed a favourite deer belonging to a hermit. He was about to destroy them by curse, when they promised to abandon soldiering and hunting. From them the present Khapḍelavālas are descended.²

From the above account it appears that Khaṇḍelavālas were originally Kshatriyas but later on became Vaiśyas by taking to commercial activities. They form an important section of

1. (i) Śripālachandrajī : Op. cit., pp. 675-680.

(ii) Rāmalālājī : Op. cit., pp. 118-121.

(iii) Jain, P. D. : Op. cit., pp. 12-17.

(iv) Jain, K. P. : Op. cit., p. 83.

2. Crooke, W. : op. cit., Vol. III, p. 225.

Digambara Jainas. It is interesting to note that like other Baniyā castes they are not divided into Visā and Dasā sections. They are big bankers, commercial magnates and land-holders.

(vi) *Paravāra*:

Paravāra is one of the well-known castes among the Jainas. Paravāras are found among the Hindus also but they are mostly Jainas. They are mainly Digambara Jainas and practically there are no Śvetāmbara Paravāras. They are spread over a wide area, viz., the Central Provinces, United Provinces, Rajputana, Malwa, Bihar and Bombay but they are concentrated in the Central Provinces where more than half of their population resides. Even in the Central Provinces Paravāras are found almost entirely in Saugar, Damoha and Jubbalpore Districts.

The origin of the Paravāras and of their name is not known, but there is some reason to suppose that they are from Rajputana. It seems likely that the Paravāras may be identical with Poravādas in which case they belong to Rajputana.¹

Among the Paravāras Charanāgare or Samaiyā form a separate sectarian Jaina group. The Charanāgares reside principally in the Damoh and Chhindawara Districts of the Central Provinces. Charanāgare is one of the six castes following Tāraṇapatha or Samaiyā-patha, a sub-sect of Digambaras. Charanāgares were formerly giving their daughters in marriage to Paravāras but this practice is said to have stopped. Like other Baniyā sub-castes Charanāgares are divided into Visā and Dasā. Inter-marriage between the two sections occasionally occurs and the Dasā will take food from the Visā section, but the latter will not reciprocate except at caste feasts.²

The Paravāras themselves are divided into two endogamous sections, viz., Atha Sake Paravāras and Chau Sake Paravāras. The former will not permit the marriage of persons related more nearly than eight degrees, while the latter permit it after four degrees. The Atha Sake have the higher position and if one of them marries a Chau Sake he is degraded to that group. Besides

1. Russel, R. V. : op cit., Vol. II, p. 157.

2. Russel, R. V. : op. cit., Vol. II, pp. 142-43.

this the Paravāras have an inferior division called Binaikiyā, which consists of the offspring of irregular unions and of widows who have remarried. Persons who have committed a caste-offence and cannot pay the fine imposed on them for it also are relegated to this sub-caste of Paravāras. There is a village by name Binaikā in the Saugor District but it is not known whether Binaikiyās are called after that place. What stigma is attached to Dasās in other castes, the same is implied by the name Binaikiyā. To use an honourable word this sub-caste is also known as Laharisena or Laghuśreṇi. The Binaikiyās themselves are distributed into four groups of varying degrees of respectability of which two are well-known, viz., Purāne Binaikiyās and Naye Binaikiyās. There are nearly 250 families in Purāne Binaikiyās and it cannot be said when they were degraded from Paravāras and had to form this sub-caste. Unlike Purāne Binaikiyās, the Naye Binaikiyās have more than 2000 families and every year its number increases by absorbing degraded people not only from Chau Sake Paravāras and Purāne Binaikiyās but also from castes like Sunāvāra, Golāpūraba, etc. In this way Naye Binaikiyās are rapidly increasing in strength and along with it are gaining social estimation. Now they are not specifically looked down upon. Formerly they were not allowed to enter the temples but of late they have constructed their own temples. If this process continues, it can be hoped that Binaikiyās will be assimilated with Paravāras in not too distant a future. On the contrary, Paravāras will have to request the Binaikiyās to enter in their fold because in view of their increasing strength and absence of former social stigma the Binaikiyās are recently asserting that they keep with the Paravāras relations only of *Pakkī* and not of *Kāchhlī*.¹

(vii) *Huṁbada or Hummada:*

Huṁbadas are found both in the Jainas and the Hindus but they are mostly Jainas. There are Digambara as well as Śvetāmbara Jaina Hummadas but they are principally Digambaras. They are spread only in Rajputana, Malwa, Gujaratha and some districts of the Deccan.

¹ I. J. H., Vol. VII. pp. 26-28.

As regards their origin it is stated that when the incessant quarrels between Bhūpatisirīha and Bhavānisirīha, the two princes of Pātāpa, were set at right by a famous Jaina ascetic Mānatuṅga Āchārya, Bhūpatisimha was pleased with the Āchārya and waiving his claim over the throne became his devotee. He once said to his guru "*Hūn Bāda Hūn*" (हून बादा हून) and from that time his 'guru' named his caste as Humbaḍa. Humbaḍas are divided into the following 18 exogamous gotras:— 1. Kheraja, 2. Kamaleśvara, 3. Kākadeśvara, 4. Utreśvara, 5. Mātreśvara, 6. Bhimeśvara, 7. Bhadreśvara, 8. Viśveśvara, 9. Saṅkheśvara, 10. Gaṅgeśvara, 11. Armeśvara, 12. Māmaneśvara, 13. Someśvara, 14. Rajiyāṇa, 15. Laliteśvara, 16. Rñgeśvara, 17. Kaśyapeśvara, 18. Budheśvara.¹ According to another account they are said to take their name from Humāḍa, the guru or spiritual head who established the caste. They are also called Vāgadiya, from the Vāgada or wild country including Dungarpur, Partapgarh and Sagvad in Rajaputana where considerable members are still settled.²

The Humbaḍas, like other Baniyā castes, are divided into Visā and Dasā. The sub-caste Dasā Hummaḍa was formed, like that of Binaikiyās, by people who were degraded or outcasted from the Hummaḍa caste. But steadily the strength of Dasā Hummaḍas increased and now they are ten times more than Visā Hummaḍas. The Dasās amassed wealth, built temples, rose in social estimation; and now in consequence there is very little difference between the Visā and Dasā Hummaḍas. Inter-dining is allowed and recently instances of inter-marriage between the two sections have occurred. This is a fine example of how a degraded section regains its social position.

6. JAINA CASTES IN THE DECCAN

The important Jaina castes described above are mainly found in the Northern India, including Gujaratha, Kathiawar and upper districts of the Central Provinces. These castes nowadays

1. Rāmalālji : op. cit., pp., 112-114.

2. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. III, p. 442.

are found in the Deccan and South India, but they have migrated there from the North for commercial purposes. The Jaina castes in the Deccan differ in many respects from those in the North. In the first place, there are only four main castes in the Deccan, viz., Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama and Bogāra, and three small castes, viz., Upādhyāya,¹ Kāmbhoja² and Harada.³ In the North we find a large number of big and small castes. The major castes have been already described and among the small castes a mention may be made of Golāpūraba,⁴ Golālāre,⁵ Asāthi,⁶ Ajudhyābāsi,⁷ Nemā,⁸ Narasipurā,⁹ Jaisavāla,¹⁰ Lohiya,¹¹ Pallivāla,¹² etc. Secondly, many castes in the North have their counterparts in other communities. Thus Agaravālas, Osavālas, Śrimālis, etc. are found among the Hindus also. But in the Deccan the names of the Jaina castes are not found in other communities. There are no Saitavālas, Chaturthas or Pañchamas among the Hindus. Thirdly, while in the North in some Jaina castes Digambara and Śvetāmbara divisions are found, in the Deccan there are no such divisions as the members of the Jaina castes in the Deccan belong to the Digambara sect only. We find that Osavālas, Śrimālis, Poravādas, etc. are in Digambaras as well as in Śvetāmbaras but there are no Saitavālas, Chaturthas, or Pañchamas in Śvetāmbaras. Fourthly, we have seen that a large number of Northern castes have been divided into Visās and Dasās and sometimes further into Pāñchās.

1. B.G., Vol. XXII, p. 117.

2. Hassan : T.C.N.D., Vol. I, pp. 265-267.

3. Hassan : T.C.N.D., Vol. I, pp. 259-263.

4. Russell, R.V. : T.C.C.P., Vol. II, pp. 147-148.

5. Crooke, W. : T.C.N.W.P., Vol. II, p. 422.

6. Russell, R.V. : T.C.C.P., Vol. II, p. 142.

7. Russell, R.V. : T.C.C.P., Vol. II, pp. 140-141.

8. (i) Russell, R.V. : T.C.C.P., Vol. II, pp. 154-155.

(ii) Enthoven, R.E. : T.C.B., Vol. III, p. 429.

9. B.G., Vol. IX, Part I, p. 73.

10. Crooke, W. : T.C.N.W.P., Vol. III, pp. 12-13.

11. Crooke, W. : T.C.N.W.P., Vol. III, p. 386.

12. Crooke, W. : T.C.N.W.P., Vol. IV, pp. 109-110.

and *Adhaiyās*, but it will be noticed that in the Deccan castes there are no such divisions. It will be remembered that the *Visa* and *Dasā* divisions arose mainly on the point of widow remarriage; and those who practised widow remarriage were relegated to the *Dasā* section. No necessity of dividing the castes on the basis of allowing or not of widow re-marriage was felt in the Deccan.¹ This is the main point of difference between the Northern and the Deccan Jaina castes. Fifthly, it can be mentioned that while Jainas in the North are rich and follow commercial activities on a big scale, those in the Deccan are comparatively poor and are mostly agriculturists and petty traders. Sixthly, Jaina castes in the Deccan have their own Jaina priests, and they do not employ the Hindu Brahmins for ceremonial purposes as is done by many Jaina castes in the North.² Seventhly, each of the four castes in the Deccan has its own *Bhāttāraka* or religious head or *Svāmī* who has final power to fine or excommunicate any caste-member.³ The general information about the important Jaina castes in the Deccan is given below.

(i) *Śetavāla* or *Saitavāla* :

Śetavālas are spread over a wide area, viz., Southern Districts of the Central Provinces, Berar, Hyderabad State and Bombay Presidency. As they speak Marāṭhi, they are concentrated in the Marāṭhi speaking Districts of the above Provinces.

Another name for Śetavāla is *Svahitavāla* or *Sahitavāla*.⁴ It is said that the *Svahitavālas* are divided into two sub-castes, viz., (i) *Svahitavāla* and (ii) Śetavāla, based on the difference of occupation. The latter weave bodice cloth, and are cloth merchants, shop-keepers and money-lenders. The former are

1. See (i) *Pragati āpi Jinavijaya*, dated the 14-12-1931
 (ii) *Jain Jagat*, Vol. VIII, No. 5, p. 27.

2. B.G., Vol. XXII, p. 117.

3. (i) B.G., Vol. XXI, p. 103.
 (ii) B.G., Vol. XXIV, p. 146.

4. Manuscript No. 1149 at Balātkāragaṇa Temple at Kāraṇjā (Berar).

tailors.¹ These distinctions are not observed now and all are termed as Śetavālas.

As regards their origin many accounts are told. According to one account the Śetavālas are considered as the descendants of the Kshatriyas who came to the Deccan for the protection of the Jaina sages and places of pilgrimage from fiercer sort of people, whose leaders were called Bhairavas. The places where the sages resided and where religion was specially practised were called Kshetras or holy places. The people who had been entrusted with the sacred duty of protecting religion and religious places came to be called Kshetrapālas or protectors of holy places. The Prākrit form of the Sanskrit word Kshetrapāla is Chhettavāla from which the Marāṭhi word Śetavāla is derived.² From this it appears that the Śetavālas came from the North and settled in the Deccan. Mr. Russel also mentions that Saitavāla is one of the castes which came into the Central Provinces from Rajputana.³ As regards Śetavālas in the Bombay Province it is stated that they seem to have come from Marwar in search of work, though when they came is not known. They have many rustic customs and ways, but signs remain which support their claim to have a strain of Kshatriya blood.⁴ According to another account, the Śetavālas appear to have been originally a body of hundred families excommunicated for some unknown reason; and now forming a caste by themselves. They were formerly known as Śatavālas or the hundred families.⁵ This seems to be wrong for obvious reasons. According to the third, the word Śetavāla is derived from a Marāṭhi word 'Śeta' i. e., a farm, and Śetavālas are those who subsist on farming.

There are supposed to be many gotras among Śetavālas but

1. Hassan : T.C.N.D., Vol. I, p. 261.

2. (i) L. A. Phaltane: 'A Light on Ancient Jaina History'. J. G., Vol. 28, p. 189.

(ii) Pragati āṇī Jinavijaya, Vol. 46, No. 3.

3. Russell, R. V. ; T. C. C. P., Vol. II, p. 119.

4. B. G., Vol. XVII, p. 99.

5. B. G., Vol. XXII, p. 117.

the names of 44 gotras only are available, viz., Bāhu; Abhayakumāra; Sahasrabāhu; Maghava; Vijayamitra; Mahābāhu; Bhūvallabha; Hariketu; Vijaya; Dhanapati, Simharatha; Vidyāśakti; Supratishtha; Meghavāhana; Pṛthvīpāla; Vajradanta; Ratnāyudha; Anantavijaya; Dharmā; Prajñāpāla; Yugandhara; Lokapāla; Hariśchandra; Suryaputra; Yaśapāla; Minaketu; Surendra-datta; Puṇḍarika; Dhanaratha; Dhātrivāhana; Susheṇa; Śubhachandra; Purvabāhu; Maṇimālā; Jitaśatru; Vajrāyudha; Satyaśruti; Jayandhara; Narmadā; Vimalavāhana; Surakirti; Vimalakirti; Srishepa and Chakrāyudha.¹ But these gotras are not taken into account for purposes of marriage. Śetavālas regulate their marriages by family surnames and inter-marriages within the same section are avoided.² Widows are allowed to marry and divorce is recognised. Both widows and divorced wives marry by inferior rites, in which the garments of the bridal couple are knotted together and a feast is furnished to the relatives.³ Śetavālas have their own Bhāttāraka or religious head by name Viśalakirti at Lātūr, a place in the Osmanabad District. Minor caste disputes are generally settled by caste Pañchāyatās but graver ones are referred to the Bhāttāraka in which case his decision is final. Formerly some members of this caste were excommunicated and were known as Vādodakara Śetavālas, but they have been recently admitted into the main caste. As compared with other Jaina castes, Śetavālas are financially very poor and as such do not get respect from other castes.

(ii) *Chaturtha :*

According to the All India Digambara Jaina Directory, the Chaturtha caste is the first among the Digambara Jaina castes in respect of its numerical strength. There are nearly 70,000 Chaturthas and unlike other castes, Chaturthas are not spread over a wide area but they are mainly concentrated in the Bombay Karnātaka.

1. Phaltane, L. A.: Śetavāla Jaina Lokāñchi Māhitī, pp. 2-4.

2. B. G., Vol. XVII, p. 99.

3. Hassan : T. C. N. D., Vol. I, p. 263.

It is not known how the word Chaturtha is derived. Many conjectures have been put forward. According to one story, in the Jainas there were formerly four divisions, Brahmins, Kshatriyas, Vaiśyas and Śūdras. The Jaina Kshatriyas have disappeared but the Jaina Brahmins, Vaiśyas and Śūdras remain. Jaina Śūdras are also called Jaina Chaturthas, that is, the fourth estate.¹ According to another, Chaturthas are originally 'Charodas' of the Goanese Native Christians who have three caste divisions.² Thirdly, it is stated that Chaturthas are the same as Śetavālas on the ground that the same Prākrit word Chhettavāla becomes Śetavāla in Marāthī and Chhattaru or Chattaru, i. e., Chaturtha in the Kannada language.³ Fourthly, it is considered that Chaturtha denotes Kshatriyas as the Sanskrit word Kshatriya or Kshātra or Kshatra takes the form of Kshatraru or Chattaru, i. e., Chaturtha, in Kannada.⁴

The Chaturthas are mostly agriculturists and therefore live in villages. This is the only caste among the Jainas which follows agriculture as the main occupation. Except some of the larger land-holders, who keep farm servants, the others, with the help of their women, do all sorts of field work with their own hands. They are the hardest working husbandmen, making use of every advantage of soil and situation. Strict Jainas object to tillage because of the loss of life which it cannot help causing. Yet they do not carry their objection to the length of refusing to have social relations with the Jaina husbandmen.⁵ Widow remarriage is allowed and practised among the poorer families. Marriage is regulated by family surnames. The religious teacher or Bhaṭṭāraka by name Jinasena of Chaturthas has his headquarters at Nāndapi near Kolhapur.⁶

1. B. G., Vol. XXII, p. 317.

2. Eathoven, R. E : T.C.B., Vol. II, p. 83.

3. Phaltane, L.A. : 'Jaina Dharmācī Prāchīna Avasthā.' Pragati āpi Jinavijaya, Vol. 46, No. 3.

4. Kudale B.D. : 'Dakshīṇetīla Chāra Potajāti'; Pargati āpi Jinavijaya', Vol. 45, No. 24.

5. B. G., Vol. XXIV, p. 135.

6. B. G., Vol. XXI, p. 103, mentions the name of place as Kurundavad which is not correct.

(iii) *Pañchama*:

The Pañchama is one of the important castes in the Deccan. In population it stands next to the Chaturtha caste in the Deccan. Pañchamas are spread over the Kannada speaking Districts of Bombay, Mysore, Madras and Hyderabad Dominion but about $\frac{1}{2}$ th of them are concentrated in the Bombay Karnātaka.

Many interpretations are given for the meaning of word Pañchama and the origin of Pañchama caste. It is asserted that the word Pañchama was used by the Vedic Brahmins during the 9th and 15th centuries A. D. to denote the Digambara Jainas in the Deccan as outside the pale of Chāturvarṇa, i. e., four Varṇas. Jainas also accepted this appellation and called themselves as Pañchama. During this time there were no distinctions of castes among Jainas. Later on during the 16th Century castes like Chaturtha, Śetavāla and Bogāra arose from the Pañchamas, and they were mainly created by the then Bhāttārakas with a view to have continuous following for them. And for this purpose restrictions on inter-dining and inter-marriage among the four castes were put on by the Bhāttārakas.¹ According to another account Pañchamas are the fifth or the lowest class of Jainas whom all who marry widows have to join.² It is maintained that with a view to avoid this degrading position Pañchama Jainas joined Vīraśaivism and formed a group of Pañchamasālī Liṅgāyatas, who have a higher position among Liṅgāyatas. Liṅgāyatas belong to two main divisions, laymen and clergy. The clergy who are generally called Jaṅgamas, are divided into two classes, the Viraktas, who are unmarried and the Gurusthalas who are married. The 31 divisions of lay Liṅgāyatas may be arranged under three groups, (i) 4 classes of True or Pure Liṅgāyatas, (ii) 16 classes of Affiliated Liṅgāyatas and (iii) 11 classes of Half Liṅgāyatas. The four classes of Pure or Original Liṅgāyatas are Dhūlapāvadas, Śilavantas, Baṇajigas and Pañchamasālīs. Thus we find that Pañchamasālīs were assigned a place among True

1. Kudale, B. D.: 'Dakshiyetila Chāra Poṣajāti', 'Pragati āpi Jina-vijaya' Vol. 45, Nos. 23 and 24.

2. B. G., Vol. XXII, p. 117.

Lingayatas. Moreover, in this connection it is stated that the resemblance between the Jaina and the Lingayata rules about eating and drinking, about tenderness for life, and about the non-return of the spirits of the dead suggest that many Lingayatas represent converts from Jainism. This view finds support in the fact that the strength of the Lingayatas is in Bapajiga class who were formerly chiefly Jainas, and that the Pañchamas or Pañchamasālis, another leading branch of the Lingayatas, appear to take their name from and to represent the fifth or lowest class of Jainas, a despised community to which all widow-marrying Jainas are degraded. It was natural that Pañchamas should take to a religion that did not hold widow-marriage an offence.¹

The economic condition of Pañchamas is bit better than that of either Śetavālas or Chaturthas. Some Pañchamas are agriculturists no doubt, but many are petty merchants and traders dealing chiefly in jewellery, cotton, cloth and grain. Compared with other Hindu castes in the Deccan, Śetavālas, Chaturthas and Pañchamas lag behind in education, economic position and social uplift in general, and that is why they have been included in the Intermediate Castes by the Bombay Government. As a class they are orderly and law-abiding and seldom appear in criminal courts. For more than a thousand years Jainism was either a State religion or enjoyed a pre-eminent position in the state. During these years Jainas proved their merit in every walk of life.² Even now in spite of political changes many are hereditary village and district officers.³ The Teacher or Guru of Pañchamas is Lakshmisena Svāmi and he lives in Kolhapur.⁴ There are no sub-divisions among Pañchamas and marriages are regulated by family surnames.

(iv) *Bogāra:*

In Kannada language Bogāra means one who deals in brass or copper vessels. In Marathi language the same meaning is

1. B. G., Vol. XXIV, pp. 102-103 and 107.

2. For achievements of Jainas in the South, vide Chapter VII.

3. B. G., Vol. XXIV, p. 135.

4. B. G. Vol. XXI, p. 103.

conveyed by the word Kāsāra. Thus Bogāras are known as Kāsāras in Mahārāshtra. The Kāsāras are found among Hindus also and they are known as Hindu or Tvashtā Kāsāras in contrast to Jaina Kāsāras. Bogāras are spread over Kannada speaking districts of Bombay, Madras, Mysore and Hyderabad State.

Bogāras claim to have originally been Kshatriyas, but were doomed by their patron goddess Kālikā to the low occupation of a Kāsāra. Marriages are governed by exogamous sections of family names which are mostly of the territorial and titular type. A man is prohibited from marrying outside the sub-caste, or inside the exogamous section, to which he belongs. He may marry the daughters of his maternal uncle, paternal aunt or elder sister. He may also marry two sisters. In some cases widows are allowed to marry again, and divorce is permitted on the ground of the wife's unchastity, barrenness or ill-temper. Divorced wives remarry by the same rites as widows.¹

It is an enterprising caste and mostly controls the trade of bangles and brass and copper vessels in the Karnāṭaka. Their Teacher or Guru lives at Mālakheḍa in the Nizam's Dominions.² From the 'Kālikā-purāṇa' written by Devendra Kīrti, the Bogāra Guru of Mālakheḍa, it appears that this caste was not found before the 17th century A. D.³ There seems to be a section of Bogāras known as Tagara-Bogāras in the North Kanara District.⁴

(v) *Upādhyāya:*

The Upādhyāya is a caste of Jaina priests. Such a caste is not found in the North as the Northern Jainas themselves perform religious ceremonies or employ Brahmins for that purpose. The Upādhyāya caste is therefore found only in the Deccan and Southern India.

To every Jaina temple one or more priests or Upādhyāyas

1. Hassan: T. C. N. D., Vol. I, pp. 263-264

2. B. G., Vol. XXI, p. 193.

3. B. D. Kudale: 'Dakshīgetila Chāra Poṭajāti', Pragati Āṇi Jina-vijaya; Vol. 45, No. 24.

4. B. G., XXV, pp. 229-230.

are attached. The priests constitute an hereditary religious class who are expected to know the various religious ceremonies, to serve the temples and to conduct marriages of Jainas according to Jaina ritual. Priests are supported by the Jaina community by allowing them to take the rice and other offerings, cloth and money presents which are made to the gods and goddesses. Priests are usually chosen from among the learned Pañchamas or Chaturthas subject to the recognition of their principal Svāmis or head priests called 'Paṭṭāchārya Svāmis'. A layman by learning the profession can become a priest; and a priest can, if he so desires, give up his profession and become a layman. But marriages between priests and laymen cannot take place.¹ There is no objection for a Jaina priest to eat food from any of the other Jaina caste fellows. But he cannot have inter-marriage relations with them. Jaina priests give their daughters in marriage to no one but priests and do not accept girls from any other caste. When the other Jaina castes in the Deccan allow and practice widow-marriage, it is neither allowed nor practised by Upādhyāyas.²

Besides the temple priests every village which has a considerable number of Jainas has an hereditary village priest called 'Grāmopādhyāya' who conducts their ceremonies and is paid either in cash or in grain. These village priests, who are married and in whose families the office of priest is hereditary, are under a high priest called 'Dharmādhikāri', i. e., religious head, or ascetic by whom they are appointed and who has power to turn out any priest who breaks religious rules or caste customs. The village priest keeps a register of all marriages and thread-girdings in the village and the high priest whose head-quarters are at Nāndāṇī about 18 miles east of Kolhapur and whose authority extends over all Kolhapur

1. Some priests are Chaturtha and majority Pañchama in Karnāṭaka and round about. The Chaturtha priests, at present, can have marriages with other nonpriestly Chaturthas.

2. Bombay Gazetteers' Vol. XXII, p. 117.

" XXIII, p. 281.

" XXIV, pp. 135 and 144.

" XXV, pp. 229-231.

Jainas, makes a yearly circuit for gathering contributions, or sends an agent to collect subscriptions from the persons named in the village priests' lists. The office of high priest is selective. The high priest chooses his successor from among his favourite disciples.¹

It should be remembered that like priestly caste among Hindus no high position is assigned to the Jaina Upādhyāyas, and the latter mix freely with other caste-fellows even taking food at their hands. It has not been enjoined upon laymen to give presents to Upādhyāyas.

7. JAINA CASTES IN THE SOUTH

When we go to the South India we find that there are no indigenous Śvetāmbaras. The Śvetāmbaras living in the South have come from the North and generally Northern Jainas, whether Digambara or Śvetāmbara, do not keep intimate social relations with indigenous Jaina members of the South. The indigenous Jainas of South are all Digambara Jainas. We will now turn to the social divisions existing among Digambara Jainas of Mysore and of Madras.

The social divisions among Jainas of Mysore are practically the same as those of Deccan and Karnātaka with the only exception of Śetavāla caste. But the remaining four castes, viz., Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra and Upādhyāya are arranged in the manner of Hindu Varṇa system. The four divisions of Jainas are stated as follows:—

- (i) Indras or priests, who are Brāhmaṇas (Karnātaka, Drāviḍa or Kaula),
- (ii) Bogāras, who are Kshatriyas and who engage themselves as traders in vessels,
- (iii) Pañchamas, who are Vaiśyas and are of good conduct, observing the moral tenets, and
- (iv) Chaturthas, who are styled Sat-śūdras (good Śūdras) and are mostly cultivators.

These four castes are said to correspond to the four main

1. B. G., Vol. XXIV, p. 136.

castes of the Hindus. The members of first caste call themselves Jaina Brāhmaṇas, study the Jaina scriptures and become 'Archakas', or priests. They are styled Indras. The priesthood is hereditary and co-exists with family-life, that is, Gṛhasthāśrama. The priests live on the offerings made to temple gods and goddesses and income from their teaching. They preside over all auspicious and inauspicious ceremonies. There are astronomers and astrologers among them. They form an intermediate class between the Yatis or ascetics and the Śrāvakas or laymen. Though they may eat with laymen, they do not inter-marry with them. The priests find it difficult to get suitable brides for their sons and they therefore pay a bride-price.¹ There is another important difference between priests and laymen. The former practise the 'makkal-santāna', i. e., the inheritance through the sons and the latter 'aliya santāna', i. e., the inheritance through the nephews.²

To the south of Madras the Jainas have four sub-divisions,³ viz., the ordinary laymen and the three priestly classes. Of the latter, the most numerous are the Archakas. They do worship in the temples. An ordinary layman cannot become an Archaka; it is a class apart. An Archaka can, however, rise to the next higher stage of the priestly classes, and become what is called an Annama or Aṇuvratī, who is allowed to marry but has to live according to certain special rules of conduct. These Annamas can again rise to the highest of the three classes, and become Munis or monks who lead a celibate life apart from the world. There is also a sisterhood of nuns, called 'Āryāṅganais' who are sometimes maidens, and sometimes women who have left their husbands (with their permission) but must in either case take a vow of chastity. The monks and nuns are maintained at the cost of the rest of the community.

The laymen among the Jainas will not inter-marry, though they will dine, with the Archakas and the latter consequently have the greatest trouble in procuring brides for their sons.

1. Iyer, L. K. A.: M. T. C., Vol. III, pp. 402-403.

2. Thurston, E.: T. C. S. I., Vol. II, p. 426.

3. Thurston, E.: T. C. S. I., Vol. II, pp. 428-434.

Otherwise there are no marriage sub-divisions among the community, all Jainas south of Madras freely inter-marry. Widows are not allowed to remarry.

There is a high priest at Sittāmur in the South Arcot District. This high priest, who is called 'Mathādhipati', is elected by representatives from the chief Jaina villages. The high priest has supreme authority over all Jainas south of Madras, but not over those of Mysore or South Kanara with whom the former have no relations. He travels round in a palanquin with a suite of followers to the chief centres,— his expenses being paid by the communities he visits— settles caste disputes and fines and excommunicates the erring. His control over his people is very real.

As regards the three classes of priests it should be remembered that the last two classes, viz., Aṇuvratis and Munis, are open to all Digambara Jainas according to their scriptures irrespective of the fact whether they stay in the North or in the South. When we exclude these two classes, there remain only two divisions, viz., those of priests and laymen, among the Jainas south of Madras. It is worthy to note that there are no sub-divisions among the laymen like those in the Mysore, Deccan or North. In this respect and the fact that they do not allow widow-marriage they differ from the Jainas of the Deccan.

APPENDIX I.

Names of 84 castes in the Jaina Community with places of their origin.

Serial No.	Name of Caste		Place of Origin
1.	Śrīmāla	..	Bhinnamāla.
2.	Śrīśrīmāla	..	Hastināpura.
3.	Agaravāla	..	Agarohā.
4.	Osavāla	..	Osiyā.
5.	Kaṭanera	..	Kaṭanera.
6.	Kapulā	..	Nagrakotā.
7.	Khadāyatā	..	Khapdavā.
8.	Khapdelavāla	..	Khapdelā.

Serial No.	Name of Caste		Place of Origin
9.	Chaturtha	..	Charaṇapura.
10.	Chitauḍā	..	Chitauḍagadha.
11.	Jayalavāla	..	Jāvala.
12.	Jaisavāla	..	Jaisalagadha.
13.	Dhūñsara	..	Dhākalapura.
14.	Dasaurā	..	Dasaura.
15.	Nāgara	..	Nāgarachāla.
16.	Narasinghapurā	..	Narasiṅghapura.
17.	Pallīvāla	..	Pālī.
18.	Paravāra	..	Pārā-nagara.
19.	Pañchama	..	Pañchama-nagara.
20.	Bagheravāla	..	Bagherā.
21.	Badanaurā	..	Badanaura.
22.	Medatavāla	..	Meḍatā.
23.	Lavechū	..	Lāvā-nagara.
24.	Lāḍa	..	Lāñvāgadha.
25.	Harasaurā	..	Harasaura.
26.	Hūmaḍā	..	Sādavāḍā.
27.	Śrikhapda	..	Śrinagara.
28.	Śriguru	..	Ābhūna Daulā.
29.	Śrigaudā	..	Siddhapura.
30.	Ajamerā	..	Ajmera.
31.	Ajaudhiyā	..	Ayodhyā.
32.	Āḍalīyā	..	Āḍaṇapura.
33.	Avakathavāla	..	Āmbera Ābhānagara.
34.	Kaṭhāḍā	..	Khāṭū.
35.	Kakasthana	..	Vālakūḍā.
36.	Kāñkariyā	..	Karauli.
37.	Kharavā	..	Kheravā.
38.	Khemavāla	..	Khemā-nagara.
39.	Gāṅgarāḍā	..	Gāṅgarāḍa
40.	Gāhilavāla	..	Gauhilagadha.
41.	Gaulavāla	..	Gaulagadha.
42.	Gogavāra	..	Gogā.

Serial No.	Name of Caste		Place of Origin
43.	Gīndodiyā	..	Gīndoda Devagadha.
44.	Chakauḍa	..	Rapathambhachakāvā Gaḍa Malhāri.
45.	Chorāṇdiyā	..	Chāvaṇdiyā.
46.	Jālorā	..	Sauvanagadha Jālaura.
47.	Jambūsarā	..	Jambū-nagara.
48.	Tīṇṭauda	..	Tīṇṭauda.
49.	Tāṇṭauriyā	..	Tāṇṭerā-nagara.
50.	Dhavalakaushtī	..	Dhaulapura.
51.	Dhākāda	..	Dhākagadha.
52.	Nārapagaresā	..	Narāpapura.
53.	Nemā	..	Hariśchandrapuri.
54.	Navāñibharā	..	Navasarapura.
55.	Nāgindrā	..	Nāgindra-nagara.
56.	Nāthachallā	..	Sirohi.
57.	Nāchhelā	..	Nādolai.
58.	Nauṭiyā	..	Nausalagadha.
59.	Paukarā	..	Pokarajī.
60.	Pauravāra	..	Pārevā.
61.	Pausarā	..	Pausara-nagara.
62.	Baramākā	..	Brahmapura.
63.	Vidiyādā	..	Vidiyāda.
64.	Baugāra	..	Vilāsapuri.
65.	Bhavanage	..	Bhāvanagara.
66.	Bhūngadavāra	..	Bhūrapura.
67.	Maheśvarī	..	Diḍavāpe.
68.	Māthuriyā	..	Mathurā.
69.	Mauḍa	..	Siddhapura Pāṭana.
70.	Māṇḍaliyā	..	Māṇḍalagadha.
71.	Rajapurā	..	Rājapura.
72.	Rājiyā	..	Rājagadha.
73.	Halada	..	Haladā-nagara.
74.	Hākariyā	..	Hākagadha Nalavara.

Serial No.	Name of Caste		Place of Origin
75.	Sāmbharā	..	Sāmbhara.
76.	Sādauiyā	..	Hīṅgalādagadha.
77.	Sareḍavāla	..	Sādaḍi.
78.	Sauraṭhavāla	..	Girahāra.
79.	Setavāla	..	Sitapura.
80.	Sauhitavāla	..	Sauhita.
81.	Surandrā	..	Surandrapura Avanti.
82.	Saunaiyā	..	Saunagadha.
83.	Sauraṇḍiyā	..	Śivagirāṇa.

APPENDIX II

Names of 84 castes in the Jaina Community
as given by Mr. Jain, P. D.

Serial No.	Name of Caste.	Serial No.	Name of Caste.
1.	Śrimāla.	19.	Pañchama.
2.	Śrīśrimāla.	20.	Bagheravāla.
3.	Agaravāla.	21.	Badanerā.
4.	Osavāla.	22.	Meḍhatavāla.
5.	Kaṭhanerā.	23.	Lamechū.
6.	Kapolā.	24.	Lāda.
7.	Khaḍayatā.	25.	Harasorā.
8.	Khapdelavāla.	26.	Hūmaḍa.
9.	Chaturtha.	27.	Dhūḍhatavāla.
10.	Chitorā.	28.	Pukaravāla.
11.	Jayalavāla.	29.	Magalavāla.
12.	Jaisavāla.	30.	Dosavāla.
13.	Dōsare.	31.	Karavāla.
14.	Dasorā.	32.	Rāyakavāla.
15.	Nāgariyā.	33.	Achitavāla.
16.	Narasimhapurā.	34.	Śrimāli.
17.	Pallivāla.	35.	Nānāvāla.
18.	Paravāra.	36.	Kāralāla.

Serial No.	Name of Caste.	Serial No.	Name of Caste.
37.	Gurūvāla.	61.	Gahapātāyā.
38.	Aṭhasamaya Paravāra.	62.	Khaḍabada.
39.	Mūrivāra.	63.	Nārāyapa.
40.	Padmāvatī-puravāla.	64.	Deḍhū.
41.	Sārathiā Poravāra.	65.	Basākamakomaṭī.
42.	Daśarā Poravāra.	66.	Akanā.
43.	Mali Poravāra	67.	Yavapaḍā.
44.	Jāṅgarā Poravāla.	68.	Jeharānā.
45.	Anadorā.	69.	Māḍalhāḍā
46.	Haradorā.	70.	Ghanorā.
47.	Sohorā.	71.	Kānthada.
48.	Naterā	72.	Gaṅgarāni.
49.	Sandorā.	73.	Bajava.
50.	Jalaharā.	74.	Ghaḍī.
51.	Lambūsarā.	75.	Nivā.
52.	Majhvārā.	76.	Dhāraka.
53.	Sāchorā.	77.	Sahelavā.
54.	Golāpūraba.	78.	Bhataṇāgara
55.	Golālare.	79.	Godha.
56.	Golasinghbāre.	80.	Śrīgoḍha.
57.	Baraiyā.	81.	Kajapuri.
58.	Serahiyā.	82.	Nāgadaha.
59.	Karahiyā.	83.	Ayodhyāpārva.
60.	Karanasiyā.	84.	Deḍhagraha.

APPENDIX III

Names of 84 castes in the Jaina Community
as given by Prof. H. H. Wilson.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
1.	Khaṇdelavāla.	5.	Barihiyā.
2.	Poravāla.	6.	Golāla.
3.	Agaravāla.	7.	Gajapūrvī.
4.	Jaisavāla.	8.	Śrimāla.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
9.	Vañśavāla, or Osavāla.	43.	Dhaktha.
10.	Poravāra.	44.	Vaiśya.
11.	Pallivāla.	45.	Nāgadhāra.
12.	Danderavāla.	46.	Pora.
13.	Himmāragujarāti.	47.	Surendra.
14.	Baramorā.	48.	Kadaya.
15.	Kharava.	49.	Kāhari.
16.	Labechū.	50.	Soniya.
17.	Khapḍoyā.	51.	Sorāthiya.
18.	Kāthanorā.	52.	Rājiya.
19.	Kabaliyā.	53.	Maya.
20.	Kapolā.	54.	Kammeha.
21.	Nadilā.	55.	Bhaṅgela.
22.	Natila.	56.	Gāngarda.
23.	Mothiyā.	57.	Mārakeya.
24.	Tattora.	58.	Moṭavāla.
25.	Bageravāla.	59.	Śvetavāla.
26.	Harasola.	60.	Chakkichapa.
27.	Śriguru.	61.	Khandarya.
28.	Jolura.	62.	Nariśchya.
29.	Gahakhaṇḍuja.	63.	Bimoṅgai.
30.	Choraḍiyā.	64.	Vikriya.
31.	Bhuṅgerivāla.	65.	Vidyavya.
32.	Brahmatā.	66.	Berasāri.
33.	Beduja	67.	Ashtāki.
34.	Bāhariyā.	68.	Ashṭadhāra.
35.	Goguvāla.	69.	Pāvarābhi.
36.	Andāluja.	70.	Dhakkachāla.
37.	Gogayya.	71.	Bogośri.
38.	Mandakya.	72.	Naraya.
39.	Pañchama.	73.	Koraghāriya.
40.	Somavāṁśibogāra.	74.	Bamāriya.
41.	Chaturtha.	75.	Sekasantānya.
42.	Haradāra.	76.	Anāndi.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
77.	Nagara.	81.	Jannorā.
78.	Tattora.	82.	Nemilāra.
79.	Pākhastya.	83.	Gundoriya.
80.	Sachore.	84.	Dhavalijoti.

APPENDIX IV

Names of 84 castes in the Jaina Community
from Gujerātha.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
1.	Śrimāli	24.	Naphāka.
2.	Śriśrimāla.	25.	Narasinghapurā.
3.	Agaravāla.	26.	Nagara.
4.	Aneravāla.	27.	Nāgendrā.
5.	Āḍhavaraji.	28.	Nāghaurā.
6.	Ārchitavāla.	29.	Chītaudā.
7.	Auravāla.	30.	Chitravāla.
8.	Ausavāla.	31.	Jāraulā.
9.	Apādaurā.	32.	Jīrapavāla.
10.	Katheravāla.	33.	Jelavāla.
11.	Kapola.	34.	Jemā.
12.	Karaverā.	35.	Jamhbū.
13.	Kakaliyā.	36.	Jhaliyārā.
14.	Kajauṭivāla.	37.	Thākaravāla.
15.	Kauraṭavāla.	38.	Dīḍū.
16.	Kamvauvāla.	39.	Dīndoriyā.
17.	Khaḍayatā.	40.	Dīshānvāla.
18.	Khātaravāla.	41.	Teraudā.
19.	Khichī.	42.	Tipaurā.
20.	Khaṇḍelavāla.	43.	Dasārā.
21.	Gasaurā.	44.	Doilavāla.
22.	Gejharavāla.	45.	Padamaurā.
23.	Gauyalavāla.	46.	Palevāla.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
47.	Pushkaravāla.	66.	Mihiriyā.
48.	Pañchamavāla.	67.	Mañgaurā.
49.	Bati-varā.	68.	Mapdāhula.
50.	Barūri.	69.	Mautha.
51.	Bāisa.	70.	Māpḍaliyā.
52.	Vāgrivā.	71.	Medaurā.
53.	Vāvaravāla.	72.	Lāda.
54.	Vāmaṇavāla.	73.	Lādiśakā.
55.	Vālamīvāla.	74.	Liṅgāyata.
56.	Vahaurā.	75.	Vāchadā.
57.	Vedanaurā.	76.	Stavi.
58.	Bhāgeravāla.	77.	Suraravāla.
59.	Bhārija.	78.	Sirakerā.
60.	Bhātingaravāla.	79.	Sauni.
61.	Bhēṅgadā.	80.	Soujatavāla.
62.	Mānatavāla.	81.	Sāraviyā.
63.	Medatavāla.	82.	Souharavāla.
64.	Māda.	83.	Sāchaurā.
65.	Mehavādā.	84.	Harasaurā.

APPENDIX V

Names of castes in the Jaina Community
from the Deccan.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
1.	Hūmaḍa.	9.	Gailavāḍā.
2.	Khaṇḍelavāla.	10.	Gaulapuri.
3.	Pouravāla.	11.	Śrimāla.
4.	Agravāla.	12.	Osavāla.
5.	Jesavāla.	13.	Meḍatavāla.
6.	Paravāla.	14.	Pallīvāla.
7.	Vagheravāla.	15.	Gaṅgeravāla.
8.	Bāvariyā.	16.	Khaḍayate.

Serial No.	Name of Caste.	Serial No.	Name of Caste
17.	Lavechū.	51.	Hākariyā.
18.	Vaisa.	52.	Kandoiyā.
19.	Nāthachallā.	53.	Saunaiyā.
20.	Kharavā.	54.	Rājiyā.
21.	Sadauiyā.	55.	Vadelā.
22.	Kaṭanerā.	56.	Maṭiyā.
23.	Kākariyā.	57.	Setavāra.
24.	Kapaulā.	58.	Chakkachapā.
25.	Harasaurā.	59.	Khaṇḍavarata.
26.	Dasaurā.	60.	Narasiyā.
27.	Nāchhelā.	61.	Bhavanageha.
28.	Tāntāre.	62.	Karavastana.
29.	Harada.	63.	Ānande.
30.	Jālaurā.	64.	Nāgaurī.
31.	Śriguru.	65.	Takachāla.
32.	Nauṭiyā.	66.	Saraḍiyā.
33.	Chauraḍiyā.	67.	Kamāiyā.
34.	Bheṅgadavāla.	68.	Pausarā.
35.	Dhākada.	69.	Bhākariyā.
36.	Vaugārā.	70.	Vadvaiyā.
37.	Gaugavāra.	71.	Nemā.
38.	Lāda.	72.	Astaki.
39.	Avakathavāla.	73.	Kāregarayū.
40.	Vidiyādī.	74.	Narayā.
41.	Brahmāka.	75.	Maudamāpḍaliyā.
42.	Sāredavāla.	76.	Janaurā.
43.	Māṇḍaliyā.	77.	Pahāsayā.
44.	Āḍaliyā.	78.	Chakauḍā.
45.	Svarindra.	79.	Vahaḍā.
46.	Māyā.	80.	Dhañivalā.
47.	Ashtavāra.	81.	Pavārachhiyā.
48.	Chaturtha.	82.	Bāgaraurā.
49.	Pañchama.	83.	Taraudā.
50.	Vapuchhavāra.	84.	Gīndaudiyā.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Serial No.	Name of Caste
85.	Pitadi.	89.	Siṅgāra.
86.	Bagheravāla.	90.	Narasiṅghapurā.
87.	Budhelā.	91.	Mahatā.
88.	Kaṭanerā.		

APPENDIX VI

The names of castes with their population figures as given by All India Digambara Jaina Directory, 1914.

Serial No.	Name of Caste.	Population.
1.	Khapdelavāla.	64,726.
2.	Agravāla.	67,121.
3.	Jaisavāla.	11,089.
4.	Paravāra.	41,996.
5.	Padmāvatī Paravāra.	11,591.
6.	Paravāra Dashā.	9.
7.	Paravāra Chosake.	1,277.
8.	Pallivāla.	4,272.
9.	Golālāre.	5,582.
10.	Binaikyā.	3,685.
11.	Nutana Jaina.	3.
12.	Osavāla.	702.
13.	Osavāla-Bisā.	45.
14.	Gaṅgeravāla.	772.
15.	Baḍele.	16.
16.	Baraiyyā.	1,584.
17.	Phatehpuriyā.	135.
18.	Digambara Jaina.	1,167.
19.	Poravāla.	115.
20.	Budhele.	566.
21.	Lohiyā	602.
22.	Golasiṅghāre.	629.
23.	Khairobā.	1,750.

Serial Mo.	Name of Caste	Population
24.	Lamechū.	1,977.
25.	Golāpūrvā.	10,640.
26.	Golāpūrvā (Pañchavise).	194.
27.	Charanāgare.	1,987.
28.	Dhākāda.	1,272.
29.	Katanerā.	699.
30.	Poravāda.	285.
31.	Poravāda (Jaṅgaḍā).	1,756.
32.	Poravāda Jaṅgaḍā Visā.	540
33.	Dhavala Jaina.	33
34.	Kāsāra.	9,987.
35.	Bagheravāla.	4,324.
36.	Ayodhyāvāsi (Tārapapanthī).	299.
37.	Ayodhyāvāsi.	293.
38.	Lāḍa Jaina.	385.
39.	Krishnapakshī	62.
40.	Kāmbhoja.	705.
41.	Samaiyyā.	1,107.
42.	Asāti.	467.
43.	Dasā Hūmaḍā.	18,079.
44.	Bisā Hūmaḍā.	2,555.
45.	Pañchama.	32,556.
46.	Chaturtha.	69,285.
47.	Badanere.	501.
48.	Pāpaḍivāla.	8.
49.	Bhavasāgara.	80.
50.	Nemā.	263.
51.	Narasimhapurā Bisā.	4,472.
52.	Narasimhapurā Dasā.	2,593.
53.	Gurjara.	15.
54.	Saitavāla.	20,889.
55.	Mevāḍā	2,158.
56.	Mevāḍā Dasā.	2.
57.	Nāgadā Bisā.	2,654.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
58.	Nagadā Dasā	897.
59.	Chitodā Dasā	306.
60.	Chitodā Bisā	551.
61.	Śrimāla	738.
62.	Śrimāla Dasā	42.
63.	Selavāra	433.
64.	Śrāvaka	8,467.
65.	Sādara Jaina	11,241.
66.	Bogāra	2,431.
67.	Vaiśya Jaina	242.
68.	Indra Jaina	11.
69.	Purohita	15.
70.	Kshatriya Jaina	87.
71.	Jaina Digambara	9,772.
72.	Tagara	8.
73.	Chaughale	160.
74.	Miśra Jaina	25.
75.	Samkavāla	40.
76.	Khurasāle	240.
77.	Haradara	236.
78.	Upādhyāya	1,216.
79.	Thagara-Bogāra	53.
80.	Brāhmaṇa Jaina	704.
81.	Gāndhī	20.
82.	Nāī Jaina	4.
83.	Bādhāī Jaina	3.
84.	Pokarā Jaina	2.
85.	Sukara Jaina	8.
86.	Maheśrī	16.
87.	Anyadharmī	70.

APPENDIX VII

The names of castes and sub-castes in Gujarātha with their population figures as given by Śvetāmbara Jaina Directory, 1909.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
1.	Śrīmālī Viśā	44,509.
2.	Śrīmālī Daśā	22,751.
3.	Śrīmālī Lāḍavā	1,302.
4.	Shrīmālī Māravādi	1.
5.	Poravāda Viśā	19,010.
6.	Poravāda Daśā	6,281.
7.	Osavāla Viśā	11,931.
8.	Osavāla Daśā	2,764.
9.	Nīmā Viśā	1,092.
10.	Nīmā Daśā	10.
11.	Hummaḍa Viśā	112.
12.	Hummaḍa Daśā	12.
13.	Dīśavāla Daśā	72.
14.	Vāgadīyā Viśā	11.
15.	Nārasiṅgapurā Daśā	4.
16.	Modha Māṇḍliyā Daśā	4.
17.	Bhāvasāra	1,060.
18.	Bhojaka	789.
19.	Kanabī Pāṭidāra	452.
20.	Salāvi	326.
21.	Sāndesarā	159.
22.	Pāṇḍe	46.
23.	Rajaputa	44.
24.	Mahātmā	35.
25.	Pāñchā	21.
26.	Sutāra	16.
27.	Māru	15.
28.	Daraṇī	11.
29.	Luvāpā	10.
30.	Kāchhiyā	9.
31.	Brāhmaṇa	7.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
32.	Modha Ghāñchi	4.
33.	Rāvala	3.
34.	Bhramabhāṭa	3.
35.	Kandoi	2.
36.	Khatri	2.
37.	Luvāra	1.
38.	Koli	1.

APPENDIX VIII

Names of Digambara Jaina castes and sub-castes with their population according to Provinces (1914).

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
United Provinces		
1.	Khaṇḍelavāla	3,562.
2.	Agravāla	27,652.
3.	Jaisavāla	3,300.
4.	Pallivāla	3,752.
5.	Osavāla	18.
6.	Gāṅgeravāla	136.
7.	Poravāla	115.
8.	Paravāra	9,545.
9.	Padmāvatī Paṭavāra	8,744.
10.	Lamechū	1,622.
11.	Golāpūrva	718.
12.	Golālāre	2,095.
13.	Baraiyā	59.
14.	Baḍele	16.
15.	Budhele	558.
16.	Lohiyā	550.
17.	Golasiṅghāre.	329.
18.	Kharauvā	980.
19.	Binaikiyā	6.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
20.	Phatahapuriyā	135.
21.	Brāhmaṇa Jaina	15.
22.	Nūtana Jaina	3.
23.	Digambara Jaina	28.
	Total	<u>63,966</u>

Bengal-Bihar

1.	Khaṇḍelavāla	1,308.
2.	Agravāla	1,731.
3.	Paravāra	134.
4.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	30.
5.	Pallivāla	11.
6.	Jaisavāla	321.
7.	Mevāḍā Viśā	3.
8.	Hummaḍā Daśā	3.
9.	Golasingāre	18.
10.	Golālāre	20.
11.	Lamechā	29.
12.	Baraiyā	13.
13.	Kharauvā	50.
	Total	<u>3,673</u>

Rajaputana-Malwa

1.	Khaṇḍelavāla	53,132.
2.	Agravāla	13,503.
3.	Jaisavāla	5,912.
4.	Jaisavāla Daśā	94.
5.	Pallivāla	452.
6.	Osavāla	122.
7.	Saitavāla	1.
8.	Bagheravāla	3,492.
9.	Śrimāla	660.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
10.	Śrīmāla Daśā	42.
11.	Paravāra	8,681.
12.	Chausake Paravāra	729.
13.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	2,297.
14.	Lamechū	100.
15.	Golāpūrva	376.
16.	Golālāre	1,565.
17.	Baraiyā	1,512.
18.	Hūmaḍa Daśā	10,639.
19.	Hūmaḍa Viśā	846.
20.	Katancrā	635.
21.	Charanāgare	170.
22.	Jāngadā Poravāda	1,239.
23.	Samaiyā	194.
24.	Asati	254.
25.	Lohiyā	52.
26.	Golasingāre	258.
27.	Kharauvā	720.
28.	Ayodhyāvāsi	194.
29.	Chittodā Dasā	274.
30.	Chittodā Viśā	551.
31.	Mevādā	85.
32.	Gujara	15.
33.	Narasimhapurā	1,527.
34.	Narasimhapurā Dasā	1,592.
35.	Narasimhapurā Viśā	4,374.
36.	Nāgadā Dasā	897.
37.	Nāgadā Viśā	2,654.
38.	Selavāra	433.
39.	Binaikiyā	452.
40.	Lāḍa	5.
41.	Nemā	53.
42.	Nāi Jaina	4.
43.	Bādhai Jaina	3.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
44.	Pokarā Jaina	2.
45.	Brāhmaṇa Jaina	10.
46.	Sunāra Jaina	8.
47.	Mahes̄ī Jaina	16.
48.	Jaina	3.
	Total	1,19,293.

Punjab

1.	Khaṇḍelavāla	616
2.	Agravāla	23,246
3.	Buḍhelā	8
4.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	353
5.	Jaisavāla	203
6.	Osavāla	179
7.	Paravāra	10
	Total	24,615

Central Provinces

1.	Khaṇḍelavāla	1,293
2.	Agravāla	393
3.	Jaisavāla	86
4.	Pallivāla	57
5.	Gāṅgeravāla	636
6.	Setavāla	9,112
7.	Bagheravāla	741
8.	Papaḍivāla	8
9.	Paravāra	23,519
10.	Chausake Paravāra	548
11.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	146
12.	Lamechū	218
13.	Golāpūrva	9,476
14.	Golālare	1,900
15.	Hūmada Dasā	45

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
16.	Kaṭanerā	61.
17.	Badanerā	501.
18.	Charanāgare	1,777.
19.	Dhākāda	1,110.
20.	Poravāḍa	277.
21.	Poravāḍa Jāṅgadā Visā	540.
22.	Poravāḍa Jāṅgadā	517.
23.	Kāsāra	303.
24.	Samaiyyā	913.
25.	Pañchavise Golāpūrva	194.
26.	Ashtī	213.
27.	Chaturtha	22.
28.	Pañchama	18.
29.	Golsīnghāre	24.
30.	Ayodhyāvāsi Tāraṇapānthis	208.
31.	Ayodhyāvāsi	99.
32.	Krishṇapakshi	62.
33.	Kāmboja	85.
34.	Gāndhi	20.
35.	Bhāvasāgara	27.
36.	Binaikiyā	3,225.
37.	Nemā	263.
38.	Lāḍa	194.
39.	Dhavala	33.
Total		<u>58,864.</u>

Bombay

1.	Khapdelavāla	4,814
2.	Agravāla	596
3.	Jaisavāla	1,068
4.	Osavāla	383
5.	Paravāra	48
6.	Chaughale	160
7.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	12

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
8.	Hummaḍa Dasā	7,392.
9.	Hummaḍa Visā	1,709.
10.	Osavāla Visā	45.
11.	Kāthānerā	3.
12.	*Charanāgare	40.
13.	Bagheravāla	91.
14.	Śrīmāla	59.
15.	Śamkavāla	40.
16.	Saitavāla	11,771.
17.	Kāśāra	9,631.
18.	Chaturtha	68,432.
19.	Pañchama	24,553.
20.	Upādhyāya	1,216.
21.	Mevāḍa Visā	479.
22.	Mevāḍa Dasā	2.
23.	Mevāḍa	1,591.
24.	Bogāra	1,432.
25.	Dhākaḍa	162.
26.	Digambara Jaina	198.
27.	Śrāvaka	70.
28.	Chitauḍā	32.
29.	Golāpūrva	70.
30.	Jaina Brāhmaṇa	18.
31.	Binaikiyā	2.
32.	Sādara	6.
33.	Narasimhapurā Dasā	1,007.
34.	Lamechū	8.
35.	Poravāḍa	8.
36.	Lāḍa	191.
37.	Golālāre	2.
38.	Kāṁboja	620.
39.	Thagara Bogāra	53.
40.	Narasimhapurā	98.
41.	Khurasale	240.

Serial No.	Name of Caste	Population
42.	Miśra Jaina	25.
43.	Tagara	8.
44.	Jaina	263.
45.	Harada	236.
	Total	<u>1,38,957.</u>

Madras-Mysore

1.	Khapđelavāla	1
2.	Digañbara Jaina	9,481
3.	Pañchama	7,985
4.	Jaina Brāhmaṇa	661
5.	Chaturtha	831
6.	Jaisavāla	115
7.	Kāsāra	53
8.	Saitavāla	5
9.	Paravāra	59
10.	Śrimālī	19
11.	Padmāvatī Paravāra	9
12.	Śrāvaka	8,397
13.	Bogāra	999
14.	Vaiśya Jaina	242
15.	Indra Jaina	11
16.	Purohita Brāhmaṇa	15
17.	Kshatriya Jaina	87
18.	Sādara Jaina	11,235
19.	Anyadharma	70
	Total	<u>41,216</u>

APPENDIX IX

Names of 'Gotras' found among Agaravāla Jainas
as given by various authors.

Serial No.	Names of 'Gotras' given by			
	Crooke	Sherring	Jain, P. D.	Rāmalālajī
1.	Garga	Garga	Garga	Gara
2.	Gobhila	Gobhila	Goila	Goyala
3.	Gautama	Garavāla	Kachchhala	Singala
4.	Maitreya	Batsila	Kauśala	Maṅgala
5.	Jaimini	Kāsila	Vṛṇdala	Tāyala
6.	Saiṅgala	Siṁhala	Dhālana	Taralo
7.	Vāsala	Maṅgala	Śrīgala or Siṅghala	Kāsala
8.	Aurapa	Bhadala	Jaitrala or Jindala	Vānsala
9.	Kausika	Tīṅgala	Mantrila or Mītrala	Airapa
10.	Kaśyapa	Erapa	Tūṅgala	Therapa
11.	Tandeya	Tāyala	Tāyala	Sintala
12.	Māṇḍavya	Terana	Vamśala	Mintala
13.	Vasishtha	Thīṅgala	Kaṅsala	Jhindhala
14.	Mudgala	Tittila	Tāṅgala	Kindhala
15.	Dhānyāsha	Nitala	Maṅgala	Kachhila
16.	Dhelana or Dhauma	Tundala	Airiṇa	Harahara
17.	Taitariya	Goila or Goina	Madhukula	Vachchhila
17½.	Nagendra	Bindala	Gavadhara or Gavana	—

APPENDIX X

Names of 'Gotras' found in the Śrīmāla caste of Jainas.

Serial No.	Name of Gotra	Serial No.	Name of Gotra
1.	Katāriyā.	3.	Kāṭha.
2.	Kahūndhiyā.	4.	Kālerā.

Serial No.	Name of Gotra	Serial No.	Name of Gotra
5.	Kādaiyc.	39.	Jhāmachūra.
6.	Kurādika.	40.	Tānka.
7.	Kāla.	41.	Tānkariyā.
8.	Kuthāriye.	42.	Tīngada.
9.	Kekadā.	43.	Daharā.
10.	Kauḍiyā.	44.	Dāgaḍa.
11.	Kaukagaṛha.	45.	Dūṅgariyā.
12.	Kambotiyā.	46.	Dhaura.
13.	Khagala.	47.	Dhaudhā.
14.	Khāreda.	48.	Tavala.
15.	Khaura.	49.	Tādiyā.
16.	Khauchaḍiyā.	50.	Turakyā.
17.	Khausaḍiyā.	51.	Dusāja.
18.	Gadaudaghā.	52.	Dhanāliyā.
19.	Galakaṭe.	53.	Dhūvanā.
20.	Gapatāṇiyā.	54.	Dhūpaḍa.
21.	Gadaiyā.	55.	Dhyāḍhiyā.
22.	Gilābala.	56.	Tavi.
23.	Gīndoḍiyā.	57.	Narata.
24.	Gūjariyā.	58.	Dakshapata.
25.	Gūjara.	59.	Nāchapa.
26.	Ghevariyā.	60.	Nāndarivāla.
27.	Ghaughadiyā.	61.	Nivahatiyā.
28.	Charada.	62.	Niraduma.
29.	Chāṇḍī.	63.	Nivahediyā.
30.	Chugala.	64.	Parimāṇa.
31.	Chādiyā.	65.	Pachausaliyā.
32.	Chanderivāla.	66.	Paḍavāḍiyā.
33.	Chhakkaḍiyā.	67.	Paserapa.
34.	Chhāliyā.	68.	Pañchobho.
35.	Jalakaṭa.	69.	Pañchāsiyā.
36.	Jūḍa.	70.	Pāṭāṇī.
37.	Jūḍibala.	71.	Pāpaḍagota.
38.	Jāñta.	72.	Pūrabiyā.

Serial No.	Name of Gotra	Serial No.	Name of Gotra
73.	Phalavadhiyā.	104.	Mālavī.
74.	Phāphū.	105.	Mārūmahaṭṭā.
75.	Phophaliyā.	106.	Māndoṭiyā.
76.	Phusapāṇa.	107.	Mūsala.
77.	Bahāpuriyā.	108.	Mogā.
78.	Baraḍā.	109.	Murāri.
79.	Badaliyā.	110.	Mundādiyā.
80.	Bandubī.	111.	Rāḍikā.
81.	Bāñhakaṭe.	112.	Rāṅkibāpa.
82.	Bāñsaza.	113.	Rihalima.
83.	Bārigota.	114.	Lavāhalā.
84.	Bāyadā.	115.	Laḍārūpa.
85.	Vimatālaka.	116.	Sagaripa.
86.	Vichāda.	117.	Laḍavālā.
87.	Bauhaliyā.	118.	Sāgiyā.
88.	Bhadrasavāla.	119.	Sāṁbhaḍati.
89.	Bhāṇḍiyā.	120.	Sidhuḍa.
90.	Bhālodī.	121.	Sudrāḍā.
91.	Bhūbara.	122.	Sohū.
92.	Bhanḍāriyā.	123.	Saudhiyā.
93.	Bhāṭūngā.	124.	Hāḍigapa.
94.	Bhothā.	125.	Hedū.
95.	Mahimabāla.	126.	Hīḍaurayā.
96.	Mauthiyā.	127.	Aṅgaripa.
97.	Maradūlā.	128.	Ākoḍūpaḍa.
98.	Mahatāpiyā.	129.	Ūbarā.
99.	Mahakule.	130.	Boharā.
100.	Marahati.	131.	Sāṅgariyā.
101.	Mathuriyā.	132.	Palahota.
102.	Masūriyā.	133.	Ghōghariyā.
103.	Mādhalapuri.	134.	Kūṭchaliyā.

APPENDIX XI

A List showing Gotras, Dynasties, Places of Origin and Family Deities found in the Khaṇḍelavāla Caste.

S. No.	Gotra	Rajaputra Dynasty	Place of Origin	Family Deity
1	2	3	4	5
1.	Sāha	Chauhāna	Khaṇḍelo	Chakrēvāri
2.	Pātāpi	Tañvara	Pādhāpi	Āmā
3.	Pāpađivāla	Chauhāna	Pāpađi	Chakrēvāri
4.	Dausā	Rāthauḍa	Dausā	Jamāya
5.	Seṭhi	Soma	Seṭhāṇiyo	Chakrēvāri
6.	Bhausā	Chauhāna	Bhausāpi	Nāndāpi
7.	Gaudhā	Gaudhađa	Gaudhāpi	Mātāpi
8.	Chāndūvāđa	Chandela	Chandūvāđa	Mātāpi
9.	Mauṭhyā	Thīmara	Mauṭhyā	Aurala
10.	Ajamerā	Gauđa	Ajameryo	Nāndāpi
11.	Darađaudyā	Chauhāna	Darađauda	Chakrēvāri
12.	Gadaiyā	Chauhāna	Gadayau	Chakrēvāri
13.	Pāhādyā	Chauhāna	Pāhāđi	Chakrēvāri
14.	Bhūñcha	Sūrya	Bhūñchhađa	Āmapa
15.	Vaja	Hema	Vajāni	Āmapa
16.	Vajama- hārāya	Hema	Vajamāsi	Mauhađi
17.	Rāukā	Soma	Rāloli	Aurala
18.	Pātađudyā	Tañvara	Pāđodi	Padmāvatī
19.	Gagavāla	Kachhāvā	Gagavāpi	Jamavāya
20.	Pādyadā	Chauhāna	Pādapi	Chakrēvāri
21.	Saunī	Saulaňkhi	Sauhani	Āmapa
22.	Vilālā	Thīmara Sauma	Vilālā	Aurala
23.	Viralālā	Kuruvaṁsi	Chhotī Vilālī	Sautala
24.	Vinyāyakyā	Gahalauta	Vinyāyaki	Vethī
25.	Vāñkivāla	Mauhila	Vāñkalī	Jīnī
26.	Kāsalāvāla	Mauhila	Kāmsali	Jīnī
27.	Pāpalā	Sauđhā	Pāpalī	Āmapa
28.	Saugāpi	Suryavaṁsi	Saugāpi	Kanhāđi

1	2	3	4	5
29.	Jāñjhadyā	Kachhvā	Jāñjhari	Jamavāya
30.	Katāryā	Kachhvā	Katāryā	Jamavāya
31.	Vaida	Sauraḍī	Vadavāsā	Āmaṇī
32.	Taugyā	Pañvāra	Taugāṇī	Pāvadī
33.	Bohorā	Sauḍhā	Bohori	Sautali
34.	Kalā	Kuruvamī	Kulavāḍī	Sauhaṇī
35.	Chhāvadyā	Chauhāna	Chhāvadyā	Aurala
36.	Laugyā	Suryavamī	Lagāṇī	Āmaṇī
37.	Luhāḍyā	Mauraṭhyā	Luhāḍyā	Lausila
38.	Bhapdasālī	Saulaṅkhi	Bhapdasālī	Āmaṇī
39.	Dagaḍavata	Saulaṅkhi	Daraḍauda	Āmaṇī
40.	Chaudhari	Tañvara	Chaudhatyā	Padmāvatī
41.	Pautalyā	Gahalauta	Pautalā	Padmāvatī
42.	Gindauḍyā	Sauḍhā	Ginhauḍī	Śridevi
43.	Sakhūṇyā	Sauḍhā	Sakhūṇī	Siravarāya
44.	Anaupaḍyā	Chandela	Anaupaḍī	Mataṇī
45.	Nigautyā	Gauḍa	Nāgautī	Nāndanī
46.	Paṅgulyā	Chauhāna	Paṅgulyo	Chakreśvari
47.	Bholāṇyā	Chauhāna	Bholāṇī	Chakreśvari
48.	Pītalyā	Chauhāna	Pītalyo	Chakreśvari
49.	Banamālī	Chauhāna	Banamāla	Chakreśvari
50.	Araḍaka	Chauhāna	Araḍaka	Chakreśvari
51.	Rāvatyā	Thimara-sauma	Rāvatyau	Auṭala
52.	Maudi	Thimarasauma	Maudahasi	Laurala
53.	Kaukaparājyā	Kuruvamī	Kaukaparājyā	Saunala
54.	Jugarājyā	Kuruvamī	Jugarājyā	Saunala
55.	Mularājyā	Kuruvaṇī	Mularājyā	Saunala
56.	Chhahaḍyā	Kuruvaṇī	Chhāhaḍyā	Saunala
57.	Dukaḍā	Dujāla	Dukaḍā	Hemā
58.	Gautī	Dojāla	Gautaḍā	Hemā
59.	Kulabhāṇyā	Dujāla	Kulabhāṇī	Hemā
60.	Vaura-khaṇḍyā	Dojāla	Vaurakhaṇḍī	Hemā

1	2	3	4	5
61.	Sarapatyā	Mauhila	Sarapati	Jīpadevī
62.	Chirādakyā	Chauhāna	Chirādaki	Chakrēsvari
63.	Nigardyā	Gauḍa	Nivagada	Nāndapī
64.	Nirapaulyā	Gauḍa	Nirapāla	Nāndapī
65.	Saravadyā	Gauḍa	Saravadyā	Nāndapī
66.	Kaṭavāḍā	Gauḍa	Kaṭavagari	Nāndapī
67.	Sāṁbharyā	Chauhāna	Sāṁbharyo	Chakrēsvari
68.	Haladyā	Mauhila	Haralauda	Jānidhayāḍā
69.	Saumagasā	Gahalauta	Saumada	Chauthī
70.	Bāmbā	Saudhā	Bāmbāli	Sikharāya
71.	Chauvāpyā	Chauhāna	Chauvaratyā	Chakrēsvari
72.	Rājahamīsa	Saudhā	Rājahamīsa	Sikharāya
73.	Ahaṅkāryā	Saudhā	Ahaṅkara	Sikhāpya
74.	Bhūsāvaḍyā	Kuruvamīśī	Bhasavaḍyā	Saunala
75.	Maulasarā	Saudhā	Maulasara	Sikharāya
76.	Bhāṅgadā	Khimara	Bhāṅgada	Aurala
77.	Lauhaḍyā	Mauraṭha	Lauhaṭa	Lausalaghiyā
78.	Khetrapalyā	Dujāla	Khetrpalyau	Hemā
79.	Rājabhada	Sāṅkhala	Rājabhadarā	Sarasvatī
80.	Bhuñvālyā	Kachhāvā	Bhuñvāla	Jamavāya
81.	Jalavāpyā	Kachhāvā	Jalavāpi	Jamavāya
82.	Vedālyā	Thimara	Vanavaudā	Aurala
83.	Laṭhivāla	Saudhā	Laṭavāḍā	Śrīdevī
84.	Nirapalyā	Soraṭā	Nipati	Amāṇī

CHAPTER FOURTH

MARRIAGE AND POSITION OF WOMAN

1. WHAT IS MARRIAGE?

It is a significant fact about man that when he wants to act, he does so in co-operation with others and not individually. He always tries to associate with others while performing a particular act and he has to act from the very beginning of his life for the satisfaction of his elemental needs or impulses. By elemental impulses we mean those impulses which are original in human nature, in the sense that there are no peoples known to have failed to take account of them. Such impulsions are hunger, love, vanity and fear¹ and for their realisation man has evolved different massive social institutions. The social institutions of marriage and family arise out of the efforts made by mankind to adjust their activities with a view to satisfy their primordial appetite for sex-love. The institution of marriage thus tries to regulate the sexual acts of persons living in a group. The control of sex-impulse is the primary function performed by the institution of marriage. But marriage is something more than a regulated sexual behaviour. It is quite different from ordinary sexual union in the sense that marriage is more or less durable, it is recognised by custom or law, it requires some formality to celebrate the union and it gives rise to certain rights and duties both in the case of the parties entering the union and in the case of the children born of it.² As the marriage determines the exact nature of relations of the parties constituting a union, it not only regulates their sexual relations but also settles the problems of descent, inheritance and succession which arise out of marital union. Sometimes, the latter function is considered more significant than the mere regulation of sexual behaviour.³ Because of these characteristics of marriage which distinguish it effectively from ordinary

1. Sumner and Keller : *Science of Society*, Vol. I, p. 21.

2. Westermarck : *History of Human Marriage*, Vol. I, p. 26.

3. Rivers : *Social Organisation*, p. 37.

sexual union, the institution of marriage occupies an important place in the life of a society.

The institution of marriage is based on sex-impulse. This sex-impulse is universal among all sorts of people, its intensity has got immense range and it is continuous with the people unlike animals. Because of these qualities it is quite essential to regulate sex-impulse in the interests of individual and society. As the satisfaction of sex-impulse is attended with good as well as bad results, it cannot be left unchecked on the ground that it is a natural urge. Taking into account the necessity of societal control on the free play of sex-impulse mankind has evolved many ways to achieve that aim. It is proposed in this Chapter to discuss the methods adopted by the Jain community to control the elemental impulse of love.

2. THE OBJECT OF MARRIAGE

The object of marriage in Jain community is definitely not the securing of satisfaction derived from sexual acts alone, though it may form a small part of the object. The main purpose of marriage is best explained by Papdita Äśadharaji in the following manner:—

धर्मसंततिमविलङ्घां रतिं वृत्तकुलोन्नतिम् ।
देवादिसत्कृतिं चेच्छन् सत्कन्यां यत्नतो वरेत् ॥१

A person should marry a girl endowed with good virtues if he wishes to have legitimate children, to get unperverted sexual satisfaction, to enhance the conduct and prosperity of the family and to honour God, preceptor and other revered things. It is pertinent to note that in these objectives put before a married person, the first place has been given to begetting children and a subordinate position has been assigned to securing sexual pleasure. With a view to give more prominence to this aim of marriage, Ächärya Jinasena has ordained that सुंतानार्थमृतावेब कामसेवां मिथो भजेत्² i. e., one should indulge in sex activity for the specific purpose of getting children and that too during the ovulation

1. S. D. II. 60.

2. Ächärya Jinasena: Ädi Purâna, 38, 135.

period. He has reiterated the same purpose in the following stanzas:—

त्वामादिपुरुषं दृष्ट्वा लोकोप्येवं प्रवर्तताम् ।
 महतां मार्गवर्तिन्यः प्रजाः सुप्रजसो ह्यमूः ॥
 ततः कल्याचमन्त्रे परिणेतुं मनः कुरु ।
 प्रजासंततिरेव हि नोच्छेत्स्यति विदांवर ॥
 प्रजासंतत्यविच्छेदे तनुते धर्मसंततिः ।
 मनुष्व मानवं धर्मं ततो देवेमच्युत ॥
 देवेम गृहिणां धर्मं विद्धि दारपरिग्रहम् ।
 संतानरक्षणे यत्नः कार्यो हि गृहमेधिनाम् ॥¹

This shows that it is the duty of householders to get married. The householders should strive to beget children and to protect them. Due to marriage continuity of the society is maintained and the Rule of Law (Dharma) is spread. The society is composed of individuals and the society will expand when there will be an increase in the number of individuals comprising that community. That is why the main aim of marriage is to get legitimate children out of the wedlock.

Thus among the Jainas, the main purpose of marriage is to maintain the continuity of human race by getting legitimate children. Here the institution of marriage is viewed clearly in its social aspect. There is no religious motive whatsoever in the contracting of marriage as such. The necessity of marriage arises to provide a legitimate outlet to sexual feelings and to maintain the continuity of human race. Both purposes are served by regulating the sexual behaviour of people through the institution of marriage. That is why among the Jainas, like Hindus, Vivāha or marriage is generally considered as obligatory for every person and it is included in the *Śarīrasamkāras* (i. e., sacraments sanctifying the body) through which every man and woman must pass at the proper age and time.

Though Jainas and Hindus regard marriage as obligatory for every person, there is a great difference in their outlook in regard-

1. Ibid, 15, 61-64.

-ing so. While Jainas look at the problem from a purely social point of view, Hindus treat it from a religious point of view. Among the Hindus marriage is made compulsory for every person because the birth of a son is said to enable one to obtain Moksha. Again, it is believed by Hindus that one's progeny is considerably connected with and instrumental to happiness both in this world as well as hereafter. Moreover, the birth of a son is conceived by Hindus to be specially contributory towards helping the father to execute his obligations due to the departed ancestors—one of the three debts or obligations which every Hindu is bound to discharge.¹ A Hindu has to marry and to get a male child with a view to avoid eternal damnation in hell after his death. According to Hindus, there is an intimate connection between marriage and the ultimate object in life, viz., Moksha. As marriage has something to do with the emancipation of soul, marriage and religion are very closely connected with one another in Hindu Society. Thus, the institution of marriage among Hindus loses its entirely social character, gets mixed up with religious behaviour of the people and becomes a religious act as such.

In the Jaina religion, on the contrary, marriage is not treated as a religious duty but is considered as a purely social act. It is regarded more in the nature of a civil contract than of a religious ceremony.² Its object is to maintain the continuity of human race and not to obtain salvation by securing male offspring. Marriages are entered into for purely practical reasons and religion has nothing to order in this respect. It is not ordained in Jaina religion to marry for emancipation of soul. Marriage is not concerned with life hereafter. When no offerings are to be made to the forefathers, the question of discharging obligations due to departed ancestors does not arise. Jaina-scriptures do not lay down elaborate rules and regulations regarding marriage. Marriage is completely based on customs of people designed to adjust the life of persons in this world as it is not concerned with the happiness of persons hereafter. If marriage among Jainas would have been

1. Valavalkar: *Hindu Social Institutions*, pp. 149-150.

2. Russel, R. V.: *T. C. O. P. of India*, Vol. I, pp. 225-226.

based on their Āgamas (i. e. basic religious books), it would have been practically the same throughout many centuries and there would not have been a great diversity of customs regarding various aspects of marriage throughout the country. Since marriage practices of Jainas differ to a considerable extent, it is clear that the institution of marriage is based on local customs and not on holy scriptures.¹ From this it need not be inferred that the Jaina holy books do not refer to marriage at all. They do discuss the subject of marriage but in this respect their basic stand is that a lawful wife is necessary for a man for the successful completion of his house-holder's life. They do not prescribe any rules regarding the matters like her age, qualifications, gotra, caste, race, etc., as these are based on local customs. There is practically little relation between marriage customs and Jaina scriptures. It is true that sometimes we notice that in Jaina books while narrating particular events, references are made and opinions given on the marriage customs connected with the events. But we cannot accept such opinions as applicable for all places and times since such opinions were given by taking into account, marriage customs prevailing at that time.² This means that marriage customs referred to in Jaina books are not binding on Jainas for all time to come and they are free to devise their own customs according to local conditions.

In Hinduism there is a direct connection between marriage and religion. In Jainism, however, there is an indirect connection between marriage, like any other custom, and religion. For Jainas the ultimate object in life is the attainment of Moksha, i.e., liberation of soul from worldly bondage. The best way, according to Jainism, to achieve this aim is to perform right action along with right faith and right knowledge.³ The right action includes proper channelising of sexual practices with a view to lead an useful life which serves as a stepping stone for getting salvation. Moreover, religion depends for its existence on the number of its

1. Jain, P. D. : *Vijñāya-Vivāha Mimāṃsa*, p. 77.

2. Mukhtar, J. K. : *Vivāhakshetra Prakāśa*, p. 16

3. Vide सत्परदशेनकानचारित्राणि मोक्षमार्गः S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., I., 1.

followers.¹ The strength of the followers can be rightfully maintained through the procreation of legitimate children. Taking into account these considerations it can be stated that the object of marriage in Jainism is twofold, viz., (1) to give a legitimate outlet to sexual feelings so that the human being may rightly live a useful life, enjoying the fruits of Dharma, Artha and Kāma, and thus be entitled to attain the great object—the Moksha; and (2) to promote the cause of Dharma (Law) by generating righteous and chivalrous sons and daughters. It is a duty of the householder to be contended with his own life and to contrive for the continuance of the human race.²

3. NORMALITY OF MARRIAGE

Though marriage, according to Jainas, is more in the nature of a civil contract than of a religious ceremony, it is enjoined upon every person to effect that contract. The Jaina philosophy no doubt gives more importance to the policy of renunciation. The strict observation of celibacy throughout whole life is definitely more valued than indulgence in sensual pleasures. But it would be a mistake to suppose from this that Jainism is against marriage. Persons who lead a complete celibate life are highly appreciated, yet those who cannot follow that path are not denounced. There are many people who cannot practise the strict life of renunciation and such persons are advised to get married as the next best course. That is why marriage has been included in the Śarīrasamkskāras (i. e. sacraments that sanctify the body) through which every Jaina must pass at the proper age and time. This arrangement, if not the fear of eternal damnation, as in the case of Hindus, makes it obligatory for every Jaina to get married. Moreover, it is enjoined upon every householder to give of his own accord his daughters in marriage before they attain puberty. Further, it has been ordained that those persons who will keep their grown-up daughters in their homes without marry-

1. Vide. न पर्मा धारिकार्त्ता !

2. Jain K. P.: Marriage in Jaina Literature, I. H. Q., Vol. IV, p. 152.

-ing them would fall from religion.¹ In view of these injunctions parents rush in to contract the marriages of their children and as a result we find that in the Jaina community child-marriage was the order of the day until a few years ago.

4. FORMS OF MARRIAGE

The term 'forms of marriage' is generally applied to denote the various types of marriage unions according to the number of partners entering the union. Such accepted forms of marriage are four in number, viz., monogamy, polygyny, polyandry and group-marriage. But in the Jaina community, as in the Hindu community, the forms of marriage are devised according to the method of contracting a marriage union. The forms of marriage are divided into eight categories, viz., the *Brāhma*, the *Daiva*, the *Arsha*, the *Prāīapatya*, the *Āsura*, the *Gāndharva*, the *Rākshasa* and the *Paiśācha*.² The main features of these forms are as follows:—

(i) *The Brāhma (or Brāhmaṇa) form:*

In this form of marriage the daughter is given by the father to a bridegroom, who is learned and well-behaved, after calling him (to one's place) and decorating him as well as the bride with valuable ornaments.³

(ii) *The Daiva form:*

The marrying of one's daughter at the conclusion of a big *Pūjā* or ceremonious worship of the holy Tirthankara to the

1. Pt. Phattelalaji: Jaina Vivāha Paddhati, p. 2.

कन्या स्थाप्ते यावदहातयैवना यावत् खीस्वधर्मादुमंची ।

न स्यानावहृष्टमस्मात् कुलस्थेः तस्याः प्रीतियोद्भावेण संप्रपार्यम् ॥ १२ ॥

यश लोभादिना कन्यां युहे रक्षेऽजस्वलाम् ।

नोद्भवेष कुलस्थानां धर्मचक्रः पदे पदे ॥ १३ ॥

2. Vide ब्राह्मो दैवस्तथा चार्यः प्राजापत्यस्तथाच्चरः ।

गांधर्वो राक्षसैव पैशाचश्चाष्टमोऽप्यमैः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 70.

3. Vide (i) आच्छाय चाहैयित्वा च श्रुतशीलवते स्वयम् ।

आहुय दानं कन्याया ब्राह्मो धर्मः प्रकीर्तिः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 71.

(ii) स ब्राह्मो विवाहो यत्र वरायालंकृत्य कन्या प्रदीयते । N. V., 31, 4.

Director of ceremonies who has officiated at the *Pūjā* is termed as *Daiva* marriage. Here the daughter is given as a gift to the bridegroom.¹

(iii) *The Ārsha form :*

Here the father gives his daughter in marriage to the bridegroom, after accepting from him a small gift of a suit or two of the wearing apparel or a cow and a bull. The gift is received by the father in accordance with requirements of Dharma and the marriage ceremony is performed according to the prescribed mode.²

(iv) *The Prājāpatya form :*

The giving away of the girl as a gift by the father with a mere blessing " You may together engage yourselves in the performance of Dharma " is the *Prājāpatya* marriage.³ Probably in this from the bridegroom applies for the hand of the bride, and perhaps, it is also not necessary that he should be unmarried.⁴

(v) *The Āsura form :*

Obtaining the bride by paying for her an adequate sum of money to her father and the like is the *Āsura* marriage.⁵

1. Vide (i) यहे तु वितते सम्पूर्ण जिनार्चाकमें कुर्वते ।

अलंकृतय सुतादानं दैवो धर्मः प्रचक्षयते ॥ T. V. A., XI, 72.

(ii) स दैवो विवाहो यत्र यज्ञार्थमूलिकः कन्याप्रदानमेव दक्षिणा ।

N. V., 31, 5.

2. Vide (i) एकं वस्त्रपुरां द्वे वा वरादादाय धर्मतः ।

कन्याप्रदाने विपिवदार्थी धर्मः स उच्यते ॥ T. V. A., XI, 73.

(ii) गोमिषुपुतुरःसरं कन्यादानादायः । N. V., 31, 6.

3. Vide (i) सहोभौ चरतां धर्मिति तं चातुभाष्य तु ।

कन्याप्रदानमध्येवं प्राजापत्यो विषिः स्मृतः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 74.

(ii) विनियोगेन कन्याप्रदानात्प्राजापत्यः । N. V., 31, 7.

4. Jain C. R : Jaina Law, P. 42.

5. Vide (i) शातिभ्यो द्रविणं दस्त्रा कन्यायै चैव शक्तिः ।

कन्यादाने यतिक्रयते चासुरोऽप्यमेव उच्यते ॥ T. V. A., XI, 75.

(ii) पणवंधने कन्याप्रदानादास्तुरः । N. V., 31, 10.

(vi) *The Gāndharva form:*

The union of the bride and the bridegroom due to their mutual love and consent and without the permission of their parents and brothers is the *Gāndharva* marriage.¹

(vii) *The Rākshasa form:*

Carrying away by force after the killing (of parents etc), of a weeping and crying girl is the *Rākshasa* marriage.²

(viii) *The Pasiācha form:*

Violating a senseless, helpless and sleeping girl and marrying her is the *Pasiācha* form.³

Though forms of marriage have been divided into eight categories, all of them have not been approved as right types of marriages to be practised by the people. Out of these, the first four are termed *Dharmya* or *Ārya* (i. e. meritorious or approved) marriages and the last four are considered *Adharmya* or *Pāpa* (i. e. sinful) marriages.⁴ The first four are commended because such marriages are contracted with the mutual consent of the parents of the bride and the bridegroom and the bride is given by her father as a gift to the bridegroom in accordance with the prescribed mode of marriage at the time. The last four forms of marriage are denounced for obvious reasons. In the *Āsura* marriage money is actually paid to the bride's father. No doubt, in the *Ārsha* form the bride's father receives something from the

1. Vide (i) स्वेच्छयाऽन्योन्यसंयोगः कन्यायाश्च वरस्य च ।
गांधर्वः स तु विज्ञेयो मैथुन्यः कामसंभवः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 76.
(ii) मातृः पितृः वंपूनां चाप्रामाण्यात् परस्परात्मुरागेण मिथः समवायाद्
गांधर्वः । N. V., 31, 9.
2. Vide (i) हस्ता भिस्ता च छिस्ता च क्रोशनीं रुदर्तीं युहात् ।
प्रसव कन्याहरणं राक्षसो विचिह्नयते ॥ T. V. A., XI, 77.
(ii) कन्यायाः प्रसवादानाद् राक्षसः । N. V., 31, 12.
3. Vide (i) सप्तां मत्तां प्रमत्तां वा रहो यत्रोपगच्छति ।
स पापिङ्गो विवाहानां वैशाचः कपितोऽहमः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 78.
(ii) सुप्रप्रमत्तकन्यादानात्पैशाचः । N. V., 31, 11.
4. Vide (i) N. V., 31, 8 and 13. (ii) Jain, C. R.: Jain Law, p. 241.

bridegroom but here the father does so according to the requirements of Dharma and not with a view to sell his daughter. The *Gāndharva* marriage is contracted completely without the consent of the parents. The *Rākshasa* marriage involves the forcible abduction of a girl after committing acts of violence against the kinsmen of the bride. The *Paiśācha* marriage intentionally perpetrates violence on a girl who is placed in a very helpless condition, and that is why sometimes it is considered as the worst of all marriages.¹ As these four forms of marriage are sinful, no fixed mode is prescribed by Āchāryas for contracting such marriages.²

There is a difference of opinion as regards the most prevalent form of marriage at present in the Jaina community. According to Āchāradinakara,³ the only form of marriage that can be practised at present is the *Prājāpatya* marriage as the other three of the approved forms of marriage, viz., *Brāhma*, *Daiya* and *Ārsha* cannot exist in the present Kali age.⁴ On the other hand, Mr. C. R. Jain thinks that nowadays only the *Brāhma* form of marriage can be said to be prevalent as the rest have all become obsolete.⁵ Since the *Daiya* and *Ārsha* forms of marriage are not definitely practised now, it matters little whether the most prevalent form of marriage is called as either *Brāhma* or *Prājāpatya*.

If we compare the forms of marriage as conceived by Jainas with those of Hindus, it would be found that not only the number and names of forms are exactly the same but they do not differ in their contents also. Yet there is a significant difference between their view-points regarding the consideration of lawful and unlawful forms of marriage. According to the Hindus, the (i) *Brāhma*, (ii) *Daiya*, (iii) *Ārsha*, (iv) *Prājāpatya*, (vi) *Gāndharva* and (vii) *Rākshasa*, are lawful marriages, while the remaining two forms, viz., (v) *Āsura* and (viii) *Paiśācha* are unlawful and

1. Jain C. R. : op. cit., p. 242.

2. Śri Jaina Samskāravidhi, p. 87.

3. It is an authoritative work of Śvetāmbara Jainas.

4. Śri Jaina Samskāravidhi, p. 87.

5. Jain C.R. : op. cit., p. 43.

should never be practised.¹ The Jainas, on the other hand, recommend only the first four forms, viz., the (i) *Brâhma*, (ii) *Daiva*, (iii) *Arsha*, and (iv) *Prâjâpatya*, as approved forms of marriage.

In the approved forms of marriage the most important point to note is that the bride is always given by her father as a gift to the bridegroom. In the absence of the father the question arises regarding the competent person to give the maiden in marriage. In this connection a descending order of maiden's near relatives is fixed and it is enjoined on them to undertake, in the order given, the responsibility of contracting marriage. The specified order is as follows:- The father, the grand-father, the brother, the uncle, a person of the same gotra, the preceptor, the maternal grand-father, and the maternal uncle. It is further made clear that in the absence of all these relatives who are asked to give a maiden in marriage, she may do *Svayamvara*, i. e., choose her partner according to her own will ; but this can be done only in the case of extreme trouble².

5. QUALIFICATION OF PARTIES TO THE UNION

Various qualifications and disqualifications to be noted in the bride and bridegroom before the marriage is contracted are mentioned at a great length in Jaina books. It is stated that the following nine things should be marked in a bride-groom before giving a daughter to him in marriage, viz., caste, absence of disease, age, character, education, bodily stature, wealth, parents and members of the family.³ In general the bridegroom should be gentle, healthy, of noble descent, endowed with long life and

1. Valavalkar: op. cit., p. 152.

2. Vide पिता पितामहो भ्राता पेतृव्यो गोत्रिणो गुरुः ।

मातामहो मातुलो वा कन्याया बान्धवाः क्रमात् ॥

पित्रादिदाक्रमादे तु कन्या कुर्यात्स्वयंवरम् ।

इत्येवं केचिदाचार्याः प्राहुमंहति संकटं T. V. A., XI, 82-83.

3. Vide स्वाभिजात्यमरोगत्वं वयः शीलं शुन वपुः ।

लक्ष्मीः पश्चः परिवारो वरे नव गुणाः स्मृताः । Ädi Purâna, 62, 64.

moral qualities and handsome.¹ A person should not be accepted as a bridegroom if he is found wanting in some limbs, impotent, diseased, of bad family, full of vices, always sad and of a very low position.²

As regards the attributes of a bride it has been laid down that one should marry a girl who is of one's own caste, but not of the same *gotra* and who is endowed with indications of long life, excellent virtues and other accomplishments such as learning etc.³ Along with the caste, *gotra* and other accomplishments it should be seen that the girl suitable for marriage should be beautiful, younger and smaller than the bridegroom and coming from a family comprising many members.⁴ A long list of disqualifications pertaining to a girl has been given and it has been enjoined not to marry a maiden possessing all or some of these disqualifications.⁵ As a guiding principle it is stated that a maiden should be avoided like a tigress if she is sinful, diseased, unchaste, shameless or immodest, and having leucoderma.⁶

In the accomplishments to be found in the bride and bridegroom, it would be seen that, more prominence has been given to their family position and their individual character, especially their pre-marital sexual behaviour. The bride to be selected for marriage must, in the first instance, be pure. While denouncing pre-marital licence it has been laid down that it is better to marry

1. Vide वरोऽपि मुण्डाम् भेषो दीर्घायुद्धां पितृजितः ।

सुकुलो तु सदाचारो गृह्णतेऽसौ सुरूपकः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 4.

2. Vide अंगोपांगादिविकले कलीबे रोगिणि दुष्कुले ।

प्रसनातेषु तु पतिते नैव कन्यां प्रयच्छतु ॥

Pt. Phattelalaji op. cit. p. 2.

3. Vide अन्यगोत्रभवां कन्यां नातंकां सुलक्षणाम् ।

आयुष्मतीं मुण्डाक्षां च विनृदत्तां वरेद्दूरः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 3.

4. Vide कृपवती स्वजातीया स्वतो लक्ष्यन्यगोत्रजा ।

भोक्तु भोजयितुं योग्या कन्या बहुकुदुम्बनि ॥ T. V. A., XI, 36.

5. N. V., 31, 14.

6. Vide कुटिनीं पापिणीं रुणां दुशीलां च वपातिगां ।

व्याप्रीमिव च तां कन्यां दूरतः परिवर्जयेत् ॥

Pt. Phattelalaji, op. : cit. p. 2.

a prostitute than to marry an unchaste maiden.¹ This demand for virginity in the girl to be married is found among Hindus² and others. It would be a double standard of morality if pre-marital chastity is expected only from the female side. This is avoided by prescribing the same rules for males also. It has been emphatically stated that the death of a maiden is preferable to giving her in a family of doubtful character.³

6. AGE OF MARRIAGE

Rules regarding the proper age of marriage vary with different kinds of people. It is natural that that age should be prescribed as the suitable age for marriage for both males and females when they get their sexual maturity. This is necessary because marriage partners have to undertake a life of sex-experience. Taking this fact into account the Jaina books prescribe that the consummation of marriage should take place soon after the marriage ceremony,⁴ which means that the parties to marital union must have attained sexual maturity. As in Jaina literature we come across many instances of marriages contracted according to Gāndharva or Svayamvara systems, it can be presumed that marriage partners were sufficiently grown up at the time of marriage.⁵ From the words 'जोवणगमनमण्पत्ता' (i.e. having attained youth) occurring in Jaina books it can be seen that marriage is recommended only for grown-up ladies. In 'Pravachanasāroddhāra' it has been mentioned that the progeny born of a couple, wherein the mother's age is 16 years, and the father's 25 years, is bound to be strong.⁶ Moreover, it is the solemn duty of a father not to keep a grown-up daughter without marriage as it would mean falling from the path of religion.⁷ A popular saying in ancient India

1. Vide वरं वेश्यायाः परियहो न अविशुद्धकन्यायाः परियहः । N. V., 31, 24.

2. Valavalkar: op. cit. p. 153.

3. Vide वरं जन्मनाशः कन्यायाः न अकुलीनेतु अवधेषः । N. V., 31, 25.

4. See Śri Jaina Samakāravidhi, pp. 87-111.

5. Jain, K.P.: Marriage in Jaina Literature, I. H. Q., Vol. IV., p. 151.

6. Śri Jaina Samakāravidhi, pp. 83-87.

7. Pt. Phattelalaji: op. cit. p. 2.

stated that, if after the attainment of puberty of a maiden, her guardians fail to arrange for her marriage, they go to hell.¹ From this it appears that child-marriages as well as late marriages were denounced by Jainas. Of course opinions differed as to when males and females attained puberty. According to Somadeva a girl of 12 years and a boy of 16 years become competent for sex-action,² and this can be regarded as the proper age of marriage recommended for adoption by the Jainas. In view of this we can safely say that the prevalence of child-marriage system among Jainas until recent times was not sanctioned by religion. The practice of child-marriages has at present become obsolete due to the effect of passing of Sarda Act and the general awakening among Jainas as a result of spread of modern education.

As regards the proper difference of age between the two partners of marital union it has been specifically mentioned that if the bridegroom is older than the bride by two years, he is the best bridegroom ; if he is older by 5 years, he is a good bride-groom or he can be tolerated and if he is older by more than ten years, he is a worst bridegroom.³ It has been further stated that in any case the bride should not be more in age than the bridegroom as such a lady is regarded like the mother.⁴

7. CHOICE OF PARTNERS

By choice of partners we mean the latitude of freedom given to the parties to the marital union to choose their partners. The choice of partners constitutes an important part in the institution of marriage. Complete liberty in the choice of partners is never

1. Jain J. C : Life in Ancient India, p. 155.

2. द्वादशवर्षी र्ही दोदशवर्षः पुमान् प्राप्तव्यवहारौ भवतः ॥ १ ॥ N. V. 31, 1.

This opinion is considered to be influenced by the conditions prevailing in India during the Muslim Period. Vide Jain, K. P. : Marriage in Jaina Literature, I, H. Q., Vol. IV., p. 151.

3. कन्यावर्षेण्याणेन द्विवर्षांपि उत्तमः ।

पंचवर्षीयको मध्ये दशवर्षीयिकोऽयमः ॥ Phattelalaji : op. cit. p. 2.

4. स्ववयसोऽयिकां वर्षेण्यतां वा शरीरतः ।

गुरुरुर्मी वरेन्मैव मातृवत्पारिगीतेता ॥ T. V. A., XI, 40

given to the members who wish to enter the marital union. On the contrary rules and regulations are made with a view to limit the field from which the choice of partners can be effected. The broadest set of restrictions as to who shall or shall not marry whom concerns itself with prohibiting marriage without or within a given group, and thus prescribing endogamy (in-marriage) or exogamy (out-marriage).¹ The endogamous rules forbid the members of a particular group to marry any one who is not a member of the group, and exogamous rules forbid the members of a particular group to marry any one who is a member of the group. These two sets of rules are by no means contradictory in so far as they refer to different groups.² Let us see the nature and extent of endogamous and exogamous rules in the Jaina community.

In the Jaina community full freedom was given to the people in the choice of their partners from the very beginning. No restrictions regarding race, religion, caste, creed, etc. were placed. The choice was relegated to the sweet will of the people. In fact the most prevalent form of marriage was Svayamvara wherein the maiden selected her lover according to her own will, and there was no question whether the lover belonged to a high or a low family.³ Because of this latitude of freedom given in Svayamvara, it has been considered as the most ancient form in the sacred literature and it is regarded as the best among various forms of marriage.⁴

Due to the prevalence of Svayamvara form of marriage the field of selection was very wide. In the beginning Jaina community was divided into four Varpas, or classes, viz., Brāhmaṇas, Kshatriyas, Vaiśyas and Śūdras and it would be found from Jaina

1. Sumner and Keller: op. cit., Vol. III, p. 1568.

2. Rivers: Social Organisation, P. 40.

3. Vide स्वयंवरगता कन्या कुणिते हच्छ्रेवरं ।

कुलीनमकुलिनं वा क्रमो नास्ति स्वयंवरे ॥

Harivamśa Purāṇa, 31, 53.

4. Vide सनातनोऽस्मिं पर्गाऽऽयं शुलिस्कृतिषु भाषितः ।

विवाहविधिभेदेषु वरिष्ठो हि स्वयंवरः ॥ Adi Purāṇa, 44, 32.

Purāṇas that these classes did not create barriers in whatever way in the choice of partners. Marriages among the people of different Varnas have been divided into two categories, viz., Savarṇa Marriage and Asavarṇa Marriage. In the Savarṇa Marriage a member of a particular Varpa marries within the same Varpa. The Asavarṇa Marriage occurs when the parties belong to different Vargas. The Asavarṇa Marriage has been further divided into two sub-categories, viz., Anuloma and Pratiloma Marriage. In the Anuloma Marriage a bridegroom chooses his bride from a Varpa which is lower than that of his own Varṇa; and in the Pratiloma Marriage the bridegroom belongs to a Varpa lower than that of the bride. Though Savarṇa Marriage was generally preferred to Asavarṇa Marriage, still in Jaina literature we come across both the types of Asavarṇa Marriage along with the Savarṇa Marriage. Vasudeva, who was a Kshatriya, married a Brāhmaṇa girl Somaśrī by name. Though Śri Kṛṣṇa was a Kshatriya he arranged the marriage of his brother Gajakumāra with a Brahmin girl Somā. Gupavati, the daughter of a Kshatriya King Śrenika, was married to Dhanyakumāra, a Vaiśya of Ujjayani.¹ Similarly, we hear of the minister Teyaliputta who married a goldsmith's daughter; Gayasukumala, a Kshatriya, was betrothed to a Brāhmaṇa girl; King Jayasattu married a painter's daughter, and Bhambhadatta married the girls from the Brāhmaṇa and the merchant families.²

The field of marriage was not limited to the followers of Jaina religion alone. The non-Jainas also were considered suitable for marriage purposes. When there was not much hostility between the followers of various religions in India, the marriages were freely contracted between them. There are many instances where marriages were contracted not only among the Jainas themselves, but also among parties, of which either was a non-Jain or a convert to Jainism. Chelanā, the daughter of a Jaina King Cheṭaka of Vaiśali, was married to the Buddhist King Bimbisāra. King Dhanasena of Kauśambi followed the Vedic religion, but his

1. Mukhtar, J. K. : *Vivāhakahetraprakāśa*, pp. 164, 165.

2. Jain, J. C. : op. cit. p. 155-156. For other examples see Jain, P. D. : op. cit, pp. 162-170.

queen Dhanaśrī professed Jainism. Vasumitra, the merchant, paid reverence to the Jaina preceptors; but his wife Dhanaśrī was a non-Jaina. The Jaina poet Dhanañjaya and the famous Buddhist lexicographer Amarasimha had their wives from among Buddhists and Jainas respectively.¹

Further, in ancient times marriages were contracted by Jainas with people, who were either not of the Aryan stock and were called Mlechchhas or who resided in foreign countries. Such marriages were contracted by persons occupying high positions and Jaina literature gives numerous examples of such marriages. Vasudeva married 'Jarā', the daughter of a Mlechchha, and their son Jaratkumāra later on took the vow of a Jaina ascetic. King Upaśrenika, the father of King Śrepika of Rājagṛha, married a Mlechchha maiden by name Tilakasundari. Emperor Chandragupta Maurya, who was a disciple of a Jaina ascetic Bhadrabāhu, accepted the daughter of Seleukos, the King of Syria. King Bharata, the son of the first Jaina Tīrthaṅkara Ādi-nātha, had a large number of Mlechchha wives.² Śalibhadra, a Jaina merchant, had been to foreign countries and was married to foreign ladies. Śāntinātha, the 16th Jaina Tīrthaṅkara, had many thousand Mlechchha wives.³ Jinadatta, the founder of the Santāra line in Mysore, is said to have married a Nāga virgin.⁴ The prince Rājādhirāja of Cholas, who professed Jaina religion, is said to have bravely gone down into a cavern, and by his radiant beauty won the hand of noble daughter of the Nāga race.⁵

Besides these we find that among ancient Jainas it was not thought unnatural to marry a befitting girl from any position. There are many instances in the Jaina literature which testify to the fact that marriages were freely contracted with prostitutes and with illegitimate children. Setha Chārudatta, a merchant, was married to Vasantasenā, a famous harlot. Prince Chāruchandra, the son of King Amoghadarśana, accepted in marriage a prosti-

1. Jain, K. P.: Marriage in Jaina Literature, I. H. Q., Vol. IV, p. 148.

2. Mukhtar, J. K.: op. cit. p. 95-122.

3. Jain, P. D.: op. cit. pp. 164 and 168.

4. Rice, B. L.: Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, p. 202.

5. Rice, B. L.: Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, p. 202.

tute by name Kāmapatākā.¹ Nāgakumāra had married Kinnari and Manohari, the two daughters of a prostitute Pañchasugandhini. Vasudeva accepted Priyaṅgusundari whose father Aniputra was an illegitimate son of Śilāyudha and Rishidattā, an unmarried forest girl.² The example of Dushyanta and Śakuntalā is well-known.

From the above discussion it is clear that in the early stages of Jaina community the field of marriage was kept open for all. This was in fact due to conception of society as envisaged by Jaina Āchāryas. The whole mankind was treated as one unit and it was divided into four Varṇas merely according to the differences in the avocations they followed for their livelihood.³ When there was no difference between man and man, it was but natural that full liberty was given to the Jainas in the field of choosing their partners.

This practice of complete freedom in respect of choice of partners did not hold the field continuously. Later on, new rules were prepared to suit the changing conditions from time to time. In the first place though the Asavarpa Marriage was allowed, the Pratiloma system of it was discarded and it was enjoined upon the Jainas to adopt the Anuloma system. Jinasenāchārya recommended the Anuloma form in the specific manner as follows:—

शूद्रा शूद्रेण वोढव्या नान्या स्वां तां च नेगमः ।
वहेत्स्वां ते च राजन्यः स्वां द्विजन्मा कचिच्च ताः ॥⁴

A Śūdra should marry the daughter of a Śūdra and not of any other Varṇa. A Vaiśya can marry a daughter of Vaiśya or Śūdra; a Kshatriya of Kshatriya, Vaiśya or Śūdra; a Brahmin of Brahmin, Kshatriya, Vaiśya or Śūdra. In the same strain Somadevasūri states that

आनुलोन्येन चतुर्भिद्विवर्णः कल्यामाजनाः ब्राह्मणक्षत्रियविजाः ॥⁵

1. Mukhtar, J. K.: op. cit., pp. 22 and 25.

2. Mukhtar, J. K.: op. cit., pp. 50, 122 and 135.

3. See. p. 67 ante.

4. Jinasenāchārya : Ādi Purāṇa, 16, 247.

5. Somadeva : N. V., 31, 2.

According to the Anuloma manner Brāhmaṇa, Kshatriya and Vaiśya can legitimately marry respectively the daughters from four, three and two Varṇas. This shows that a person can marry a girl of a lower Varṇa but not of a higher Varṇa than that of his own. Thus, a Brāhmaṇa can have wives from all the four Varṇas, the Kshatriya from three, the Vaiśya from two and the Śūdra from only one, i.e., a woman of his own Varṇa. This marriage rule seems to have been widely practised by Jainas as it is evident from the sections of Jaina Law Books on partition pertaining to the question of division amongst the children of wives of different Varṇas.¹

Even this freedom of marriage among the four Varṇas was not allowed for a long time. Subsequently Śūdras were cast outside from the rest of the Varṇas. The first three Varṇas, viz., Brahmins, Kshatriyas and Vaiśyas, were allowed the freedom of having inter-marriage and inter-dining relations among themselves and not with the Śūdras who were asked to have dining and marriage relations with Śūdras alone.²

We have already seen that the Jaina community was originally divided into four classes only, viz., Brāhmaṇa, Kshatriya, Vaiśya and Śūdra, and that the modern Jaina castes developed gradually out of these four classes.³ We have further noticed that the Hindu caste system considerably influenced the Jaina caste-system and that its prominent features are discernible in the Jaina community even now.⁴

The invariable characteristic of the caste system in India is its endogamous nature and its observance of certain rules restricting the choice of mates.⁵ It was but natural that these characteristics were accepted in toto by the Jaina castes when they were formed. Though there were a few instances of inter-marriages between

1. Jain, C. R. : *Jain Law*, pp. 60-64.

2. See पृथ्वे विवाहानि विवाहः क्षेमोऽनम् ।
कल्पयं न च शूद्रस्तु शूद्राणि शूद्रैः सह ॥

Medhāvi : *Dharmasaṅgraha* Śrāvakāchāra, 256.

3. See p. 70 ante.

4. See p. 85 ante.

5. Hutton, J. H. : *Caste in India*, p. 56.

different Jaina castes,¹ yet the general rule was to marry in one's own caste or sub-caste only. The same rule is adhered to even now. Along with this came in turn other restrictions which virtually limited the field of selection. According to the nature of restrictions limiting the field of selection, following types of endogamy are found in the Jaina community at present.

(1) *Caste or Sub-caste Endogamy:*

The first restriction was that both the parties to the marital union must belong to the same caste.² For marital purposes a sub-caste acts like a caste and the sub-caste virtually forms an endogamous group.³ Thus, castes like Saitavāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Chaturtha, etc. which have no sub-divisions among them practise caste-endogamy. The Śrimālī caste in Gujarātha has been divided into sub-castes and these sub-castes form their own endogamous groups.⁴

(2) *Religious or Sectional Endogamy:*

There are many castes in Jaina society which have got their counterparts in other societies. There are Agravālas, Śrimālis, Poravādas, etc. both among Hindus and Jainas and marital relations exist between them though they follow different religions. It is explained that all such castes formerly followed Jainism and though later on some of their members embraced other religion, the former marital relations were continued. But nowadays this practice is looked down upon and responsible and prominent associations like All India Śvetāmbara Jaina Conference are advising people to contract marriages within the Jaina members of their caste.⁵ In the Paravāra caste some are the followers of Tāraṇapantha and the others of different sub-sects of Digambara-sect. Formerly, Paravāras were contracting marriages among themselves irrespective of religious differences. Recently, this has stopped and Tāraṇapanthi and other Digambara Paravāras have

1. Jain, P. D. : op. cit, pp. 168-170.

2. Jain, C. R. : Jain Law, p. 38.

3. Hutton, J. H. : op. cit, p. 56.

4. Eusthenes, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. III, p. 438.

5. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I & II, pp. 92 and 290-291.

formed their own endogamous groups. The same is the case with Tāraṇapānhi Golālāre and other Golālāre, i.e., Golālāre following other sub-sects of Digambara sect.¹ This can be called as religious or sectional endogamy.

(3) *Place or Local Endogamy :*

When members of a particular caste are spread over a wide area, their internal contact gets slackened as a result of which marriages are not freely contracted by the members of the same caste if they reside in distant places. This gives rise to place or local endogamy. Hummadas are dispersed in Rājasthāna, Gujārātha and Mahārāshtra and there are hardly any marital relations between them. Saitavālas are found in the Central Provinces and Berar, Hyderabad State and Mahārāshtra but each part has been formed into an endogamous group. Jainas residing in the Ahmedabad City do not give their daughters in marriage to the non-residents of Ahmedabad.² In the constitution of Visā Śrimāli sub-caste of Saurāshtra (i.e. mainly from Junagadh, Dhoraji, Vanthali and Jetpur Talukas) it has been laid down that their members should keep matrimonial relations with Visā Śrimālis residing up to Bhavanagar, Veraval, Porbunder, Jamanagar, and Mangrol and not beyond this limit even though the other party may be a Visā Śrimāli.³

(4) *Factional or Group Endogamy :*

Due to difference of opinion on certain questions factions arise within the members of a caste or a sub-caste and sometimes such factions are regarded as barriers for the purpose of contracting matrimonial alliances. This can be termed as factional or group endogamy. In the Hummaḍa caste of Sholapur City there were, some years back, two groups led by important persons and generally there was absence of marriage relations between the groups. Over the question of accepting Bhāttārakas as gurus, Saitavālas have been split up into two groups and these groups

1. J. H., Vol. VIII, p. 290.

2. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I & II, p. 290.

3. Śri Saurāshtra Visā Śrimālinā Jñātino Dhāro, p. 39.

are practically endogamous. In the Kaira District there are such endogamous groups among Śvetāmbara Jainas.¹

From these various types of endogamy existing at present in the Jaina community it is clear that the field of selection has been limited to a very great extent. The multiplicity of castes and sub-castes, their distribution over a wide area, and their divisions into different religions and groups, have indeed resulted in creating a stage in which practically no choice is left to the people in selecting their marriage partners.

According to the rules of exogamy a person cannot marry within the members of a particular group. There are several such exogamous groups within an endogamous group and people have to select their marriage partners from outside the exogamous group and within the endogamous group. The exogamous group is generally known as Gotra and it has been enjoined upon the Jainas not to marry a girl from the same Gotra. The Gotras of the bride and bride groom should be different (at the time of marriage).² This means that Sagotra Marriage, i. e., marriages between the members of the same Gotra, is forbidden and that is why Gotra forms one of the important considerations in contracting a marriage. Therefore, the following facts in respect of Jaina Gotras may be noted.

In the first place the exact number of Gotras prevailing in the Jaina community is not known. Generally they are considered to be 84 in number.³ From the published and unpublished works Dr. A. N. Upadhye has compiled a list of 140 Jaina Gotras.⁴ But these lists are not comprehensive in the sense that they do not mention the names of all Jaina Gotras known at present. There is a large number of such Gotras. The Agravālas have got 17½

1. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I and II, p. 327.

2. Vide (i) अन्यगोत्रभवां कर्त्तव्यं नात्मकां सुलक्षणाम् ।

आपुष्पतीं गुणवत्ता च पंतृदत्तं वरेद्वरः ॥ T. V. A., 31, 3.

(ii) समविभावाभिजनयोः असमगोत्रयोश्च विवाहसंबंधः ।

N. V., XI, 20.

3. Hassan: T. C. N. D., p. 272.

4. Upadhye, A. N.: Studies in Jaina Gotras, Jaina Antiquary, Vol. II, pp. 66–69.

Gotras, Osavālas 1444, Khaṇḍelavālas 84, Śrīmālis 135, Poravādas 24, Hummadas 18, Saitavālas 44, etc.¹ It is said that in Mysore there are 130 Gotras among Jainas but only 24 are chiefly found to be in vogue at present.²

Secondly, there is no fixed rule among the Jainas regarding the number of Gotras to be avoided in contracting a marriage. This depends on customs prevailing in different castes. Among the Paravāras at some places 16 Gotras are avoided and at other places either 8 or 4 or only 2 Gotras are avoided.³ The Saitavālas are supposed to possess many Gotras of which the names of only 44 Gotras are available at present, but they regulate their marriages by the custom of family surnames, i.e., inter-marriages within the people having the same surname are avoided.⁴ Among the Padmāvatī Paravāras there are no Gotras at all and the question of avoiding Gotras does not arise.⁵

Thirdly, though Gotras refer to names of personages from mythological lists, the word 'Gotra' has sufficiently technical sense according to Jaina tradition. It has its place in the famous Karma Theory, and it occurs in the scriptures as one of the Eight Karmas. According to the scriptures, Gotra signifies the conduct of the soul coming down from generation to generation. There are distinctions of high and low Gotras according as the standard of conduct is high or low. It is this Karma that determines the high or low family for the birth of soul.⁶ This is the technical meaning attached to the term 'Gotra' by Jaina authors. But it is surprising to find that hundreds of Jaina Gotras prevalent in the Jaina community are quite different from the above meaning, there are no high or low Gotras and people are not distinguished as high or low according to their Gotras.⁷

1. Vide Chapter III.

2. Iyer, L. K. A.: M. T. C., pp. 403-405.

3. J. H., Vol. VIII, pp. 107-112.

4. (i) Hassan : op. cit, p. 263.

(ii) B. G., Vol. XVII, p. 99.

5. J. H., Vol. VIII, pp. 107-112.

6. Upadhye, A. N.: Studies in Jaina Gotras, Jaina Antiquary, Vol. II, pp. 61-62,

7. Mukhtar, J. K.: op. cit, p. 149.

Fourthly, from the history of origin of these Gotras it will be seen that they are not primordial, they were formed in different times for different reasons and likewise they might probably be discarded in future due to special reasons. There is no underlying principle in the formation of these Gotras. The Agravālas are descendants of Rājā Agrasena but instead of following the Gotra of Agrasena, they instituted 18 new Gotras after the names of the princes.¹ When the inhabitants of 84 towns were converted to Jainism by Jinasena Āchārya, they were named as Khaṇḍelavālas and 84 new Gotras were created out of 84 towns. As the Gotras were named after the towns, the Khaṇḍelavālas of each town were formed into a separate new exogamous group.² Śrī Ratnaprabha Sūri converted the Rajputs to Jainism, formed them into onecaste of Osavālas and divided them into 18 Gotras. Later on, due to further additions made to Osavālas by conversion, original Gotras were split up and new Gotras were created. Out of these some were named after birds and animals, some after places of residence, some after professions, some after occupations, some after names of persons and some after specific reasons of valour, wisdom, etc.³ It shows that creation of Gotras was artificial and that Gotras can be changed from time to time. In the circumstances persons cannot claim any considerable antiquity for a particular Gotra as Gotras are liable to be discarded, changed or newly created.

The rules of exogamy are devised mainly with the purpose of prohibiting marriages between near relatives. The family constitutes a group of near relatives and it was ordained that members of a family should have marital relations outside the family. The word 'Gotra' literally means 'an enclosure for cows' but gradually it came to mean a family. That is why Gotra was considered as a limit within which marriage relations were denounced. But later on, Gotra assumed different meanings and new rules cropped up to avoid many Gotras instead of one in contracting marriages. This resulted in effective encroachment

1. See page 87 ante.

2. See page 98 ante.

3. (i) See page 90 ante.

(ii) Mukhtar, J. K. F: op. cit, pp. 154-155.

on the freedom of choice of mates. By various types of endogamy the field for selection has already been restricted and with increase in the extent of exogamy the field has assumed a small dimension.

As regards marriage with near relatives following instructions have been given :

सुतां पितृश्चसुख्व निजमातुलकन्यकाम् ।
स्वसारं निजमार्याया: परिणेता न पापभाक् ॥
पुत्री मातुभिन्नाश्च स्वगोत्रजनिताऽपि वा ।
शश्रूस्वसा तथैतासां वरीता पातकी स्मृतः ॥¹

It is stated that he who marries his paternal aunt's daughter, the daughter of his mother's brother, or his wife's sister commits no sin. But if he marries the daughter of his mother's sister, a girl of his own Gotra, or sister of the mother-in-law, he commits sin thereby.² The fact that marriage with father's sister's daughter or mother's brother's daughter was allowed and that marriage with mother's sister's daughter or father's brother's daughter (i.e. a girl from the same Gotra) was not allowed, shows that marriage between cross-cousins was prescribed but marriage between parallel cousins was forbidden. In actual practice this rule is controlled by local usage at the present time. That is why it has been laid down that marriage with maternal uncle's daughter is governed by the customs of the place and the time.³ Accordingly, the cross-cousin marriage is neither allowed nor practised by Jainas in the Northern India but in the Deccan and Karnātaka the cross-cousin marriage is not only allowed but preferred also. Moreover, among the Jainas in the Karnātaka the maternal uncle-niece marriage is practised, i. e., the daughter is given to her maternal

1. T. V. A., XI, 37 and 38.

2. This custom of marrying maternal uncle's daughter was prevalent in ancient India in some of the royal families and certain ruling clans. Prince Siddhārtha married Rāhulamātā who was his maternal uncle's daughter, (Vide Law, B. C. : India as described in Early Texts of Buddhism and Jainism, p. 168). From this it may appear that this practice might have been observed by ancient Jainas also.

3. Vide देशकालापेक्षो मातुलसम्बन्धः । N. V., 31, 29.

uncle. This is a unique feature of the marriage system of Karnāṭaka only and it is obtainable in almost all the castes of Karnāṭaka including the Jainas, the Brahmins and the Liṅghayatas.¹ Irrespective of these rules there are some examples, no doubt, of marriages between very near relatives but they are very few and far between. Devaki was married to her father's cousin-brother, Vasudeva. King Agrasena's grandsons and grand-daughters married among themselves and their progeny is known as Agravālas.² According to Jaina mythology, sister marriage was prevalent at the time of Usabha (i.e., Rshabha, the first Jaina Tīrthaṅkara), who married his own sister. There is another case of sister marriage when king Pupphaketu allowed his son to marry his own sister.³ Further, it is interpreted that Lord Rshabha married his two daughters, Brāhmaṇi and Sundari, to his two sons, Bahubali and Bharata, respectively.⁴

8. MARRIAGE PRELIMINARIES AND CEREMONIES

The institution of marriage, like any other social institution, develops out of restrictions imposed upon the conduct of people. These limitations restrict the freedom of people but they are necessary for the proper growth of societal life. Up till now we have examined the inhibitions concerning the 'who' of marriage, i.e., regulations determining who may or may not marry whom. It comprises the rules of endogamy and exogamy. Now we have to see the 'how' of marriage which covers all the proceedings which initiate the status and culminate in the wedding and attendant ceremonies. Since the institution of marriage regulates the sexual behaviour and determines the questions of descent, inheritance and succession, the whole society is intimately concerned with all aspects of marriage. The societal interest is not over by prescribing rules regarding the choice of partners but it regulates the manner in which a bride is secured, the union is settled and the marriage ceremony is performed.

1. (i) Desai, M. N.: *Rural Karnāṭaka*, p. 196.

(ii) Jain, J. C. : op. cit, p. 160.

2. Mukthar, J. K. : op. cit, pp. 94-95.

3. Jain J. C. : op. cit, pp. 159-160.

4. T. S. P. C., Vol. I, pp. 154-155.

The ways of procuring a bride are generally divided into four categories, viz., marriage by capture, purchase, service and consent.¹ A high value was attached to woman in the primitive times by reason of the fact that she served as a working force and a child-producer. Naturally, she became one of the chief forms of booty sought in predatory raids. This forcible seizure of woman is known as marriage by capture.² It was the most prevalent method in ancient times and the Jainas could not be an exception to this. Among the Jainas the Rākshasa form of marriage was practised in which a weeping and crying girl is forcibly abducted possibly after a fight with her near relatives and this is nothing but marriage by capture. We have already noted that even though the Rākshasa form of marriage is practised by both Jainas and Hindus, the former, unlike the latter, do not approve it as a right type of marriage to be practised by the people.³ Marriage by exchange and purchase are better adjustments than marriage by capture. Marriages are arranged in exchange for giving one's own sister in marriage. We read about the marriage of Devadatta, who married the sister of Dhānādatta and in exchange gave his sister in marriage to him.⁴ Marriage by exchange is still practised on a very small scale in the Jaina community and it is not favoured as it goes against the interests of the girl.⁵ In marriage by purchase a wife is obtained for money paid to her father's family by the husband or his father. There are several instances which sufficiently testify to the prevalence of the practice of giving daughter in marriage in exchange of money.⁶ Among the eight forms of marriage mentioned above there is an Āsura form of marriage in which a bride is obtained by paying for her an adequate sum of money to her relatives. The Jaina Law-givers do not approve this method as a right form of marriage to be practised by the people.⁷ At

1. L. T. Hobhouse : *Morals in Evolution*, Vol. I, pp. 152-158.

2. Sumner & Keller : *Science of Society*, Vol. III, pp. 1624-1625.

3. See page 186 ante.

4. Jain, J. C. : op. cit, p. 161.

5. Vidyāśvetāmbara Jaina Directory, Vols. I and II, p. 132.

6. Jain, J. C. : op. cit. p. 156.

7. See page 147 ante.

present marriage by purchase is resorted to by low class Jainas and in cases where it is difficult to secure a bride by ordinary methods. Along with the bride-price there is the custom of dowry in which something is given to the receivers of the bride. By a series of transitional practices wife-purchase passes into what looks very like husband-purchase. It then becomes a duty of a right-minded man, instead of collecting a price for daughter or sister, to exert himself to the utmost in providing her with the dowry which alone will make her marriage proper and honourable.¹ There are several instances which show the prevalence of dowry system in Jaina community from ancient times. We hear of a King Vāparasi who gave away 1000 villages, 100 elephants, plenty of treasure, 1,00,000 of foot soldiers and 10,000 horses to his son-in-law in marriage.² Though there has been a continuous propaganda against the dowry-system in Jaina community, even now dowry is taken in one form or another. In the method of marriage by service a bride is obtained by the bidegroom after serving in her house for a prescribed period. This practice is observed by the people who are in low stages of civilisation. We do not find in Jaina literature any reference to marriage by service and it is not resorted to at all by the Jainas. In the case of marriage by consent the parties enter the marital union with their mutual consent. There is complete freedom given to both the parties in selecting their partners. In the Svayamvara form of marriage a young lady chooses her life-mate according to her sweet will and without any interference from the elders. We have already noted that because of this attitude of freedom given in Svayamvara, it has been considered by the Jaina Āchāryas as the most ancient and best form of marriage.³ This shows that more importance was given to the factor of consent in marriage in the Jaina community. Along with the consent of parties entering the union, there is a necessity of group-consent. Society has got interest in the sexual unions of its members and therefore consent

1. Sumner & Keller; op. cit., Vol. III, p. 165².

2. Jain. J. C.: op. cit, p. 157.

3. See page 151 ante.

of the group is usually given through the approval of its representatives. It is one of the important duties of Jaina caste pañchayatas to approve the proposed marital unions of its members and the latter are enjoined, with penalty of excommunication, not to contract marriages without the previous consent of the caste pañchayatas.

Ceremonial surrounds all the events of life which seem important to men. Marriage is on all counts one of them and naturally elaborate rites are performed at the time of the marriage ceremony. At present, though the rites and customs of marriage among the Jainas vary according to the influences of the province in which they live, yet they can still be regarded as the same in their main features as in ancient times. Such features are betrothal, going of the bridegroom to the bride's place, visit to the Jaina temple and performance of worship by all relatives, placing garland by the bride round the bridegroom's neck on the appointed auspicious day and again performance of worship and rejoicings.¹ Around these main features various rites and customs have grown up according to the conditions prevailing in different provinces. Hence marriage ceremony among the Jainas is not of the same kind throughout India. Still the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Jaina Āchāryas have tried to give uniformity to the rites to be performed at the time of the marriage ceremony so far as their followers are concerned. In this way the prominent rites of marriage ceremony are practically the same among Śvetāmbaras all over India and the same is true about the Digambaras also. According to Śvetāmbaras there are 16 main rites in their marriage ceremony as follows:

- | | |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. Mātṛkāsthāpana | 2. Saptakulakarasthāpana |
| 3. Varaghoḍāno Śāntimantra | 4. Hastamelāpa |
| 5. Agnisthāpana | 6. Homa |
| 7. Prathamābhiseka | 8. Gotrochchāra |
| 9. Mapdāpavedipratishthā | 10. Torapapratishthā |
| 11. Agnipradakshiṇā | 12. Kanyādāna |

1. Jain, K. P.: "Marriage in Jaina Literature", I. H. Q., Vol. IV, p. 151.

- | | |
|-----------------|---------------------------|
| 13. Vāsakshēpa | 14. Dvitiyābhishēka |
| 15. Karamochana | 16. Āśīrvāda ¹ |

For Digambaras the following twenty rites are prescribed as a part of their marriage ceremony, viz.,

- | | |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| 1. Vāgdāna | 2. Vināyakavidhāna |
| 3. Kañkapabandhana | 4. Gṛhasamāskāra |
| 5. Torapavidhi | 6. Vivāhavidhi |
| 7. Parasparamukhāvalokana | 8. Varamālā |
| 9. Varapratijñā | 10. Kanyādāna |
| 11. Devaśastragurupojā | 12. Homāhuti |
| 13. Granthibandhana | 14. Pāṇigrahapa |
| 15. Saptapadī | 16. Puṇyāhavāchana |
| 17. Sāntimantra | 18. Āśīrvāda |
| 19. Svagrīhagamana | 20. Jinagrīhe Dhanārpāpa ¹ |

Even though these twenty items are included in the Digambara marriage ceremony, the following five are considered to be the main parts of the marriage ceremony, viz., Vāgdāna, Pradāna, Varapa, Pāṇipīḍana and Saptapadī.² Vāgdāna is the engagement which takes place generally one month before the marriage ceremony. In this rite the bride's father makes an offer to the bridegroom's father in the presence of relatives and friends of both the parties and the latter accepts the offer. It constitutes an open pledge by both the parties. Pradāna means the presentation of ornaments by the bridegroom's father to the bride sometime before the actual marriage ceremony. Varapa is the Kanyādāna, i.e., the gift of the bride by her father. At the time of the marriage ceremony both the bridegroom and the bride's father ask permission of the assembled persons to give their consent to the proposed union. When the group consent is received, the Varana rite is completed. Pāṇipīḍana or Pāṇigrahapa is the join-

1. See Jaina Samāskāravidhi, p. 89 onwards.

1. Phattelalaji : op. cit., P. 3 onwards.

2. (i) वाग्दानं च प्रदानं च वरणं पाणिपीडनम् !

सप्तपदीति पञ्चांगो विवाहः परिकीर्तिः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 41.

(ii) Lalarama Shastri : Shodasa Samāskāra, pp. 95-114;

ing of the hands together of bride and bridegroom. In this rite the bride's father giving the right hand of the bride into the right hand of the bridegroom asks a promise from him that he would protect her by Dharma, Artha and Kāma and the bridegroom gives that promise. Saptapadī is the circum-ambulation of the sacred fire. The Saptapadī must necessarily be performed in the marriage ceremony, because unless the Saptapadī is performed, marriage cannot be said to be complete.¹ The Saptapadī has been considered so essential that the girl assumes the title of wife only when all the seven rounds are completed.² The Saptapadī is the culmination of the marriage ceremony in the sense that even after Pānipidāna, i.e., joining of the hands, the Saptapadī has not taken place and some defect is discovered in the bridegroom, the father of the girl can marry her to another person.³ When the bridal pair does the circum-ambulation of sacred fire seven times, each time both the bride and the bridegroom have to desire that they will attain in succession, the *Saptaramasthāna*, i.e., the seven high states in life, viz., (1) *Sajjātitva*, good society; (2) *Sadgrasthatva*, good household state; (3) *Sādhutva*, ascetic state; (4) *Indratva*, Indra state; (5) *Chakravartitva*, emperor state; (6) *Jinavaratva*, the state of Lord Jina, i. e., one who has conquered all enemies; and (7) *Nirvāṇa*, complete salvation.⁴ Before the marriage ceremony is over, the husband was required to promise, as a part of the nuptial contract, that he would not engage in fun and frolic with other woman; that he would not visit immoral women's abodes; that he would not gamble; that he would provide for and protect the bride by earning an honourable living; that he would not oppose her visiting suitable and proper places, such as a place of pilgrimage, temple, etc.; that

1. तावद्विवाहो नैव स्याद् यावत्समपदी भवेत् ।
तस्मात्समपदी कार्या विवाहं मुनिभिः समृता ॥ T. V. A., XI, 105.
2. यावत्प्रदक्षिणा न स्यात् समर्पी तावद्वयताम् ।
कन्येति नाभा पश्चात् जायेति नामभागिनी ॥ Phattelalaji: op. cit. P. 31.
3. चतुर्थं वद्ये ज्ञायन्ते दोषा यदि वरस्य चेत् ।
इत्तमपि पुनर्देवात् विताऽन्यस्मै विदुर्बुद्धाः ॥ T. V. A., XI, 174.
4. Kala, B. T. : *Jaina Vivāha-Paddhati* अङ्ग *Lokāchāra* pp. 53-54.

he would have no secrets from her; and, lastly, that he would not reveal her secrets to any one. The wife also was required to make the following seven promises: that she would respect and honour and serve his parents; that she would not disobey him (in all the really serious matters of life); that she would refrain from bitter and harsh speech; that she would not be sullen or sulk when visited by Holy Men and Women; that she would not go to another man's house at night, nor get mixed up with a crowd of men, and that she would not go to the houses of drunkards and immoral persons.¹ Sometimes these promises are made after the sixth round and before the seventh round of the circum-ambulation of the sacred fire.²

Let us now compare the Jaina and Hindu rites and ceremonies performed at the 'vivāha', i.e., actual marriage ceremony. (i) In describing the ceremonies and ritulas connected with the 'vivāha', all the Hindu texts concerned refer to the bride as being given away by the father or her guardian in the family, who invites the bridegroom. The bridegroom goes to the bride's home where the 'vivāha' is to take place.³ The Jainas consider that a bride must be given by her father to a bridegroom. It is in the nature of a gift or dāna. We have seen that the most prevalent forms of marriage among the Jainas at present are Brāhma and Prājāpatya and in both these forms a bride is given as a gift to the bridegroom by her father.⁴ Further, marriage ceremony is to be performed by the Jainas at the bride's place and after the ceremony is over, the bride is brought by the bridegroom to his own house.⁵

(ii) Among the Hindus, like the Jainas, there are variations in the observation of wedding rites with peoples of different regions and villages. Of these rites, the commonly accepted by all are

1. Jain, C. R.: *Jain Culture*, p. 23.

2. Kala, B. T.: *Op. cit.*, pp., 55-56.

3. Valavalkar, P. H.: *op. cit.*, p. 163.

4. See page 147 ante.

5. (i) Phattelalji: *op. cit.*, p. 37.

(ii) Jain, K. P.: *op. cit.*, p. 152.

as follows:— The Kanyādāna, the Vivāhahoma, the Pāṇigrahaṇa, the Agnipariṇayana, the Aśmārohaṇa, the Lājāhoma and the Saptapadī. According to Hindu Vivāha system a marriage is not regarded as complete unless and until the rites of Pāṇigrahaṇa and the Saptapadī are performed.¹ Though the Jaina system of marriage varies from region to region, we have noted the commonly followed rites among the Śvetāmbaras and Digambaras and it may be observed that both the sections of Jainas regard the rites of Pāṇigrahaṇa (or Hastamilāpa) and Saptapadī (or Agnipradakṣinā) as the indispensable rites in the marriage ceremony. Both the rites are meant to impress upon the minds of the bridal pair the ultimate aim of marriage. The spectacular observance of Saptapadī is something which participants cannot be expected to forget while they live. Here a physical fire is used as a symbol of an inner fire, the fire of renunciation, that sanctifies and makes holy. When the wedding couple go round the Sacred Fire, in circumambulation, they are required to impress it on their minds that not pleasure seeking, but salvation, through renunciation, is the ideal of life. The officiating Priest is required to address the bridal pair at this time and has to impress upon their minds that the aim of life is not the wasting of it in the joys and thrills of sense-gratification, but the burning up of the seed of sin by the Fire of Renunciation.²

9. CONSUMMATION OF MARRIAGE

When the institution of marriage is designed to regulate the sexual behaviour of people, it is but natural that certain provision will have to be made regarding the time when that behaviour should be followed by the married couple. This freedom is not given to the couple before marriage even though betrothal has taken place. Strict virginity is expected from both the parties before the marriage and as such no elaborate restrictions are levied on their sexual freedom after the marriage ceremony. Generally, the bridal pair is allowed to have the consummation of marriage within a week after the marriage ceremony. The Hindu texts enjoin on the

1. Valavalkar, — P.H. : op. cit., pp. 164-174.

2. Jain, C. R. : Jain Culture, pp. 21-22.

newly wedded couple to observe strict celibacy for three days after *grha-pravesa*, i.e., the last rite of the marriage ceremony, is over and to mate on the fourth day after certain rites known as the foetus-laying rites are performed.¹ Among the Śvetāmbara Jainas, the newly married pair departs for consummation of marriage on the same day on which Āśīrvacha or Āśīrvāda, i.e., the last marriage ceremony is performed.² According to the Digambara Jainas, the bride and bridegroom should observe the vow of celibacy for seven days after the marriage ceremony; thereafter they should proceed on pilgrimage to some sacred place and then perform the honeymoon joyfully in their own place.³

10. POLYGYNY

One of the important questions connected with the institution of marriage is the number of partners entering the union. Marriage need not necessarily be a two-partner marriage; it can be a many-partner marriage. Sometimes forms of marriage are devised according to the number of partners entering the union. In a Group Marriage there are many men and many women; in Polyandry, one woman and many men; in Polygyny, one man and many women; and in Monogamy, one man and one woman only. Group-marriage is unknown to Jainas and even though polyandrous marriage is adopted by certain Hindu and other castes in some parts of India⁴ it is not found at all among the Jainas. Polygyny is allowed and practised in Jaina society. As a general rule in ancient times people were monogamous, and polygyny was a fashion among the rich and the ruling sections. The kings and princes con-

1. Valavalkar, P. H. : op. cit., pp. 172-173.

2. Śri Jaina Samakāravidhi, pp. 110-111.

3. पाणिग्रहणदक्षिणां नियुक्ते तद्वधुवरम् ।
आसप्तादं घोटन्नद्वयतं देवाश्रिताश्चिकम् ॥
कान्त्वा स्वस्योचितां भूमिं तीर्थभूमीविहृत्य च ।
स्वगृहे प्रविशेत् भूत्या परया तद्वधुवरम् ॥
विमुक्तकंकणं पश्चात्स्वगृहे शयनीयकम् ।
अधिशश्य तथा कालं भोगाङ्गौरुपलालितम् ॥

Ādi-purāpa, 38, 131-133.

4. Census of India, 1931, Vol. I, Pt. I, P. 252

sidered it a privilege to have a crowded harem, which strengthened their political power by contracting numerous but judicious matrimonial alliances. The rich people regarded plurality of wives as a proof of their wealth, reputation and social position. References to polygyny are numerous in the Jaina texts. In this connection the names of king Bharata,¹ King Vikkamajasa, King Seṇiya and that of Gāhāvai Mahāsaya may be mentioned.² Until very recently polygyny was the most widespread custom among Jainas³ and as a result there were many married females than married males and there was an unusually large proportion of widows in the Jaina society.⁴ The caste-pañchayatas which used to limit the freedom of its members in other respects, did not restrict the members from marrying and having many wives.⁵ Further, there is no religious injunction against the custom of plurality of wives. Under the Jaina Law a man may marry more than one wife, that is to say, he may marry again in the presence of one wife.⁶ For doing so certain rules have been prescribed. It is ordained that one may marry a second time after ten years if the first wife is childless, after twelve years if she has only daughters, after 15 years if her children die after birth, and immediately if she is unlovable.⁷ At the same time certain consideration is shown to the first wife. Among the Jaina Baniyās of the Central Province it is generally the rule that a man must obtain the consent of his first wife before taking a second one. In the absence of this precaution for her happiness, parents will refuse to give him their daughter.⁸ It has been prescribed that in the presence of a wife

1. Ādi Purāṇa, 37, 35-36.

2. Jain, J. C. : Op. cit., P. 161.

3. Vide Hassan : T. C. N. D., pp. 256-272.

4. Vide the figures given in Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory. Vols. I & II, pp. 230, 290, 522-527.

5. Dalal, C. M. : Poravāḍa Vaṇikono Itihāsa, P. 42.

6. Jain, C. R. : Jain Law, P. 45.

7. अप्तां दशमे वर्षे स्त्रीप्रजां द्वादशे त्यजेत् ।

मृतप्रजां पञ्चदशे सत्यस्त्वप्रियवादिनीम् ॥ T. V. A., XI, 197.

8. Russel, R. V. : T. C. G. P., Vol. II, P. 123.

who is beautiful, fruitful, the cause of good luck, beloved and who joins in the performance of religious observances, one should not marry a second time.¹ That the second wife is not viewed with regard will be seen from the fact that the first wife of a man is termed Dharmapatni, the wife of status, or righteousness and the second wife Bhogapatni, i.e., the wife of pleasure.² This shows that more importance was attached to the first wife than the subsequent wives and that the monogamous marriage was preferred to the polygynous one. At present according to the state law bigamous marriages are prohibited in certain provinces and where such a law does not prevail, monogamy is the rule and polygyny the exception in the Jaina Community.

Though polygyny was allowed and practised by both Hindus and Jainas, there is a great difference in their outlook towards polygyny. From the point of view of the Hindu, beatitude, which is the main aim of man in this life, is obtainable through sons and grandsons and therefore a man should marry more than once in case the first marriage fails to promote its true object of begetting a male offspring.³ This main idea underlying the polygynous system among the Hindus is completely absent among the Jainas as the salvation, which is the main aim of a Jaina in this life, does not depend, according to Jainism, on having sons and grandsons. Hindus practise polygyny as it is sanctioned or ordained by religion; while in the practice of polygyny among the Jainas there is no religious motive at all. The religious element in marriage and therefore the necessity of having a male issue were so strong among the Hindus that, besides adoption, they followed the practice of appointing a widow to a relative with a view to beget a son for the deceased.⁴ To die without a son was regarded as a great spiritual calamity, and it was the sacred duty

1. सुरूपां सुप्रज्ञां चैव सुभगामारमनः प्रियाम् ।

यर्मातुचारिणीं भार्या न त्यजेद्गृहसदृशी ॥ T. V. A., XI, 190.

2. Jain, C. R.: Jain Law, P. 216.

3. Valavalkar, P. H.: Op. cit., P. 193.

4. Kapadia, K. M.: Hindu Kinship, P. 92.

of a brother to see that a son was raised on his sister-in-law to perpetuate his brother's memory and to ensure him a seat in heaven.¹ This custom of allowing a sonless widow to have a son from a near relative of her deceased husband was known as Niyoga (or levirate). As male issues do not count at all for the salvation of a Jaina, it is obvious that the custom of Niyoga was not observed by the Jainas in ancient times.

11. DISSOLUTION OF WEDLOCK

When the parties enter the marital union they do so with a view to remain in it for a considerable period of time. The marital relations are regarded more or less durable and this durability really distinguished marital relations from other ordinary sexual relations. The ideal of marriage in India is that the marital bond should of necessity be permanent and that the dissolution of wedlock should not be allowed. Marriage means constant adjustment of relations between husband and wife and it is likely that the expected compatibility between the partners may not be realised in full or in part during the marital life. Though marriage is conceived as a permanent union, still after entering the union certain circumstances arise which go against the purpose of marriage and thus some provisions have to be made to dissolve the wedlock under specific conditions. The Jaina scriptures declare that if after the marriage has taken place either of the couple finds any defect in the other within the time prescribed for honeymoon and complains of it, then that marriage is null and void and the bride is free to marry again.² Further, it has been ordained by the Jaina law-givers that a wife is allowed to marry another person under the following five circumstances and after taking the consent of the Caste Pañchayata (i. e. elderly people) and of the government, viz., if the husband becomes a sinner, or an ascetic, or an impotent person, if he dies, and if no information is available regarding his where-

1. Altekar, A. S.: Position of Woman in Hindu Civilisation, P. 169.

2. T. V. A., XI, 171-173.

about.¹ Similarly, according to the Hindus there are five cases of legal necessity wherein the wife is allowed to marry a second husband; she may take a second husband, if the first is lost or dead or becomes an ascetic or is impotent or is expelled from the caste.²

Female chastity is the key-note of marriage in India and hence a woman is expected to preserve her chastity not only during the life-time of her husband but even after his death. That is why the marriage of widows was not generally favoured in ancient India.³ The remarriage of widows is in general not accepted by Hindus in their Smritis,⁴ and widow re-marriages disappeared almost completely from Hindu society from about 1,100 A. D.⁵ In earlier Jaina literature not a single instance of widow marriage can be traced. But from the medieval times widow-marriage was allowed and practised by the Jainas in South India.⁶ In this connection Mr. C. R. Jain observes that⁷ though there is no instance to be found of widow-remarriage in the Jaina Purāṇas, still no clear direction is found in the scriptures in this matter, either sanctioning or prohibiting such marriages. In the Trivarnikāchāra certain observances are made which suggest that there might have been in existence the practice of widow-remarriage among Jainas. It is stated that a woman whose middle toe does not touch the ground, will not go to any third person after two; and that the girl whose Anāmikā, i. e., the toe next to the little toe, does not touch the ground, will

1. Phattelalaji : Op. cit., P. 3.

2. नष्टे मृते प्रवर्जिते कलीबे च पतिते पतौ ।
पंचस्वाप्तसु नारीणां पतिरम्बो विधीयते ॥

quoted by Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., p. 99.

3. Jain, J. C. : Op. cit., P. 162.

4. Valavalkar, P. H. : Op. cit., P. 190.

5. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., P. 183.

6. (i) Jain, K. P. : Op. cit., P. 152.

(ii) Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. II, pp. 90-92.

7. Jain, C. R. : Jain Law, P. 43.

devour two husbands.¹ The Conference of Svetāmbara Sthānakavāsi Jaina ascetics held on 7-4-1933 declared that Jaina religion is not concerned with the question of widow-remarriage and the caste customs determine whether to allow widow-remarriage or not.² From these it can be concluded that the question concerning the validity of the re-marriage of a widow can only be decided according to the local custom. Among the Jainas of Gujarātha widow remarriage is in general neither allowed nor practised at present. But during the 13th century it might have been generally observed as the King Aśvarāja was married to a child-widow, Kumāradevī, and out of this wedlock were born the two famous Gujarātha ministers, viz., Vastupāla and Tejapāla.³ Among the Jaina Baniyās of the C. P. the remarriage of widows is nominally prohibited, but frequently occurs, and remarried widows are relegated to the inferior social groups in each sub-caste.⁴ In the Hyderabad Dominion only some members of Saitavāla and Bogāra castes allow widows to marry again and such marriages are attended by inferior rites.⁵ It is learnt that in South Kanara one Bhāttāraka, i.e., religious head of the Jainas, started the practice of widow-remarriage and now it is followed by some Jainas without any fear of ex-communication.⁶ In poorer sections of the Chaturtha, Pañchama, Kāsāra and Saitavāla castes of Jainas in the Deccan widow-remarriage is the prevalent custom.⁷ In the Southern India a Jaina woman marries only once, in life and if her husband dies when she is young, she must remain a widow as long as she lives.⁸

1.

परेऽपि मध्यमा यस्याः क्षिति न स्पृशति यदि ।
द्वौ पूरुषावतिक्रम्य सा तुतीये न गच्छति ॥
यस्या स्वनमिका वहस्वा तां विदुः कलहवियाम् ।
भूमिं न स्पृशते यस्याः खादते सा पतिद्वयम् ॥ T. V. A., XI, 20 & 24.

2. Jaina Jagat, Vol. 8, No. 14, P. 1.

3. Dalal, C. M. : op. cit., P. 42.

4. Russell, R. V. : T. C. C. P., Vol. II, P. 123.

5. Hassan : T. C. N. D., pp. 256-272.

6. Vide J. H., Vol. 12, pp. 292-303.

7. Jaina Jagat, Vol. 8, No. 5, p. 27.

8. Asiatic Researches, Vol. IX, p. 251.

The question of divorce is intimately connected with that of dissolution of wedlock. Divorce is the demand by one of the partners to the marital union to be allowed to break the bond of marriage. All things cannot be foreseen before marriage and there is considerable element of chance. Hence the demand to cut asunder the marital tie is more commonly put forward when people do not find their mates in the relation that they had thought or imagined that they would be.¹ As the possibility of marital relations getting strained always remains, it is the duty of social law-givers to make provision of divorce under specific conditions so that maximum of conjugal happiness could be ensured for every person. Though like early Christianity, Hinduism also held that the marriage union was indissoluble, still if we carefully examine the earlier Dharma-śāstra literature, we find that divorces were permitted under certain well defined circumstances. Kautilya, while giving detailed rules of divorce for the couples who found it impossible to live with each other, expressly declares that marriages consecrated according to the Brāhma, Daiva, Ārsha and Prājapati forms cannot be dissolved at all.² It has been noticed above that Hindus have given permission to a wife to re-marry under the five cases of legal necessity and it can be said that this permission clearly presupposes the possibility of divorce from the earlier marriage.³ As the same circumstances are prescribed by Jaina law-givers for remarriage of a woman, it appears that divorce was allowed by the Jainas under specific conditions. It should be remembered that as the Jaina religion is not concerned with marriage, like other customs connected with the institution of marriage, the rules regarding divorce are governed by local customs. It can be said that in general the custom of granting divorce is not observed under any circumstances by practically all Jaina castes except to a little extent by the castes of Bogārā and Saitavāla. Divorce is permitted among the Bogāras on the ground of the wife's unchastity, barrenness

1. Sumner and Keller : Op. cit., Vol. III, p. 1839.

2. Valavalkar, P. H. : Op. cit., p. 190.

3. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., p. 99.

or ill-temper. Such divorced wives remarry by the same rites as widows. Divorce is recognised among the Saitavālas and divorced wives marry by inferior rites.¹

12. THE POSITION OF WOMAN

The general attitude of men towards women was not consistent in its approach. In Jaina literature we come across several statements which either denounce or praise the female sex. Naturally in each case a certain view is expressed about women after taking into account their actions in particular circumstances and accordingly a generalisation is made about their good or bad character and their healthy or evil influence and the extent to which freedom may be given to them in various sorts of activities. Thus it is said about the women that they are faithless, ungrateful, treacherous, untrustworthy and strict control must be kept over them. In the voice of Manu the Jaina texts state that a woman, when a child must be kept under the control of her father, when married under her husband and when a widow under her son; thus a woman is never allowed to live independently.² In connection with the thoughts of a woman the Pārvanātha Charitra of Bhāvadeva Sūri says that 'the wise ones know how much sand there is in the Ganges, and how much water in the ocean, they know the dimensions of a great mountain,—but the thoughts of a woman they cannot fathom'.³ Free and careless association with the inmates of the harem is considered to be a source of danger to the king. It is stated that the entrance of a king into the house of a woman is like the entrance of a frog into a serpent's hole.⁴ Several instances are given to illustrate how kings are sometimes assassinated by women with devices of their own.⁵ As regards the duty of men towards women the former are advised

1. Hassan : T. C. N. D., pp. 256-272.

2. Jain, J. C. : Op. cit, p. 152.

3. Winternitz : History of Indian Literature, Vol. II, p. 575.

4. Vide, ददूरस्य संपूर्णप्रवेश इव र्वीयुद्धप्रवेशो राज्ञः । N. V., 24, 31.

5. Handiqui, K. K. : Yasastilaka and Indian Culture, pp. 104-105.

that it is always risky to educate the latter too much.¹ Further, we are told that women may have freedom as much as they like in the discharge of their duties towards their husbands and children, but must not interfere in matters which properly belong to men's sphere, their minds being extremely fickle and superficial, like a drop of water on a lotus leaf. No one who accepts the participation of woman in activities other than domestic duties can thrive for long, being like a tree fallen into the current of a river. And it is under a man's control that a woman achieves her desired end, like a sword in the grip of a man². Āchārya Amitagati's Subhāshitaratnasandoha, which is considered important from the point of view of Jaina ethics, treats the female body as a sum of all impurity and hence in its opinion the woman is 'the treasury of all sufferings,' 'the bolt barring the city of heaven, the path to the dwelling of hell,' 'the axe for the pleasant grove of piety, the hoar-frost for the lotus of virtues, the root of the tree of sins, the soil for the creeper of deceit,' etc.³ In contradiction to the above statements we also find that a woman is counted among fourteen jewels of a Chakravarti. Many stories of devoted and chaste wives are told. Women were highly regarded and it is prescribed that at the time of difficulty such as caused by water, fire, robbers or famine, a woman must be rescued first.⁴ While comparing the physical and intellectual qualities of men and women it has been declared in emphatic terms that women are superior to men in intellectual activity.⁵ As regards the relative

1. Vide, नातीव खियः व्युत्पादनीयाः स्वभावसुभगोऽपि शास्त्रोपदेशः

खीपु, शक्तीपु पयोङ्गव इव विषमतां प्रतिपथते । N.V., 24, 43

2. Handiqui, K. K.: Op. cit., p. 105. Similar statements are made by the same author, Āchārya Somadeva, in his *Nītivākyāmṛtam*.

“अपत्यपोषणे गृहकर्मणि शरीरसंकारे ।

शरीरावसरे खीणां स्वातंत्र्यं नान्यत्र ।” 24, 39.

“खीदशतुर्षो नदीप्रवाहापातितपःदध्-इ न चिरं नमदति ।” 24, 41.

“तुरुषमुचित्स्था खी खद्गयच्छिरिव कमुत्सवं न जनयति ।” 24, 42

3. Winternitz: Op. cit., Vol. II, pp. 562-563.

4. Jain, J. C.: Op. cit., p. 154.

5. Handiqui, K. K.: Op. cit., p. 106.

characteristics of women, Āchārya Somadeva, as a practical thinker, gives his judgement in *Nītivākyāmṛtam* that women are neither good nor bad: they are, like the cream of milk, the source of poison as well as nectar, and that women have neither any innate merit nor blemish, but become just like their husbands, as rivers assume the character of the ocean when they are merged therein.¹ This view is, it seems, more balanced and depicts the real position in society. In connection with the various harsh remarks made about women it should, however, be noted that such remarks do not find general acceptance in society and they are made with a view to blacken the character of women in order to warn the lustful monks to keep aloof from feminine charms that might overcome their reason.² That is why remarks like "Striyo hi vishamam Visham", i. e., women are indeed the worst of poisons, are made while advising the ascetics to abstain from the desire of women.³ Moreover the injunctions given to the Kings to avoid company of women should be considered in relation to what is called Rājarakshā or protection of Kings and they appear to be in keeping with the precautions against familiarity with women recommended as a measure of self-defence.⁴ With these ideas about women let us see their religious, social, political and legal position.

Religious Position:

We have already seen that the followers of Jaina religion have been divided into four categories, viz., Sādhūs, Sādhvis,

1. "सर्वाः खियः क्षीरोऽवला इव विषमृतस्थानम् ।"
"न क्षीणां सहजो गुणो दीपो वासित
किञ्चनु नयः समुद्रामेव याहृशं गतिम्
आमुदवन्ति ताङ्गयो भवन्ति खियः ।" 24, 10 and 25.

2. Jain, J. C.: Op. cit., p. 153.

3. See कण्ठस्थः कालकूटोऽपि शम्भोः किमपि नाकरोत् ।
सोऽपि दन्दशते खीभिः खियो हि विषम् विषम् ॥

S. B. J., Vol. VII, A. S., 135 and 129-131.

4. Handiqui, K. K.: Op. cit., p. 106.

Śrāvakas and Śrāvikās.¹ Sādhvīs are female ascetics who follow the five great vows in a very strict manner. This shows that complete freedom was given to women to enter the ascetic order. Female sex was no bar to the practice of asceticism. The Jaina Āchāryas were extremely sympathetic in their attitude to women and admitted them freely into their order, no matter whether the candidates for admission were royal consorts, members of the aristocracy, and women belonging to the common run of society.² It is but natural that many ladies availed themselves of this opportunity of achieving their salvation by entering into the ascetic order. We read in the Kalpa Sūtra that 3,000 female ascetics realised the goal of emancipation under the inspiration of Neminātha, the 22nd Tīrthaṅkara, and later during the days of Pārvanātha, the 23rd Tīrthaṅkara, as many as 20,000 nuns obtained the supreme state of liberation whereas only 1,000 male ascetics in the same time were entitled to that exalted position.³ The number of female ascetics gradually went on increasing and we find that in the time of Mahāvīra, the 24th Tīrthaṅkara, the number of Sādhvīs was 36,000.⁴ Though the females were given a place along with the males in the ascetic order of Jaina community, uniform rules were not imposed upon both the sexes during different stages of ascetic order. So far as the preparatory period of the monastic life was concerned, women were not denied any particular privilege enjoyed by men. Female and male ascetics had to follow the same rules of conduct in matters like begging, wandering, sleeping, offering prayers, etc.⁵ But in general we notice that nuns were placed under a more rigorous discipline than monks. They are prohibited to study the chapters of Mahāparijñā and Aruṇopapāta and the Dṛṣṭivāda. It is stated that the Dṛṣṭivāda deals with the magical formulae and as women are not strong enough but fickle-minded, they are

1. See page 48 ante.

2. Dasgupta : Jain System of Education, p. 43.

3. Jacobi, H. : S. B. E., XXII, Kalpa Sutra, VII.

4. See page 48 ante.

5. Indra, M. A. : Status of Women in Ancient India, p. 303.

not allowed to study the above mentioned scripture. The climax is reached in the rules which lay down that a monk of 3 years' practice can become a teacher of a nun of 30 years' practice and a monk of 5 years' practice can become an Āchārya of a nun of 60 years' practice.¹ In this connection it may be observed that Jainism was not alone to place nuns under a more rigorous discipline than monks. Buddhism also levied strict restrictions on nuns as compared with the monks. Thus the admission of a new nun was to be sanctioned by a joint meeting of the monks and nuns; new monks, however, could be admitted without consulting the nuns at all. Nuns were to go out to beg only when led by an experienced matron. Further, it has been laid down that a nun, though 100 years old, must stand in reverence before a monk though he may be just initiated in the Church.² Though rigorous discipline was imposed by Jainism, along with Buddhism, still all rules were, however, not followed in practice. According to rules nuns could under no circumstances preach to monks but we know that Sadhvī Rājimati delivered a stirring sermon to Rathānemi, when the latter had lost self-control under the influence of tempting circumstances.³ Thus we can say that the religious status of a Jaina woman was not inferior to that of a Jaina man. Jainism declared that womanhood was no bar to salvation. A woman could attain the highest religious state, i.e., Tirthankarhood in exceptional circumstances; for the Jainas believe that very few women indeed have sufficient strength of mind and body to endure the hard life of an ascetic. They say that while not more than 20 women in the old days used to attain perfection, 108 males used to do so. Malli, although a woman, we are told, rose to the status of a Tirthankara. Further, we hear of a large number of women in the history of Jainas who distinguished themselves as teachers and preachers.⁴

1. Jain, J. C. : Op. cit., p. 153.

2. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., p. 247.

3. ibid, p. 248.

4. (i) Jain, J. C. : Op. cit., p. 154.

(ii) Indra M. A. : Op. cit., pp. 301-302.

Social Status:

Religion and society are closely bound together in Indian life, and the former influences the social life of a people to a great extent. The religious independence given to Jaina women had its repercussions in the social field also. Equality of opportunity accorded to women in the religious sphere was manifest in several social spheres of action. In ancient times almost in all patriarchal societies the birth of a girl was an unwelcome event and this gave rise to practices like the female infanticide and neglect of female children. The custom of infanticide of girls crept into some sections of Hindu society during the medieval period and at the time of the advent of the British rule in India the evil custom was confined to a microscopic minority in Hindu society.¹ As the whole Jaina philosophy is based on the main principle of Ahimsā or non-injury to living beings, it could not be expected at all that female infanticide might have been practised in Jaina society at any time. Similarly, we do not find that female children were purposefully neglected even though they might have been regarded as a burden on the family. We have already seen that the female wastage in the Jaina community is considerably low as compared with the female wastage from whatever causes in other communities.² According to Jaina Law the unmarried daughters and

(iii) Stevenson, S.: Heart of Jainism, p. 169.

(iv) Salestore, B. A.: Medieval Jainism, Chap. V. Women as Defenders of the Faith.

(v) Jain, K. P.: Some Historical Jain Kings & Heroes, Chap. 16 Jain Heroines.

(vi) Law, B. C.: "Distinguished men and women in Jainism", Indian Culture, Vol. II, pp. 669-684.

The Digambaras, however, do not share this belief. They maintain that a woman can reach moksha but not in this life. For they she will have to take rebirth as a man. Accordingly the Digambaras maintain that Mallinātha, the 19th Tīrthaṅkara, was a man and not a woman. For the reason why Digambaras definitely closed the doors of salvation against women please refer to Sharma: Jainism and Karnataka Culture, p. 138.

1. Altekar, A. S.: Op. cit., pp. 9-10.

2. See page 12 ante.

sisters are entitled to maintenance out of the family property and the expenditure on their marriage must be met from the same source. Further, in the absence of the father, the guardianship of the younger sisters upto the time of their marriage devolves on their elder brothers.¹ The females were not only spiritually and physically not neglected, but in education also they were given equal treatment with the males from the very beginning. During the period of the ascendancy of the Jainas in India, it is patent that the family, the church, the school and the state served as powerful agents for the spread of education among women.² The first Tirthankara, Lord Rshabhadeva, realised the utmost importance of imparting education to females and advised his two young daughters, Brähmi and Sundari that "only when you would adorn yourself with education your life would be fruitful because just as a learned man is held in high esteem by educated persons, a learned lady also occupies the highest position in the female world."³ Both the girls were first initiated to writing by their father and later on with the help of teachers they studied all branches of knowledge to such an extent that they could be regarded as incarnations of Sarasvati, the Goddess of Learning.⁴ According to Jaina works a woman is expected to know 64 arts like dancing, painting, music, aesthetics, medicine, domestic science, etc.⁵ As a result of this high type of education received by women, many women used to enter the teaching profession and to remain unmarried throughout the life in order to carry on

1. Jain, C. R. : Jain Law, pp, 95 and 130.

2. Dasgupta : Jain System of Education, p. 58.

3. इदं वृत्त्यर्थेदमिदं शीलमनीतुशम् । विद्यया चेद्विभूष्येत सफलं जन्म वामिदम् ॥ विद्यावान्पुरुषो लोके सम्मतिं याति कोविदैः । नारी च तदृती पते स्त्रीसृष्टेरपिमं पदम् ॥ Ädi Puräpa, XVI, 97-98.

4. (i) अथेनयोः पद्मानदीपिकाभिः प्रकाशिताः । कलाविद्यात् निःशेषाः स्वयं पारिणाति यतुः ॥

इतेऽप्यधीतनिःशेषविद्ये ते गुरुंतुप्यहात् । वाग्देवतावताराय कन्ये पात्रत्वमीपतुः ॥ Ädi Puräpa, XVI, 116-117.

(ii) T. S. P. O., Vol. I, p. 153.

5. Kapadia, H. R.: "Jain System of Education", Journal of University of Bombay, Vol. 8, part 4, pp. 201-202.

their spiritual experiments unhampered. The Jaina tradition has preserved the memory of Jayanti, a daughter of king Sahastrika of Kausambi, who remained unmarried out of her love for religion and philosophy. When Mahavira first visited Kausambi, she discussed with him several abstruse metaphysical questions and eventually became a nun.¹ It is a fact that the cause of women's education in India suffered a good deal after about 300 B. C. on account of the new fashion of child-marriage that then began to come into vogue.² Accordingly, the female education among Jainas declined and at present the male literacy is five times than the female literacy in the Jaina community. Still the position of the Jaina females is decidedly better than that of the females as a whole in India and in the extent of literacy Jaina ladies stand next to Parsee, Jew and Christian ladies.³ The Jaina women not only kept up the pace of female education but at times made original contribution to literature. Along with men Jaina women also added to Kannada literature. The greatest name among them was Kanti who, along with Abhinava Pampa, was one of the gems that adorned the Court of Hoysala King Ballala I (A. D. 1100–1106). She was a redoubtable orator and a poet who completed the unfinished poems of Abhinava Pampa in the open court of that ruler.⁴ Similarly, a Jaina lady Avvaiyara, 'the Venerable Matron', was one of the most admired amongst the Tamil poets.⁵

Of all the important events in the life of a woman, marriage is the most singular one. When a woman enters the institution of marriage she is called upon, in course of time, to rear and bring up the next generation. This makes her condition more precarious and of necessity she has to depend for the time being on the help-

1. Altekar, A. S.: *Op cit.*, p. 15.

2. *Ibid.*, p. 18.

3. See page 23 ante.

4. (i) Salellore, B. A.: *Medieval Jainism*, p. 266;

(ii) Sharma, S. R.: *op. cit.*, p. 101.

(iii) Rice, E. P.: *History of Kanarese Literature*, p. 36.

5. Stevenson, S.: *Heart of Jainism*, p. 287.

and co-operation of her partner. Inequality of sex is the most obvious fact of the societal situation and the weaker sex has to adjust itself with the stronger one. The fate of a woman is, therefore, determined by her position in various aspects of marriage. A well devised marriage will give her the desired protection, otherwise there is every possibility that her life would be ruined. Marriage, thus, occupies an important place in the consideration of the social status of women. Though marriage, according to Jainas, is more in the nature of a civil contract and completely bereft of religious necessity, yet it was made obligatory for all persons, men and women, by the Jaina law-givers. Those who do not wish to follow the life of renunciation and asceticism from an early age were advised to get married. Marriage was made equally compulsory for both women and men. Out of the eight forms of marriage the most prevalent forms of marriage in Jaina community at present are the Brâhma or Prâjapatya. There is no marked distinction between these two forms of marriage and they can perhaps be considered one and the same. It has been observed that this marriage is contracted without any exchange of money and the bride is given by her father as a gift to the bridegroom. To give away a daughter to the best available bridegroom out of sole regard for her happiness without receiving any consideration whatsoever recorded a marked ethical advance¹ and definitely helped in making the status of both the parties equal. As regards the age of marriage in Jaina community we have noticed that in ancient times marriage was recommended only for grown-up persons; that the age-limit was lowered in medieval times and that at present adult marriage is the order of the day. In this respect it can be said that these are the very stages through which the Hindus also have passed.² The part to be played by a bride in the settlement of her marriage depends on the age of the bride at the time of marriage. As the child-marriage was not favoured by Jaina law-givers, it could be maintained that the brides have a more or less effective voice, in the selection of their partners in life. That is why the

1. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., p. 56.

2. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., pp. 62-75.

Svayamvara form of marriage was considered as the ancient and the best form of marriage.¹ While determining the qualifications of parties to the marital union utmost care was taken to see that a bride was given to a person who was free from all sorts of bodily deformities and diseases and endowed with virtues and good family connections. In the married life sufficient importance is given to the wife for the valuable role she plays in bringing family happiness. A wife is regarded as the keystone of the arch of the happiness of the home. It is emphatically said that a compound of brick and mortar does not make a home but the wife who follows the family traditions constitutes a home.² In the domestic sphere she wielded all powers and was regarded as the presiding mistress of the house. It will be noticed from Mahāpurāṇa, Śāntipurāṇa, Padmapurāṇa, Harivamśapurāṇa and other Purāṇas that when the queens used to visit the Durbars, the kings themselves used to welcome them by standing and to allow them to sit by their side on the thrones.³ Even though polygyny was allowed, monogamy was the rule and polygyny the exception. As only a small, rich and ruling section of the society followed polygyny, there was no general deterioration in the position of a woman. With a view to counteract illicit relations complete fidelity between husband and wife was regarded as the ideal of married life and for that purpose at the time of entering the householder's stage both the husband and wife have to take a vow of not keeping extra conjugal sexual relations.⁴ In spite of the various precautions, if the married life does not become successful, the dissolution of wedlock is permitted under specific circumstances and the wife is allowed to contract another marriage. This means that divorce was allowed under

1. See page 151 ante.

2. Vide, (i) युद्धे दि गृहिणीमातृन् कुलपक्टसंहतिम् । S. D., 2,59.

(ii) गृहिणी गृहसुच्यते न पुनः कुलपक्टसंवातः । N. V., 31,31.

3. See Jaina Mahilādārī Paurāṇika Jaina Mahilā Āṅka, Vol. 28, No. 1, p. 6.

4. Mukhtar, J. K.: Vivāhakā Uddesya, p. 6. This vow is known as Svadārasantosha or Svabhartisantushṭi.

certain conditions. In fact the practices of divorce and widow re-marriage were governed by local customs and to that extent the position of woman in this respect varied from place to place. When a woman becomes a widow, she is placed in a precarious condition and the treatment accorded to her has an important bearing on her social position. The lot of the widow helps to find out the attitude of society towards women as a class. The first question to be dealt in connection with a widow was whether she was allowed to survive her husband, or she was compelled to die with him. Hindus adopted the policy of sacrificing the wife at the husband's death right from 300 B. C. upto 1829 A. D. when the custom of sati was prohibited by law.¹ Contrary to this we do not find any instance of self-immolation or the custom of sati in Jaina texts. There is only one stray reference in the Mahānisīha where a widowed daughter of a certain king wanted to perform sati, but she refrained from doing so as that custom was not in vogue in her father's family.² From the Epigraphia Carnatica we find that there were 41 cases of Satis during the period of 1400 to 1600 A. D. and out of these two belonged to the Jainas. This shows that some Jainas had by that time begun to feel that they ought not to lag behind the Hindus in this matter,³ but it is clear that this feeling did not find general acceptance in the Jaina community as the number of Jaina satis was far less than that of Hindu satis. Apart from self-immolation there were three courses open for widows in ancient times. They could either pass their remaining life in widowhood, or have some children by levirate (niyoga), or remarry regularly. The second course was not prescribed by the Jainas; the third course was regulated by local customs and in all probability was adopted by a very small section and, therefore, the first course, which was considered more honourable, was open to the Jaina widows. As the full religious freedom was allowed to females, widow could devote their time for their spiritual upliftment and thus carves out

1. Altekar, A. S.: Op. cit., pp. 140 and 166.

2. Jain, J. C.: Op. cit., p. 163.

3. Altekar, A. S.: Op. cit., p. 163.

a respectable position for them in their family and in the minds of people in general. It will be presently shown that her legal position was better because she inherited the property of her deceased husband and hence could pass her widowhood without any serious economic difficulty. Further, Jaina widows were free from the ugly custom of tonsure followed by the Hindu widows from about 1200 A. D. Among Jainas only nuns are used to be shaved and it is suggested that this practice might have given rise to the custom of the tonsure of widows in the Hindu society.¹

The above discussion is sufficient for giving us a general idea of the social position of a Jaina woman. In conclusion it can be said that inspite of traditional practices of early marriage and widowhood persisting in the Jaina community, the granting of religious independence to women had very healthy repurcussions on their social status. Thus, they commanded voice in their family affairs and wielded uncommon influence in the shaping of their children's destiny. Moreover, they enjoyed many legal rights of inheritance and possession of property and had ample opportunity of managing their domestic business independently.²

Political Status :

The question whether women were allowed to take part in political activities depends on the question whether women could come out in public and move freely in society. From the Jaina texts we find that women appeared in the public without any restriction. They could go out to visit their friends and relations. Many women are seen going to shrines for worship and gathering on the occasion of various festivals.³ There was nothing like Purdah system among ancient Jaina women. The Purdah system was generally adopted by the Hindu community after the advent of Muslim rule. This was more in vogue in the Northern than in the Southern India and now it is found only in some rich and aristocratic families especially in Rajputana. The same can be said about the Jaina community. Even at present the ladies of Osavāla

1. Altekar, A. S. : Op. cit., p. 190.

2. Indra, M. A. : Op. cit., p. 308.

3. Jain, J. C. : Op., cit. P. 163.

caste necessarily observe the Purdah and high position is accorded to families according to the strictness with which they follow the Purdah system.¹

In ancient times women were never thought fit for any other sphere than the household life and the intricate questions of administration and government were held to be beyond their comprehension.² But it could be seen that in times of need women did rise to the occasion and held important positions in the political sphere from the very beginning.³ We find similar instances in the history of Jaina community also. In ancient Jaina texts we come across women dressed in man's attire, putting on armour, equipped with weapons, arms, shields, bows and arrows and there are examples when women actually fought battles.⁴ In the first quarter of the 10th century A. D. figures a remarkable Jaina woman administrator, Jakkiyabbe, and it is stated that she was skilled in ability for good government, and protected the Nāgarakhaṇḍa 70 (a name of a place).⁵ It is recorded that a Jaina lady Savyabbe accompanied her husband on horse-back to the battlefield and fell fighting in the battle of Bagiyur.⁶ It appears from Epigraphia Carnatica that the office of Nādagauḍa, an important rural official, was held by a Jaina women. An inscription dated 918 A.D. shows that a Jaina widow was a Nādagauḍa and was distinguished for the skill and ability of her management. It states that though a woman she well protected her charge, with pride in her own heroic bravery.⁷ In the 16th century A. D. when the Jaina queen Bhairavadevi, while ruling over the kingdom of Gerosoppe, was attacked by the neighbouring Śaiva Saradāra, she faced the enemy bravely and defeated him in the battle.⁸

1. Vide Osavīla Jātikā Itihāsa, Appendix, p. 7.

2. Indra, M. A.: Op. cit., p. 178.

3. Altekar, A. S.: Op. cit., pp. 218-228.

4. Jain, J. C.: Op. cit., p. 163.

5. Salefore, B. A.: Medieval Jainism, p. 155.

6. Hiralal : Jaina-Śilālekha-Samgraha, p. 146.

7. Epigraphia Carnatica, Vol. VII, p. 219.

8. Jain, K. P. : Some Historical Jain Kings and Heroes, p. 104.

Legal Status :

Under the Jaina Law not only men but women also have always had their maintenance and property rights. A Jaina person's regard for the female sex does not admit of his sending out the female members of his family to work among men. All women fall in one of the two categories—daughters and wives. They are either born in the family, and are its daughters, or have been brought into it by marriage, in which case they are wives. Maintenance must always be provided for both classes of women by the male members of the family; and it must be adequate and ample.¹ A woman is allowed to have her special property known as *Stridhana*. *Stridhana* thus denotes property over which a woman is allowed to have her own more or less absolute sway in normal times. According to Jaina Law the following kinds of property are termed *Stridhana*.

1. The *Adhyagnikṛta* (whatever is given in the presence of the sacred fire) i. e. to say ornaments, etc. which are received by a girl from her parents at the time of her marriage.
2. The *Adhyāhavanika* (that which is brought) is what the young bride brings from her father's house in the presence of her father and brothers.
3. The *Pṛitudāna* (given with affection) i. e. things given by the father-in-law and the mother-in-law at the time of marriage.
4. The *Audāyika* (or *Saudāyika*) i. e. whatever is received after the marriage from the parents or the husband.
5. The *Anvādheya* comprising things received from the ladies of her own or of the husband's household at the time of marriage.

Briefly put, whatever is received at the time of the marriage by the bride is all her *Stridhana*. And after the marriage all the clothes and ornaments given to her by her own people or the members of her father-in-law's family are also regarded as *Stridhana*. The *Stridhana* is not liable to division at a partition,

1. Jain, C. R.; *Jain Culture*, p. 60.

like the ancestral property and except during a famine or for religious necessities nobody can take the *Stridhana*, not even the husband.¹ Hindu jurists also have expressly declared that the husband has no right to lay his hands upon the *Stridhana* of his wife except in times of great distress (with a view) to tide over the difficulty.²

As a daughter also, a Jaina woman enjoyed ample proprietary rights. If a man had only a daughter and other male issue was non-existent, that daughter became the sole owner of the wealth of her father. For the daughter, like a son, is one's own self. The mother's property also went to the daughter whether she was married or unmarried. In the event of her father's death, daughter as a uterine sister of her brothers was entitled to a fourth part of the share of each brother. The share of a married daughter, however, in the property of the father in the presence of her brothers was nothing. Whatever the father gave her at the time of marriage, that only belonged to her.³

According to Jaina Law on the death of a person without a son, his widow takes her property, as an absolute owner, whether it be divided or undivided. Further, she takes the husband's share as an absolute owner even if there be a son.⁴ Herein lies the important difference between the Hindu Law and the Jaina Law. In accordance with the Hindu Law the son inherits the property of his deceased father and the widow is shown no consideration at all. The right of the widow to inherit her husband's property is not recognised by Hindu jurists.⁵ On the contrary a Jaina widow becomes the direct heir to the property of her deceased husband regardless of the fact whether she has got a son or not. The cause for showing favour to a widow in preference to her son in Jaina Law is not far to seek. The soul of the law of

1. (i) Jain, C. R.: *Jain Law*, pp. 47, 80-91.

(ii) Jaini, J. L.: *Jain Law*, pp. 50-52.

2. Altekar, A. S.: *Op. cit.*, p. 271.

3. (i) Indra, M. A.: *Op. cit.*, p. 309.

(ii) Jaini, J. L.: *Jain Law*, pp. 35-37.

4. Jain, C. R.: *Op. cit.*, pp. 80-81.

5. Altekar, A. S.: *Op. cit.*, p. 300.

Hindu inheritance is the 'Pindadāna' or offering of oblations by sons to their manes. Son, therefore, is the most important legal entity in the Hindu jurisprudence. That is why in all Hindu law books, son has been accorded a prior position to his widowed mother. In fact, male descendants have been treated with greater favour than female ones throughout the legal literature of the Hindus. On the other hand, the presence or absence of a son does not make a Jaina person spiritually meritorious or otherwise. Many of the Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras were son-less and yet they attained to the highest and the most supreme status; and many people descended into hells although they had sons. It is not the teaching of Jainism that a person can benefit the soul of another after his death by his own actions and presents. This knocks away the spiritual basis upon which the high position of the first son rests in the Hindu theory. Thus the first son as such has no exclusive or first right of succession in the Jaina Law. This is why a Jaina widow is acknowledged even as a preferential heir to her own son and is given the absolute ownership of the property left by her deceased husband.¹

Further, a Jaina widow, after acquiring the property of her husband, has more or less absolute and unrestricted power of enjoyment and disposition of that property. It has been stated that for her own maintenance as well as for making expenditure towards religious purposes and for the purposes of her community, a widow has power to spend her husband's wealth and also to sell his property.² She is at liberty to give her inherited property to any one she likes and cannot be stopped by any one except as regards the maintenance of small children. The son is left to amuse himself any way he pleases. This peculiarity of the Jaina Law is calculated to have a wonderful effect on the community. The son has got to please the mother, if he is to get anything from the paternal or maternal estate; for she excludes him from inheritance altogether, except as an heir to herself. She is further

1. (i) Indra, M. A.: Op. cit., p. 311.

(ii) Jain, C. R.: Jain Law pp. 19-20.

(iii) Jaini, J. L. pp. 116-117.

2. Indra, M. A.: Op. cit. p. 309.

empowered to make a will, and may also dispose of her property, by nontestamentary gifts, in her life-time. The son has, thus, got to think for himself, and learn how to earn, and to acquire pleasing manners, to captivate the heart of the mother.¹ This resulted in producing a very healthy effect on the character of sons. To invest the son with absolute ownership is to silence the mother's controlling voice effectively. The insignificant percentage of criminals among the Jainas,—the lowest as compared with other communities—is a glaring tribute to the wisdom of the Jaina Legislator.²

In short it can be maintained that so far as social and political position of woman was concerned, no material change occurred among Jaina women as compared with their Hindu sisters. As regards religious position of woman we can say with confidence that a yeoman service was rendered by Jaina Achāryas towards the suffering half of humanity by declaring open to it, all portals of the supreme spiritual domain and admitting it equally with the other half to the religious order for asceticism. In the sphere of law as well, they made definite contribution to the amelioration of the intolerable lot of bereaved widows who must have found some solace in the precepts of Jaina faith which gave them, to a certain extent, a place of honour and self-respect.³

1. Jain, C. R.: *Jain Culture*, pp. 59-60.

2. Jain, C. R.: *Jain Law*, p. 12.

3. (i) Indra, M A.: *Op. cit.*, p. 312.

(ii) Jain, C. R.: *Jain Culture*, p. 33.

CHAPTER FIVE

JAINA ETHICS AND MISCELLANEOUS
CUSTOMS AND MANNERS

1. INTRODUCTORY

In this chapter we propose to discuss the religious life of Jainas with special reference to its social aspect. Religion and social behaviour are so closely bound together that social life, customs and manners of a community could not be properly understood unless we take into account the religious beliefs held by that community. Religion not only states the highest goal to be achieved by its followers but lays down elaborate rules of conduct by observance of which the desired objective may be reached without fail. Philosophy and ethics are two important and significant aspects of religion. There is always a close relation between these two aspects in the sense that philosophy determines the nature of ethics and ethics tries to accomplish the basic principles enunciated by philosophy. In view of this intimate inter-relation between philosophy and ethics, we will first state in brief the main outlines of Jaina philosophy before we discuss the Jaina ethics in detail.

2. MEANING OF JAINISM

Jainism is a religion propounded by a '*Jina*'. Principles enunciated by a '*Jina*' constitute Jainism. A '*Jina*' is not a supernatural being nor an incarnation of an all powerful God. A '*Jina*' means a conqueror, that is, one who has conquered the worldly passions by one's own strenuous efforts. Human beings are entitled to become '*Jinas*' and as such '*Jinas*' are persons of this world who have attained supreme knowledge, subjugated their passions and are free from any sort of attachment. Jainism is nothing but a set of principles preached by such persons. Hence Jainism is not an *Apaurusheya* religion, i. e., a religion propounded by a non-human being or based on a sacred book of non-human

origin. On the contrary, it is a religion of purely human origin and it has emanated from the mouth of a dignitary who has secured the omniscience and self-control by his own personal efforts. In short, Jainism is the substance of preachings of dignitaries who have attained the state of 'Jinas'.¹

3. FUNDAMENTAL PRINCIPLES OF JAINISM

The fundamental principles of Jainism are considered to be as follows² :—

- (i) The first fundamental principle of Jainism is that man's personality is dual, that is, material and spiritual. Jaina philosophy regards that every mundane soul is bound by subtle particles of matter known as Karma from the very beginning. It considers that just as gold is found in an alloyed form in the mines, in the same way mundane souls are found along with the Karma-bondage from time eternal.³ The impurity of the mundane soul is thus treated as an existing condition.
- (ii) The second principle that man is not perfect is based on the first. The imperfection in man is attributed to the existence of Karma in his soul. The human soul is in a position to attain perfection and in that true and eternal state it is endowed with four characteristics, viz., *Anantadarśana*, *Anantajñāna*, *Anantavīrya* and *Anantasukha*, i. e., infinite perception or faith, infinite knowledge, infinite power and infinite bliss.
- (iii) Even though man is not perfect, the third principle states that by his spiritual nature man can and must control his material nature. It is only after the entire subjugation of matter that the soul attains perfection, freedom and happiness. It is emphatically maintained that man will be able to sail across the ocean of births and achieve perfection through the control of senses and thought.⁴

1. Kailasachandraji : *Jainadharma*, pp. 55-58.

2. Jaini, J. L. : *Outlines of Jainism*, pp. 1-4.

3. S. B. J., III, Pn. S., 27.

4. S. B. J., Vol. III, Pn. S., 157, 158 and 179.

(iv) The last basic principle stresses that it is only each individual that can scientifically separate his own soul and the matter combined with it. The separation cannot be effected by any other person. This means that man himself, and he alone, is responsible for all that is good or bad in his life. He cannot absolve himself from the responsibility of experiencing the fruits of his actions. This principle distinguishes Jainism from other religions, e. g., Christianity, Islam and Hinduism. No God, nor His prophet or deputy or beloved can interfere with human life. The soul, and that alone, is directly and necessarily responsible for all that it does. God is regarded as completely unconcerned with creation of the universe or with any happening in the universe. The universe goes on of its own accord. Because of this attitude towards God Jainism is accused of being atheistic. It is true in the sense that Jainism does not attribute the creation of universe to God. But at the same time Jainism cannot be labelled as atheistic because it believes in Godhood, in innumerable gods, in Puṇya and Pāpa, i. e., merit and demerit, in religious practices, etc. According to Jainism the emancipated soul is considered as God.¹

4. JAINA PHILOSOPHY

We have seen that every soul is capable of attaining perfection if it wilfully exerts in that direction. From time eternal the soul is bound with matter and it is the aim of every person to get the soul rid of matter so that soul can assume its true state. This spiritual emancipation requires the knowledge of the beatific condition and of the causes which stand in the way of its attain-

1. (i) Jaini, J. L. : *Outlines of Jainism*, pp. 4-5.
- (ii) Glasenapp : *Jainism*, pp. 218-226.
- (iii) Kailasachandraji : *Jainadharma*, pp. 101-119.
- (iv) H. Warren : *Jainism. Not Atheism*.
- (v) Bhattacharya, H : *Divinity in Jainism*, pp. 1-14,

ment. To find out these causes it is necessary to understand what are the existing elements or substances of nature and mode of their interaction. Jainism believes that the whole universe can be divided into two categories, viz., *jīva*, i. e., soul and *ajīva*, i. e., non-soul. These two exhaust between them all that exists in the universe and Jaina philosophy is based on the nature and interaction of these two elements. It can be said in short that the living and the non-living, by coming into contact with each other, forge certain energies which bring about birth, death and various experiences of life: this process could be stopped, and the energies already forged destroyed, by a course of discipline leading to salvation. A close analysis of this brief statement shows that it involves seven propositions: firstly, that there is something called the living; secondly, that there is something called the non-living; thirdly, that the two come into contact with each other; fourthly, that the contact leads to the production of some energies; fifthly, that the process of contact could be stopped; sixthly, that the existing energies could also be exhausted; and lastly, that salvation could be achieved. These seven propositions are called the seven *tattvas* or realities by the Jainas.¹ These *tattvas* are termed as follows:—

1. *Jīva* (living substance),
2. *Ajīva* (matter or non-living substance),
3. *Āsrava* (the influx of Karmic matter into the soul),
4. *Bandha* (bondage of soul by Karmic matter),
5. *Samvara* (the stopping of Āsrava),
6. *Nirjarā* (the gradual removal of Karmic matter), and
7. *Moksha* (the attainment of perfect freedom).

It is clear that the first two of the *tattvas* deal with the nature and enumeration of the eternal substances of nature, and the remaining five with the interaction between these two substances, viz., spirit and matter.² Much importance has been given to these *tattvas* as every would be aspirant for Moksha has to understand the nature of these *tattvas*. Out of these seven *tattvas* the substances are

1. (i) Dr. Hiralal Jain: *The Cul. H. I.*, Vol. I, p. 224.

(ii) H. Warren: *Jainism*, p. 51.

2. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., I. 4.

really two: soul and non-soul. Non-soul is all that is not soul, devoid of sentiency. Therefore the really sentient object is the soul.

(I) *Jīva*:

There is an infinite number of souls; the whole world is literally filled with them. The souls are substances and as such are eternal. Their characteristic mark is intelligence, which can never be destroyed. The soul is ever all perfect, all powerful. By ignorance it identifies itself with matter and hence all its troubles and degradation. Souls are of two kinds: mundane (*Samsārin*) and liberated (*Siddha* or *Mukta*). Mundane souls are the embodied souls of living beings in the world and still subject to the Cycle of Birth; liberated souls will be embodied no more; they have accomplished absolute purity; they dwell in the state of perfection at the top of the universe and have no more to do with worldly affairs; they have reached Nirvāpa (Nirvṛtti or Mukti). In their pure condition they have four enjoyments; those of unlimited perception, perfect knowledge, infinite power and unbounded happiness. Metaphysically the difference between the mundane and the liberated soul consists in this, that the former is permeated with subtle matter, while the latter is absolutely pure and free from any material alloy. In the impure state nine properties of the soul may be mentioned:—

- (i) *Jīvah*: It lived in the past, is living now and shall live for ever.
- (ii) *Upayogamayah*: It has perception and knowledge.
- (iii) *Amūrti*: It is immaterial, that is, has no touch, taste, smell or colour.
- (iv) *Kartā*: It is the only responsible agent of all its actions.
- (v) *Svadehaporimāṇah*: It completely fills the body which it occupies for example that of an ant or an elephant.
- (vi) *Bhoktā*: It enjoys the fruits of all its Karmas.
- (vii) *Samsārasthah*: It wanders in Samsāra.
- (viii) *Siddhah*: It can become in its perfect condition Siddha.
- (ix) *Urdhvagatih*: It has the tendency to go upwards.¹

1. (i) S. B. J. Vol. I, D. S., 2.

(ii) H. Jacobi : E. R. E. Vol. 7, p. 468.

The mundane or embodied souls are living beings, the classification of which is a subject not only of theoretical but also of great practical interest to the Jainas. As their highest duty is not to injure any living beings, it becomes incumbent on them to know the various forms which life may assume. The mundane souls are of two kinds : (i) ' *Samanaska*' those who have a mind, i. e., the faculty of distinguishing right or wrong and (ii) ' *Amanaska*' those who have no mind.¹

The mundane souls are of two kinds from another point of view : (A) *Sthāvara*, the immobile or one-sensed souls, that is, having only the sense of touch; and (B) *Trasa*, the mobiles, many-sensed souls, that is, having a body with more than one sense. Mobile souls are those which being in fear have the capacity of moving away from the object of fear. Immobile souls do not have this capacity. The immobile or one-sensed souls are of five kinds :—

- (i) *Pṛthvīkāya*, i. e., earth-bodied;
- (ii) *Apkāya*, i. e., water-bodied;
- (iii) *Tejahkāya*, i. e., fire-bodied;
- (iv) *Vāyukāya*, i. e., air-bodied; and
- (v) *Vanaspatikāya*, i. e., vegetable-bodied.

This Jaina belief that ' nearly everything is possessed of a soul ' has been characterised as animistic or hylozoistic by some scholars and therefore they regarded Jainism as a very primitive religion. But a careful study of Jaina scriptures shows that Jainism is not an animistic faith. As Jainism makes a clear distinction between soul and non-soul, it cannot be labelled as animism in the sense that ' every-thing is possessed of a soul '.²

There are in all five senses of touch, taste, smell, sight and hearing and therefore the mobile or many-sensed souls are classified accordingly into four classes : namely, into

- (i) those which have first two senses of touch and taste, for example, worms, etc.

1. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., II, 11.

2. Jain, J. C.: The Conception of Soul in Jainism, I. H. Q., Vol. II, pp. 140-141.

- (ii) those which have first three senses of touch, taste and smell, for example, ants, etc.
- (iii) those which have first four senses of touch, taste, smell and sight, for example, bumble-bee, etc.
- (iv) those which have five senses of touch, taste, smell, sight and hearing, for example, man, etc.

Thus each class has one sense more than the one preceding it.¹

From another point of view mundane beings are divided into four grades according to the place where they are born or their condition of existence. The forms of existence or '*Gatis*' are of four kinds:-

- (i) *Narakagati*, that is, hellish form,
- (ii) *Tiryag-gati*, that is, sub-human form,
- (iii) *Manushyagati*, that is, human form,
- (iv) *Devagati*, that is, celestial form.

Mundane beings are born in these four *Gatis* according to their merits or demerits. Jainism believes that for complete salvation, birth in the human form is essential and that those in other forms will attain salvation only after taking birth in the human form.²

(II) *Ajīva*:

Jaina philosophy starts with a perfect division of the universe into living and non-living substances, *Jīva* and *Ajīva*. The non-soul substances are of five kinds, namely, *Pudgala*, matter; *Dharma*, medium of motion; *Adharma*, medium of rest; *Ākāśa*, space; and *Kāla*, time. These six substances are called *Dravyas* in Jaina Philosophy. A *Dravya* has got three characteristics. First, *Dravya* has the quality of existence. Secondly, it has the quality of permanence through origination and destruction. Thirdly, it is the substratum of attributes and modes. The *Dravya* is thus uncreated and undestructible; its essential qualities

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S. II, 12-15, 19 and 23.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. V, G. S. Jīva Kāṇḍa, 73 and 75.

2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S. II, 6.

(ii) Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 218.

remain the same and it is only its *Paryāya* or mode or condition, that can and does change. Whatever is perceived by the senses, the sense organs themselves, the various kinds of bodies of *Jīvas*, the mind, the Karmas, and the other material objects—all these are known as *Pudgala* or matter. *Dharma* is the principle of motion, the accompanying circumstance or cause which makes motion possible. Just as water itself, being indifferent or neutral, is the condition of movement of fishes, so *Dharma*, itself non-motive, is the *sine qua non* of motion of *Jīvas* and *Pudgalas*. *Dharma* is conterminous with the universe and is one only unlike *Jīva* and *Pudgala* which are innumerable. *Adharma* or the principle of rest has all the characteristics associated with *Dharma*. But it is like the earth the *sine qua non* of rest for things in motion. What contains or accommodates completely all *Jīvas* and *Pudgalas* and the remaining *Dravyas* in the universe is termed as *Ākāśa* or space.¹ That which is the cause or circumstance of the modification of the soul and other *Dravyas* is *Kāla*, that is, time. It is immaterial and it has the peculiar attribute of helping the modification of the other substances. *Dharma*, *Adharma* and *Ākāśa* are each a single *Dravya*, whereas *Jīva*, *Pudgala* and *Kāla* are held to be innumerable *Dravyas*.²

(III) *Āśrava* :

The third principle *Āśrava* signifies the influx of Karmic matter, into the constitution of the soul. Combination of Karmic matter with *Jīva* is due to *Yoga*. *Yoga* is the activity of mind, speech and body. Thus *yoga* is the channel of *Āśrava*. The physical matter which is actually drawn to the soul cannot be perceived by the senses as it is very fine.³

(IV) *Bandha* :

When the Karmic matter enters the soul, both get imper-

-
1. In Jaina philosophy the term *Ākāśa* means space and not Ether as it is very often interpreted in other systems of Indian Philosophy.
 2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. III, Pn. S., 9-10, 89-92, 93, 97.
(ii) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., Chapter V.
 3. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VI, 1 and 2.
(ii) S. B. J., Vol. III, Pn; S., 155.

ceptibly mixed with each other. *Bandha* or bondage is the assimilation of matter which is fit to form Karmas by the soul as it is associated with passions. The union of spirit and matter does not imply a complete annihilation of their natural properties, but only a suspension of their functions, in varying degree, according to the quality and quantity of the material absorbed. Thus, the effect of the fusion of the spirit and matter is manifested in the form of a compound personality which partakes of the nature of both, without actually destroying either. The causes of *Bandha* are as follows:—

1. *Mithyādarśana*, i. e., wrong belief or faith,
2. *Avirati*, i. e., vowlessness or non-renunciation,
3. *Pramāda*, i. e., carelessness,
4. *Kashāya*, i. e., passions, and
5. *Yoga*, i. e., vibrations in the soul through mind, speech and body.

This bondage is of four kinds according to (i) *Prakṛti*, that is, nature of Karmic matter which has invested the soul; (ii) *Sthiti*, that is, duration of the attachment of Karmic matter to the soul; (iii) *Anubhāga*, that is, the intensity or the character—strong or mild—of the actual fruition of the Karmic matter; and (iv) *Pradeśa*, that is, the number of Karmic molecules which attach to the soul.¹

(V) *Sāmvara*:

Effective states of desire and aversion, and activity of thought, speech or body are the conditions that attract Karmas, good and bad, towards the soul. When those conditions are removed there will be no Karmas approaching the *Jīva*; that is complete *Sāmvara*—a sort of protective wall shutting out all the Karmas established round the self. Thus *Sāmvara* is the stoppage of inflow of Karmic matter into the soul. There are several ways through which the stoppage could be effected.²

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VIII, 1-3.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. VIII, S. S., 173-177.

2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., IX, 1-2.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. III, Pn. S., 150.

(VI) *Nirjarā* :

Nirjarā means the falling away of Karmic matter from the soul. The soul will be rendered free by the automatic falling out of the Karmas when they become ripe. But this is a lengthy process. The falling away may be deliberately brought through the practice of austerities. Thus *Nirjarā* is of two kinds. The natural maturing of a Karma and its separation from the soul is called *Savipāka Nirjarā* and inducing a Karma to leave the soul, before it gets ripened by means of ascetic practices is called *Avipāka Nirjarā*.¹

(VII) *Moksha* :

Moksha or liberation is the freedom from all Karmic matter, owing to the non-existence of the cause of bondage and the shedding of all the Karmas. Thus complete freedom of the soul from Karmic matter is called *Moksha*. It is attained when the soul and matter are separated from each other. The separation is effected when all the Karmas have left the soul, and no more Karmic matter can be attracted towards it.²

5. THE THEORY OF KARMA

The first basic principle of Jainism states that mundane souls exist in the world from time eternal in association with matter. Of course, the character of the bondage is freely and constantly being changed; but the fact and condition of the bondage of the soul by matter persists through all these changes. This association leads to further contact and so the cycle goes on till the association is severed in such a manner as to avoid any fresh contact. The contact takes place in the following way: The soul is surrounded by a large volume of fine matter called Karma. When the soul tries to do anything, then instantly the surrounding particles of matter cling to it just as the particles of dust stick to the body besmeared with oil. Like water in milk these particles

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VIII, 21 and 23, and IX, 3.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, Pn. S., 157.

2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., X, 2.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. VIII, S. S., 308-317.

of matter get completely assimilated with soul and remain in this condition throughout life as well as in its migrations from one body to another. The connection of soul and matter is real; otherwise in a pure state the soul would have flown to the highest point in the universe as the soul is the lightest of all substances. As this connection or bondage is effected by the Karma or deed or activity of the soul, the subtle matter which combines with the soul is termed as Karma.¹ The Karma, then, is something material, which produces in the soul certain conditions, even as a medical pill, which when introduced into the body, produces therein manifold effects.

The Karmas are divided into eight main divisions and 148 sub-divisions according to the nature of Karmic matter. The main eight Karmas are:—

- (1) *Jñānāvaraṇīya*, that is, the Knowledge-obscuring,
- (2) *Darśanāvaraṇīya*, that is, the Conation-obscuring,
- (3) *Vedaniya*, that is, the Feeling,
- (4) *Mohaniya*, that is, the Deluding,
- (5) *Āyu*, that is, the Age,
- (6) *Nāma*, that is, the Body-making,
- (7) *Gotra*, that is, the Family-determining,
- (8) *Amitrāya*, that is, the Obstructive.

The first obscures the inborn right knowledge of the soul and thereby produces different degrees of knowledge. The second obscures the conation attribute of the soul. The third produces pleasure and pain and thereby obscures the bliss-nature of the soul. The fourth disturbs the right attitude of the soul with regard to faith, conduct, etc. and produces passions and various mental states. The fifth determines the length of life of an individual. The sixth assigns everything that is associated with personality, that is, the kind of body, senses, health and complexion and the like. The seventh determines the nationality, caste, family, social standing, etc. of an individual at birth. The

1. (i) Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 160.

(ii) Kailashchandraji : op. cit., p. 140.

(iii) Glasenapp : Doctrine of Karman in Jain Philosophy, p. 3.

eighth obstructs the inborn energy of the soul and thereby prevents the doing of a good action when there is a desire to do it.

The eight kinds of Karmas are divided into two main types the *ghātiyā* and the *aghātiyā*, that is, the destructive and non-destructive. The former comprises the Knowledge-obscuring, the Conation-obscuring, the Deluding and the Obstructive Karmas; and the latter comprises the remaining four. The reason for the distinction lies in the fact that while the former destroy the manifestations of the real attributes of the soul, the latter are mainly concerned with its environments, surroundings and bodies.¹

The Theory of Karma is the keystone in the arch of Jaina ideology. It tries to explain the reasons lying behind or causes leading to effects. It maintains that every happening is the result of antecedent causes. As the soul is regarded as the doer of actions, really the soul is made responsible for all differences in people's conditions. Whatever actions are performed by the soul, it must bear the consequences thereof sooner or later. There is no way out of it. The responsibility of consequences cannot be shifted nor exemption from the consequences be given. The soul has to enjoy the fruits of the Karmas in this life or in subsequent lives. There is no salvation until the soul stops the influx of Karmas and gets rid of existing Karmas and this it will have to do by its own deliberate efforts without expecting any help from an outside agency. There is no use in asking the favour of God or His representative because Jainism neither invests Gods with the power of determining the consequences of the Karmas nor bestows on them the authority to forgive people from future consequences of past actions. Jainism denies both intermediation and forgiveness on the part of God; of what we have done we must bear the consequences. It is not fate, nor even predestination, but it is the ever continuous balancing of the different accounts that we keep with the forces of life. The Karmas constitute the Karmic body; and it drags the soul into various forms of existence till the Karmic

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. VI, G. S., Karma-kāṇḍa, 8-20.

(ii) Jain, C. R.: Key of Knowledge, p. 625.

body bids good-bye to the soul. This Karma Theory is an original and integral part of the Jaina system. As it lays full stress on individual action and completely denies the existence of divine dispensation, it is clear that the ethics and asceticism of the Jainas are the logical consequences of this Theory of Karma.¹ In the words of Dr. Krause, "Jainism does not torpify its followers by the terrors of Karma, nor does it make them languish in unhealthy, effeminate fatalism, as many people think all Oriental religions do: but on the contrary, it trains the individual to become a true hero on the battlefield of self-conquest."²

6. MOKSHA MĀRGA OR WAY TO SALVATION

From the basic principles of Jainism, it is evident that the inherent powers of the soul are crippled by its association with Karmic matter and that is why we find every person in an imperfect state. The real and everlasting happiness will be obtained by a person only when the Karmas are completely removed from the soul and Jainism firmly believes that even though man is imperfect at present, it is quite possible for him to rid himself of the Karmas by his own personal efforts without any help from an outside agency. The highest happiness is to escape from the Cycle of Births and Deaths and be a liberated soul, that is, to obtain Moksha. This world is full of sorrow and trouble and it is quite necessary to achieve the aim of transcendental bliss by a sure method. When the goal has been fixed the next question arises regarding the way how to achieve that objective. To this question Jainism has a definite answer. It emphatically states that *Samyag-darśana*, i.e., right belief, *Samyag-jñāna*, i.e., right knowledge and *Samyak-chāritra*, i.e., right conduct together constitute the path to salvation.³ Right belief, right knowledge and

1. (i) B. Kailashchandraji : op. cit., pp. 143-146.

(ii) Jaini, J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, pp. 28-29.

(iii) H. Jacobi : E. R. E., Vol. VII, pp. 470-472.

(iv) Gopani A. S. : "Characteristics of Jainism", Bhāratīya Vidyā, Vol. I, P. 177.

2. Krause, C. : Heritage of the Last Arhat, P. 7.

3. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., I, I.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 20.

right conduct are called Ratnatraya or the three jewels in Jaina works. These three are not different paths but form together a single path. These three must be present together to constitute the path to salvation. Since all the three are emphasised equally, and since the Mokshamārga is impossible without the comprehension of all the three, it is obvious that Jainism is not prepared to admit anyone of these three in isolation as means of salvation. There are religious schools in Hinduism which lay all the emphasis on *Bhakti* or faith, on *Jñāna* or knowledge, on *Karma* or moral conduct. The Bhāgavatas mostly emphasize the *bhakti* aspect. The Advaita Vedāntins the *jñāna* aspect and the Pūrvā Mīmāṃsakas the *karma* aspect. But according to Jainism no such one-sided emphasis can be accepted as the correct path.¹ To attain liberation all the three must be simultaneously pursued. It is contended that to effect a cure of a malady, faith in the efficacy of a medicine, knowledge of its use, and actual taking of it: these three together are essential, so also to get emancipation, faith in the efficacy of Jainism, its knowledge and actual practising of it: these three are quite indispensable.² The path is compared to a ladder with its two side poles and the central rungs forming the steps. The side poles are right belief and right knowledge and the rungs or steps the gradual stages of right conduct. It is possible to ascend the ladder only when all the three are sound. The absence of one makes the ascent impossible. Thus a simultaneous pursuit of right belief, right knowledge and right conduct is enjoined upon the people. As the ethical code, both for the householders and the monks, is based on this path, let us see the characteristics of these three jewels which constitute that path.

(I) Right Belief:

Of the three jewels, right belief comes first and forms the basis upon which the other two rest. One must, by all possible

1. A. Chakravarti: *Cul. H. I.*, Vol. I, p. 195.

2. Gopani, A. S. : ' Characteristics of Jainism ', *Bhāratīya Vidyā*, Vol. 1, pp. 177-178.

means, first attain right belief or the basic conviction on the fundamentals; because only on its acquisition, knowledge and conduct become right. Right belief means true and firm conviction in the seven principles or *tattvas* of Jainism as they are and without any perverse notions. The belief that the Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras are the true Gods, the Jaina Śāstras the true Scripture, and the Jaina Saints the true Preceptors, is called right belief. Such right faith should have eight requirements (*Arīga*) and should be free from the three types of superstitious ignorance and the eight kinds of pride or arrogance. The eight *Arīgas* or requirements or pillars which support the right belief are:—

- (i) *Nihśāṅkita*, that is, freedom from doubt,
- (ii) *Nishkāṅkshita*, that is, freedom from desire for worldly comforts,
- (iii) *Nirvichikitsita*, that is, freedom from aversion to or regard for the body,
- (iv) *Amūḍhadṛṣṭi*, that is, freedom from inclination for the wrong path,
- (v) *Upagūhana*, that is, redeeming the defects of ineffective believers,
- (vi) *Sthitikarana*, that is, sustaining souls in right convictions,
- (vii) *Vātsalya*, that is, loving regard for pious persons, and
- (viii) *Prabhāvanā*, that is, publishing the greatness of Jaina doctrines.

The three types of superstitious ignorance, *mūḍhas*, from which a true believer must be free, are—(i) *loka-mūḍha*, (ii) *deva-mūḍha* and (iii) *pāshaṇḍhl-mūḍha*. The first refers to the superstition regarding attachment of sanctity to certain places of belief like; a bath in the Ganges will wash off the sins. The second accepts the efficacy of village gods and goddesses who are endowed with ordinary human qualities and attempts to propitiate them. The third shows regard for false ascetics and considers their teaching as gospel truth. Freedom from these three types of superstitions is the essential condition of right faith.

Along with these there must be freedom from eight kinds of pride. The eight kinds are

pride in (i) learning (*Jñāna*), (ii) worship (*Pūjā*), (iii) family (*kula*), (iv) caste (*jāti*), (v) power (*bala*), (vi) affluence or accomplishments (*rddhi*), (vii) religious austerities (*tapa*) and (viii) person (*vapu*).

The Jaina works describe at length the glory of right faith and enumerate the benefits which can be accrued by a person possessing right faith. They go to the extent of declaring that asceticism without faith is definitely inferior to faith without asceticism and that even a low caste man possessing right faith can be considered as a divine being. The right faith is, in short, given precedence over right knowledge and conduct, because it acts as a pilot in guiding the soul towards Moksha.¹

(II) Right Knowledge :

On attaining right belief it is considered desirable to strive after right knowledge. Although right belief and right knowledge are contemporaneous there is yet a clear relation of cause and effect between them, just as there is between a lamp and its light. Right knowledge is that which reveals the nature of things neither insufficiently, nor with exaggeration, nor falsely, but exactly as it is and that too with certainty. Such knowledge must be free from doubt, perversity and vagueness. Jainism insists that right knowledge cannot be attained, unless belief of any kind in its opposite, that is, in wrong knowledge is banished. Knowledge is of five kinds:-

(i) *Mati-jñāna* (Sense-knowledge) :

Knowledge of the self and non-self by means of the senses and the mind,

(ii) *Śruta-jñāna* (Scriptural knowledge) :

Knowledge derived from the reading or hearing of scriptures,

-
1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., I., 2-4.
 - (ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., Chap. II
 - (iii) R. S., Part I.
 - (iv) S. B. J., Vol. VII, A. S., 10-15.

- (iii) *Ayadhi-jñāna* (Clairvoyant knowledge) :
Knowledge of the distant time or place,
- (iv) *Manahparyāya-jñāna* (Mental knowledge) :
Knowledge of the thoughts and feelings of others, and
- (v) *Kevala-jñāna* (Perfect knowledge or Omniscience) :
Full or perfect knowledge without the limitations of time and space, which is the soul's characteristic in its pure and undefiled condition.

Like right belief, right knowledge also has got eight pillars or requirements as follows :-

- (i) *Grantha* : Correct use of the words,
- (ii) *Artha* : Full understanding of their meanings,
- (iii) *Ubhaya* : Combination of *Grantha* and *Artha*,
- (iv) *Kāla* : Observance of regularity and propriety of time,
- (v) *Vinaya* : Reverent attitude,
- (vi) *Sopadhāna* : Propriety of behaviour,
- (vii) *Bahumāna* : Zeal, and
- (viii) *Aninhava* : Without concealment of knowledge or of its sources.¹

(III) Right Conduct:

Right conduct includes the rules of discipline which restrain all censurable movements of speech, body and mind, weaken and destroy all passionate activity and lead to non-attachment and purity. Right conduct presupposes the presence of right knowledge which presupposes right belief. Therefore it is enjoined upon the persons who have secured right belief and right knowledge to observe the rules of right conduct as the destruction of Karmic matter can be accomplished only through the right conduct. Right conduct is of two kinds: *Sakala*, perfect or unqualified and *Vikala*, imperfect or qualified, and of these two kinds the unqualified is observed by ascetics who have renounced worldly

1. (i) S.B.J., Vol. I, D.S., 42.
 (ii) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., 1, 9, 14, 20, 23, 28-29.
 (iii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 33, 34 and 36.
 (iv) R. S., 42.

ties and the qualified by layman still entangled in the world.¹ As ethics is mainly concerned with the several rules of conduct prescribed both for layman and ascetics, let us see them in detail to grasp the proper meaning of Jaina Ethics.

7. JAINA ETHICS

The rules of conduct are always designed to achieve the main aim or object in life. The goal according to Jainism is to obtain Moksha, that is, freedom from the continuous cycle of births and deaths. The soul achieves real and everlasting happiness only when it can escape from *samsara* or transmigration of the soul which is always fraught with sorrows and trouble. The sole reason of movement of soul from one life to another is the fact that the soul is in contact with the Karmic matter from time eternal and the way to salvation lies in the destruction of Karmas. We have seen that the *samvara* of the *āśravas* and the *nirjarā* lead to Moksha. This means that the necessary conditions to gain Moksha are *samvara* and *nirjarā*, that is, the stoppage of influx of Karmic matter and the falling away of existing Karmic matter from the soul. Thus *samvara* and *nirjarā* are the two important milestones on the path to liberation and naturally the principles of right conduct by Jainas are shaped with a view to accomplish *samvara* and *nirjarā* as early as possible. Therefore let us see the way chalked out by Jainas to attain *samvara* and *nirjarā*.

(A) Way to *Samvara*:

Samvara is the stoppage of influx of Karmic matter into the soul and the stoppage is effected by:—

- (a) three kinds of *Gupti*, that is, control of mind, speech and body,
- (b) five kinds of *Samiti*, that is, carefulness,
- (c) ten kinds of *Dharma*, that is, observances or virtues,
- (d) twelve kinds of *Anuprekshā*, that is, meditations or reflections,

1. (i) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 37-41.
 (ii) R.S., 50

(e) twenty-two kinds of *Parishaha-jaya*, that is, subdual of sufferings, and

(f) five kinds of *Chāritra*, that is, conduct.¹

(a) *The three Guptis*:-The three *guptis* are regulations with reference to controlling one's inner nature, that is, they are dictated by the principles of self-control. The first of them is *Mano-gupti* by which the mind is to be controlled in the shape of giving room only to pure thoughts. The second *Gupti* is *Vāg-gupti*, that is, regulation of speech and it consists in observing silence for a particular period or in speaking only as much as is absolutely necessary. The third is *Kāya-gupti*, that is, regulation of one's bodily activity.²

(b) *The five Samitis* are designed with a view to cultivate the habit of carefulness in accordance with the principle of non-injury. The *Samitis* are prescriptions for the regulation of the movements of the body and are as follows:-

- (i) The *Iryā Samiti* aims at regulation of walking, so as not to injure any living being.
- (ii) The *Bhāshā Samiti* regulates the mode of speech with a view to avoid the hurting of others' feelings by use of offensive words.
- (iii) The *Eshanā Samiti* regulates seeking or eating food so as not to cause any injury to any living being.
- (iv) The *Ādāna-Nikshepa Samiti* regulates the actions of taking or using, and of putting away, anything whatsoever.
- (v) The *Utsarga Samiti* regulates the movements connected with the answering of call of nature etc.

All the five *Samitis*, though they can be strictly observed only by ascetics, are of some influence also in the daily life of Śrāvakas or laymen. A devoted layman will, for example, avoid treading on growing plants, he will never leave a vessel filled

1. S. B. J., Vol. II, T.S., IX, 1 and 2.

2. (i) S.B.J., Vol. II, T.S., IX, 4.

(ii) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 202.

(iii) S.B.J., Vol. IX, N.S., 66-68.

with a liquid substance uncovered, nor will he ever use an open light, lest insects might rush into it and be killed.

Both the three *Guptis* and five *Samitis* are sometimes grouped together under the name of "Ashta-Pravachana-Mātā", that is, "The Eight Mothers of the Creed", on account of their fundamental character.¹

(c) The Ten observances or *Daśalakshana Dharma* are:

- (i) *Uttama-Kshamā*, i.e., Supreme forgiveness,
- (ii) *Uttama-Mārdava*, i.e., Supreme tenderness,
- (iii) *Uttama-Ārjava*, i.e., Supreme straight-forwardness or honesty,
- (iv) *Uttama-Śaucha*, i.e., Supreme contentment or purity,
- (v) *Uttama-Satya*, i.e., Supreme truth,
- (vi) *Uttama-Samyama*, i.e., Supreme self-restraint,
- (vii) *Uttama-Tapa*, i.e., Supreme austerities,
- (viii) *Uttama-Tyāga*, i.e., Supreme renunciation,
- (ix) *Uttama-Ākiñchanya*, i.e., Supreme non-attachment or not taking the non-self for one's own self,
- (x) *Uttama-Brahmacharya*, i.e., Supreme chastity.²

(d) The twelve *Anuprekshās* or meditations or reflections should be meditated upon again and again. They are:—

- (i) *Anitya anuprekshā*, i.e., everything is subject to change or is transitory.
- (ii) *Aśaraya anuprekshā*, i.e., Unprotectiveness or helplessness. The feeling that soul is unprotected from fruition of Karmas, for example, death, etc.
- (iii) *Saṁsāra anuprekshā*, i.e., Mundaneness. Soul moves in the cycle of existences and cannot attain true happiness till it is cut off.
- (iv) *Ekatva anuprekhsā*, i.e., Loneliness. I am alone,

1. (i) S.B.J., Vol. II, T.S., IX, 4.

(ii) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 203.

(iii) C. Krause: An Interpretation of Jain Ethics, pp. 12-13.

(iv) Wilson: Works by H.H. Wilson, Vol. I, P. 318.

2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., IX, 6.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 204.

the doer of my actions and the enjoyer of the fruits of them.

- (v) *Anyatva anuprekshā*, i.e., Separateness. The world, my relation and friends, my body and mind, they are all distinct and separate from my real self.
- (vi) *Āsuchi anuprekshā*, i.e., Impurity. The body is impure and dirty.
- (vii) *Āśrava anuprekshā*, i.e., Inflow. The inflow of Karmas is the cause of my mundane existence and it is the product of passions.
- (viii) *Samvara anuprekshā*, i.e., Stoppage. The inflow of Karma must be stopped.
- (ix) *Nirjarā anuprekshā*, i.e., Shedding. Karmic matter must be shed from or shaken out of the soul.
- (x) *Loka anuprekshā*, i.e., Universe. The nature of the universe and its constituent elements in all their vast variety proving the insignificance and miserable nothingness of man in time and space.
- (xi) *Bodhi-durlabha anuprekshā*, i.e., Rarity of religious knowledge. It is difficult to attain right belief, knowledge and conduct.
- (xii) *Dharma anuprekshā*, i.e., Reflection on the nature of religious path as preached by the conquerors, namely, the true nature of the three-fold path of liberation.¹

Sometimes *Anuprekshās* are termed as *Bhāvanās* also.

(e) *The twentytwo Sufferings:*

For the sake of non-falling off from the path of Liberation and for the shedding of Karmic matter, whatever hardships are undergone, are called the *Parishahas* or sufferings. They are:—

- (i) *Kshut*, i.e., Hunger,
- (ii) *Pipāsā* i.e., Thirst,
- (iii) *Śīta*, i.e., Cold,
- (iv) *Ushṇa* i.e., Heat,
- (v) *Davīśamaśaka*, i.e., Insect-bite,

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S. IX, 7.
 (ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV., P. S., 205.

- (vi) *Nāgnya*, i.e., Nakedness,
- (vii) *Arati*, i.e., Ennui or disagreeable surroundings,
- (viii) *Strī*, i.e., Sex-passion, .
- (ix) *Charyā*, i.e., Walking too much,
- (x) *Nishadyā*, i.e., Continuous sitting in one posture,
- (xi) *Śayyā*, i.e., Resting on hard earth,
- (xii) *Ākrośa*, i.e., Abuse,
- (xiii) *Vadha*, i.e., Beating,
- (xiv) *Yāchanā*, i.e., Begging,
- (xv) *Alābha*, i.e., Disappointment from getting no food,
- (xvi) *Roga*, i.e., Disease,
- (xvii) *Tṛṇasparśa*, i.e., Thorn-pricks,
- (xviii) *Mala*, i.e., Bodhi dirt and impurities,
- (xix) *Satkārapuraskāra*, i.e., Disrespect shown by men,
- (xx) *Prajñā*, i.e., Non-appreciation of learning,
- (xxi) *Ajñāna*, i.e., Persistence of ignorance,
- (xxii) *Adarśana*, i.e., Slack-belief, for example on failure to attain supernatural powers even after great piety and austerities to begin to doubt the truth of Jainism and its teachings.

These should be ever endured without any feeling of vexation, by one who desires to get rid of all cause for pain.¹

(f) *The five Chāritras* :—

The five kinds of right conduct are :—

- (i) *Sāmāyika*, i. e., Equanimity,
- (ii) *Chhedopasthāpanā*, i. e., Recovery of equanimity after a fall from it,
- (iii) *Parihāra-Viśuddhi*, i.e., Pure and absolute non-injury,
- (iv) *Sukshma-Sāmparāya*, i. e., All but entire freedom from passion, and
- (v) *Yathākhyāta*, i. e., Ideal and passionless conduct.²

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T.S., IX, 8-9.

(ii) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P. S., 206-209.

2. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S. IX, 18.

(B) Way to *Nirjarā*:

The main way to *Nirjarā* or shedding of Karmas is the observance of austerities which is included in the right conduct. The Jaina Scriptures distinguish twelve kinds of austerities, as the expedients of *Nirjarā*, grouped together under the two headings of *Bāhya Tapa*, that is, external austerities and *Abhyantara Tapa*, that is, internal austerities.

The six External Austerities are:-

- (i) *Anaśana*, i.e., Fasting,
- (ii) *Avamodarya*, i.e., Eating less than one has appetite for,
- (iii) *Vṛtti-parisanikhyāna*, i.e., Putting restrictions in regard to food, for example, to accept food only if a certain condition is fulfilled,
- (iv) *Rasa-parityāga*, i.e., Daily renunciation of one or more of six kinds of delicacies, namely, ghee, milk, curds, sugar, salt and oil.
- (v) *Vivikta-śayyāsana*, i.e., Sitting and sleeping in a lonely place, devoid of animate beings, and
- (vi) *Kāyakleśa*, i.e., Mortification of the body so long as the mind is not disturbed.

The six Internal Austerities are:-

- (i) *Prāyaśchitta*, i.e., Expiation,
- (ii) *Vinaya*, i.e., Reverence,
- (iii) *Vaiyāvṛtya*, i.e., Service of the saints or worthy people,
- (iv) *Svādhyāya*, i.e., Study,
- (v) *Vyutsarga*, i.e., Giving up attachment to the body, etc.,
- (vi) *Dhyāna*, i.e., Concentration of mind.¹

Apart from the general instructions mentioned above for the shedding of Karmas, the definite rules of conduct have been

¹ (i) S.B.J., Vol. II, T.S., IX, 19-20.

(ii) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 198-199.

For a detailed discussion of rules of expiation, see
Jain, C. R.: *Jaina Penance*.

prescribed for the followers of Jainism. All these rules are directed towards the main aim of achieving freedom of the soul from the Karmic matter. The rules of conduct have been so designed that all members of the community will be in a position to follow them. Accordingly the rules of conduct have been divided into categories, namely, *Sāgāradharma*, that is, those prescribed for laymen and *Anagāradharma*, that is, those prescribed for ascetics. It is obvious that the rules for laity are less rigid than those for saints because the laymen have not renounced worldly activities for eking out their livelihood. Let us see in brief what the prescribed rules of conduct are.

(I) *Rules of Conduct for Laymen* :-

The rules prescribed for laymen are divided into

- (A) Twelve *Vratas* or vows,
- (B) Eleven *Pratimās* or stages in householder's life,
- (C) Six daily duties, and
- (D) Thirty-five rules of good conduct.

The layman begins with the avoidance of the five *atichāras*, i.e., short-comings of faith, namely,

- (i) *Śavikā*, i.e., Doubt or scepticism,
- (ii) *Kānkshā*, i.e., Desire of sense pleasures,
- (iii) *Vichikitsā*, i.e., Disgust of anything, for example, with a sick person,
- (iv) *Anyadr̥ṣṭi-praśamsā*, i.e., Thinking admiringly of wrong believers, and
- (v) *Anyadr̥ṣṭi-Samstava*, i.e., Praising wrong believers.

This will enable a layman to observe the vows which mark the first stage of right conduct.¹

(A) *The Twelve Vows*:

The main five vows of Jainas are as follows:—

- (i) *Ahimsā*, i.e., to be free from injury,
- (ii) *Satya*, i.e., to be free from falsehood,

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T.S., VII, 23.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 182.

(iii) Jain, C. R.: Practical Dharma, p. 48.

- (iii) *Asteya*, i.e., to be free from theft,
- (iv) *Brahmacharya*, i.e., to be free from unchastity, and
- (v) *Aparigraha*, i.e., to be free from worldly attachment.

If these vows are very strictly observed they are known as *Mahāvratas* or great vows and naturally these are meant for the ascetics. Laymen, however, cannot observe the vows so strictly and therefore they are allowed to practise them so far as their conditions permit. The same vows when partially observed are termed as *Anuvratas* or small vows. For the fixing of these five vows in the mind, there are five kinds of *Bhāvanās* or attendant meditations for each of the vows and every Jaina is expected to think over them again and again. Further, he must meditate that the five faults meant to be avoided in the vows are pain personified and are of dangerous and censurable character in this as well as in the next world. Moreover, he must meditate upon the following four virtues which are based upon the observance of these five vows.

- (i) *Maitrī*, i.e., Friendship with all living beings,
- (ii) *Pramoda*, i.e., Delight at the sight of beings, better qualified or more advanced than ourselves on the path of liberation,
- (iii) *Kārunya*, i.e., Compassion for the afflicted and
- (iv) *Mādhyastha*, i.e., Tolerance or indifference to those who are uncivil or ill-behaved.¹

Along with the five main vows or *vratas*, there are seven *Silavrata*s or supplementary vows. Just as the encircling walls guard towns, so do supplementary vows protect *Anuvratas*. Therefore in order to practise the main *vratas* or vows, the *Silavrata*s also must be practised by the householders.

The supplementary vows are:-

- (i) *Digvrata*, i.e., Taking a lifelong vow to limit his worldly activity to fixed points in all directions,
- (ii) *Deśavrata*, i.e., Taking a vow to limit the above also for a limited area,

- (iii) *Anarthadañḍa-vrata*, i.e., Taking a vow not to commit purposeless sins,
- (iv) *Sāmāyika*, i.e., Taking a vow to devote particular time everyday to contemplation of the self for spiritual advancement,
- (v) *Proshadhopavāsa*, i.e., Taking a vow to fast on four days of the month, namely, the two 8th and the two 14th days of the fortnight,
- (vi) *Upabhoga-paribhoga-parimāṇa*, i.e., Taking a vow everyday limiting one's enjoyment of consumable and non-consumable things, and
- (vii) *Atithi-saṁvibhāga*, i.e., Taking a vow to take one's food only after feeding the ascetics, or, in their absence, the pious householders.

Out of these seven *Śilavratas*, the first three are called *Guna-vratas* or multiplicative vows because they raise the value of the five main vows; and the remaining four are called *Śikshāvratas* or disciplinary vows, because they are preparatory for the discipline of an ascetic life. Thus the five *Anuvratas*, the three *Guna-vratas* and the four *Śikshāvratas* constitute the twelve vows of a layman. There are five *atichāras*, i.e., defects or partial transgressions for each of these twelve vows and they are to be avoided by the observers of these vows.¹

In addition to the above twelve vows a householder is expected to practise in the last moment of his life the process of *Sallekhanā* or peaceful death. *Sallekhanā* is described as the giving up of the body on the arrival of unavoidable calamity, distress, old age and disease, with a view to increase spiritual merit. This *Sallekhanā* is added to as an extra vow to the existing twelve vows of a householder. Like other vows, *Sallekhanā* has also got five partial transgressions which are to be avoided by a householder.²

The observance of the five *anuvratas* and refraining from the

1. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VII, 21 and 24-36.

2. (i) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VII, 22 and 37.

(ii) R. S., Chapter V.

(iii) Sharma, S. R.: Jainism and Karnatak Culture, pp. 192-194.

use of wine, flesh and honey are regarded as *mūlaguṇas* or the eight basic or primary virtues of a householder. For minimising injury to living beings, complete abstinence of wine, flesh and honey is advocated and every householder must necessarily possess these eight fundamental virtues.¹

(B) *The Eleven Pratimās:*

The householder's life has been divided into eleven stages or *pratimās*. These *pratimās* form a series of duties and performances, the standard and duration of which rises periodically and which finally culminates in an attitude resembling monkhood. Thus the *pratimās* rise by degrees and every stage includes all the virtues practised in those preceding it. The conception of eleven *pratimās* appears to be the best way of exhibiting the rules of conduct prescribed for the Jaina laymen. The eleven *pratimās* are as follows:—

- (i) *Darśana pratimā*, i.e., Possessing the perfect, intelligent and well-reasoned faith in Jainism, that is, having a sound knowledge of its doctrines and their applications in life.
- (ii) *Vrata pratimā*, i.e., Keeping up the twelve vows and the extra vow of *Sallekhanā*.
- (iii) *Sāmāyika pratimā*, i.e., Worshipping regularly, in general for forty-two minutes, three times daily. Worship means self-contemplation and purifying one's ideas and emotions.
- (iv) *Proshadhopavāsa pratimā*, i.e., Fasting regularly, as a rule, twice a fortnight in each lunar month.
- (v) *Sachitta-tyāgapratimā*, i.e., Refraining from eating uncooked vegetables, plucking fruits from a tree and the like.
- (vi) *Rātri-bhukta-tyāga pratimā*, i.e., Abstaining from food after sunset.
- (vii) *Brahmacharya pratimā*, i.e., Maintaining sexual

1. (i) R. S., 66.

(ii) For a controversy regarding the nature and number of *mūlaguṇas*, please see, Jain, C. R.: Householder's Dharma, pp. 77-85.

- purity now assuming the stricter aspect of celibacy and also not decorating one's person.
- (viii) *Arambha-tyāga pratimā*, i. e., Abandonment of merely worldly engagements and occupations.
 - (ix) *Parigraha-tyāga pratimā*, i. e., Divesting oneself of wealth by dividing one's property among one's heirs and training oneself generally to bear the hardships incidental to a life of asceticism.
 - (x) *Anumati-tyāga pratimā*, i. e., Increasing the rigour of living in the direction of asceticism and refraining even from giving advice on matters relating to family honour, business and the like.
 - (xi) *Uddishta-tyāga pratimā*, i. e., After renunciation of householder's life, retiring into forest and adopting the rules laid down for the guidance of ascetics.¹

The householders are advised to ascend these stages step by step. Those who have attained the eleven stages are given special importance by the Dīghanbaras Jainas while Śvetāmbaras consider them like ascetics.²

(C) Six Daily Duties:

About the six daily duties of a layman there is a difference of opinion among different authors. According to one source they are:

- (i) *Deva-pūtiā*, i. e., Worship of the God,
- (ii) *Gurupāsti*, i. e., Worship of the preceptor,
- (iii) *Svādhyāya*, i. e., Study of scriptures,
- (iv) *Samyama*, i.e., Practice of self-control,
- (v) *Tapa*, i.e., Practice of austerities, and
- (vi) *Dāna*, i.e., Giving gifts.³

1. (i) Jaini, J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, pp. 67-70.

(ii) Jain, C. R. : Practical Dharma, pp. 51-52.

(iii) For a slightly different order of stages vide Glasenapp: Jainism, pp. 207-208.

2. Glasenapp: Jainism, p. 208.

3. (i) Warren: Jainism, pp. 93-96.

(ii) S. B. J., Vol. IX, N. S., Introduction, p. 7.

A second set of six *Āvāyakas*, that is, daily duties is as follows:—

- (i) *Sāmāyika*, i.e., Meditation,
- (ii) *Chaturviṁśati-Jina-Stuti*, i.e., Praise of the twenty-four Jinas or Gods who are the religious ideals of all Jainas,
- (iii) *Vandanā*, i.e., The ceremonial and humble greeting of the spiritual teacher,
- (iv) *Pratikramana*, i.e., Repentance of all transgressions,
- (v) *Kāyotsarga*, i.e., Austerity performed by standing motionless in a specific posture, and
- (vi) *Pratyākhyāna*, i.e., A formal vow taken in the presence of a teacher with reference to any kind of restriction or renunciation to be performed.¹

The main reason for the constant performance of these daily duties seems to keep up always the eagerness and enthusiasm of householders.²

(D) Thirty-five Rules of Good Conduct :

The thirty-five rules of good conduct enjoined on a Jaina householder are, in brief, as follows:- He should follow some kind of business which is not of an ignoble nature and that too in a just and honest way. He should marry a person of like culture. He should avoid dangerous pursuits like gambling and others. He should control the enjoyments of sense pleasures. He should avoid places of difficulties and dangers. He should live in a country where he would get adequate protection. He should get the company of virtuous people like saints. His house should be in a decent locality. He should not dress extravagantly. His expenses should be in proportion to his income. He should follow the main regional customs if they do not go against the principles of Jainism. He should avoid undesirable habits. He

1. (i) Glasenapp: Jainism, p. 410.

(ii) Krause: An Interpretation of Jain Ethics, pp. 33-35.

(iii) S. B. J., Vol. IX, N. S., Introduction, p. 8 & pp. 67-68.

(iv) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 201.

2. Jain, C. R.: Practical Dharma, P. 53.

should not libel or slander anybody. He should not keep the company of bad persons, must respect the parents, should not create unnecessary ill-feeling in the minds of others, should maintain his dependants, render service to the deserving persons, give up excessive eating and drinking, take proper medicine when required, avoid travelling in unprotected areas, live in peace with other persons, impress the lower people by his higher life, abstain from too much intimacy, establish relationships with right kind of people, try to achieve fourfold objectives of life, consider his strength before undertaking anything, attempt to rise higher and higher, do proper things at proper times, read everyday the scripture, give up obstinacy in all things, be partial to virtues and should develop critical attitude towards religion and get his doubts solved.¹

As regards the rules of conduct for laymen it can be said in general that if the householder would carefully observe these rules of conduct, he would come into the possession of the following twenty-one qualities which every true gentleman should possess. He would be serious in demeanour, clean as regards both his clothes and person, good tempered, popular, merciful, afraid of sinning, straightforward, wise, modest, kind, moderate, gentle, careful in speech, sociable, cautious, studious, reverent both to old age and ancient customs, humble, grateful, benevolent, and attentive to business.²

(II) *Rules of Conduct for Ascetics :*

When a layman consistently observes the rules of conduct prescribed for the householders and especially attains all *pratimās*, he is qualified to become an ascetic. The admission into the order of monks is accompanied by the impressive ceremony known as *Dikshā* or initiation ceremony. This ceremony makes the layman a member of the order of ascetics. The order of ascetics (includ-

1. Warren : Jainism, pp. 74-88.

2. (i) Stevenson : Heart of Jainism, p. 224.

(ii) Jain, C. R. : Practical Dharma, p. 54.

(iii) Warren, H. : Jainism, pp. 137-139.

ing nuns) is one of the two main orders in which Jaina community has been divided from the very beginning and the other order is that of laymen (including lay-women). There is a close connection between these two orders and the stage of a laymen has been one preliminary and, in many cases, preparatory to the state of monks. Because of this intimate relationship we find that the rules prescribed for laymen and ascetics do not differ in kind but in degree. The same rules of conduct observed by laymen are to be followed by ascetics with only difference that while laymen practise them partially or less rigorously, ascetics have to observe them fully and more rigorously. That is why we have seen that the main five vows of householders are known as *Anuvratas* or small vows and the same become *Mahāvratas* or great vows when practised by ascetics. This is obvious because the ascetic stage signifies absolute renunciation of the world and the only objective in this stage is to concentrate energy on the attainment of Moksha. Asceticism is a higher course in spiritual training and it is in this stage real efforts are made for the stoppage of influx of Karmas and the shedding of existing Karmas with a view to attain Liberation. Therefore very minute rules of conduct are prescribed for the ascetics and the latter have to observe them without any fault or transgression. We do not propose to go into the rules of conduct for ascetics. A detailed account of them would be found in the following works:—

- (i) 'Anagāradharmamṛtam' written by Pañdita Āśadharaṇī,¹
- (ii) 'Āchārāṅga-Sūtra' translated by Dr. H. Jacobi,² and
- (iii) 'Sannyasa Dharma' by Jain C. R.

The ascetics are divided into different classes according to the strictness with which they observe the rules for ascetic life and their standing or position in the order of monks. Ascetics who observe those rules in their strictest form, and without ever having recourse to exceptions, are called "Jinakalpi" *sādhus* and those who keep the ascetic prescriptions in a milder form are known

1. It is published by M. D. J. G. Bombay, as its Vol. No. XIV.

2. The translation would be found in Vol. XXII of the S. B. E.

as " *Sthavirakalpi* " *sādhus*.¹ Further, the heads of the groups of saints are called *Āchāryas*, those who are in charge of instruction are termed as *Upādhyāyas* and the rest of the ascetics are known as mere *Sādhus*.² There are different grades in ascetics according to the approved stages through which the rigour of ascetic life is increased. Thus among Digambaras the grades in the ascending order are *Kshullaka*, *Aillaka* and *Nirgrantha* and among Śvetāmbaras are *Yatis*, *Sādhus* and *Āchāryas*.³ It is prescribed that a Sādhu according to the Digambara texts, must possess the following twenty-eight *mūla-gunas*, that is, the basic or primary attributes or virtues, the rigour of which is increased stages by stages.

- 1- 5. The five great vows,
- 6-10. The five *Samitis*,
- 11-15. Controlling of five senses,
- 16-21. Six necessary observances,
- 22. Pulling out the hair,
- 23. Nudity,
- 24. Non-bathing,
- 25. Sleeping on hard ground,
- 26. Refraining from cleansing the mouth,
- 27. Taking food standing, and
- 28. Eating not more than once a day.

The above virtues are termed root-virtues, because in their absence other saintly virtues cannot be acquired.⁴

8. CRITICISM OF JAINA ETHICS

An examination of an outline of Jaina ethics given above will bring out its certain outstanding features. In the first place, it will be seen that the whole course of Jaina ethics has been divided into stages and it is enjoined on every person to put into practice the

1. Krause, C. : An Interpretation of Jaina Ethics, p. 6.

2. Jain, C. R. : *Sannyāsa Dharma*, p. 21.

3. For a detailed description of the Śvetāmbara grades of Sādhus, Vide J. Burgess' article on " Papers on Śatruñjaya and the Jainas ", Section VII, I. A., Vol. XIII.

4. Jain, C. R. : *Sannyāsa Dharma*, pp. 20-27.

rules of conduct step by step. The whole life of an individual, in some of the later works, has been divided into four *Āśramas*, that is, stages, namely,

- (i) *Brahmacharya*, i.e., the period of study,
- (ii) *Gṛhastha*, i. e., the period devoted to household life, civic duties, and the like,
- (iii) *Vānaprastha*, i.e., the period of retirement from worldly activities, and
- (iv) *Sannyāsa*, i.e., the period of absolute renunciation.

The first is the stage of study when the pupil must acquire knowledge, religious as well as secular, and build up a character that will rule supreme in after life. In this period he is to form the right convictions regarding the real nature of the soul and the world. After terminating his studies he enters the second stage. He is expected to marry and settle down to a pious householder's life. In this stage he tries to realise the first three of the four ideals or objectives in life, namely, *Dharma* (i.e. religious merit), *Artha* (i.e. wealth, position, worldly prosperity, etc.), *Kāma*, (i.e. pleasure) and *Moksha* (i.e. salvation). But while realising *dharma*, *artha*, and *kāma*, he must subordinate *artha* and *kāma* to *dharma*. The householder, who aspires for *moksha* in the long run, knows that it cannot be attained except by severe self-discipline of a type which is not attainable by him as a layman. He, therefore, only aspires to perfect himself in the first instance, in his own duties, so that he may reach *sannyāsa* in due course of time.¹ Even though he is the main support of people in other three stages, he is to prepare himself bit by bit for entering the subsequent stages. In the third stage he retires from worldly activities, abandons efforts for attaining the ideals of *artha* and *kāma* and concentrates his attention on the first ideal of *dharma*. After successfully crossing the third stage an individual enters the fourth stage which is marked by a sense of absolute renunciation and in this stage he aspires for the last and important ideal of *moksha*.² In this way we find that different rules of conduct are

1. Jain, C. R. : What is Jainism, p. 139.

2. Jain, C. R. : Sannyāsa Dharma, pp. 14-16.

prescribed for different stages in life so that an individual may gradually attain the final aim in life. Even in one stage the rules of conduct are divided into several grades, for example, the eleven *pratimās* in the householder's stage. This makes the progress on spiritual path very easy and a person readily understands what his position is on that path. This scheme is intended for the protection of the individual in the sense that he is prepared step by step to achieve the real purpose in life.¹ It should, however, be remembered that the householder's stage was given equal importance with the ascetic stage. For the gift of supernatural vision was vouchsafed even to a householder—to one who resided in his own house but conformed himself to the rule of religious life as laid down by the great teacher Mahāvīra. The gift of supernatural vision was no monopoly of any order or caste or sex.²

The second thing worth noting regarding the ethical code prescribed by the Jainas is the importance given to the five main vows in the life not only of an ascetic but also of a householder. These five vows form the basis on which the superstructure of Jaina ethics has been raised. They give a definite outlook on life and create a particular type of mental attitude. The very essence of Jaina philosophy is transformed into action in the shape of observance of these five vows. Though the vows on their face appear to be mere abstentions from injury, falsehood, theft, unchastity and worldly attachments, their implications are really extensive and they permeate the entire social life of the community. Three things are enjoined in the matter of avoidance of the five faults of injury, falsehood, theft, etc. In the first place, he should not commit any fault personally, secondly, he should not incite others to commit such an act and thirdly, he should not even approve of it subsequent to its commission by others. *Himsā* or injury has been defined as hurting of the vitalities caused through want of proper care and caution. But the meaning is not limited to this definition alone. Piercing,

1. Jain, C. R. : *Jain Culture*, p. 10.

2. Law, B. C. : *Mahāvīra: His Life and Teachings*, pp. 42-43.

binding, causing pain, overloading and starving or not feeding at proper times, are forms of *himsā* and as such must be avoided. Falsehood, in simple terms, is to speak hurtful words. But spreading false doctrines, revealing the secrets and deformities of others, backbiting, making false documents and breach of trust are all forms of falsehood and should be abstained from. Theft is to take anything which is not given. Imparting instruction on the method of committing theft, receiving stolen property, evading the injunction of the law (for example, by selling things at inordinate prices), adulteration, and keeping false weights and measures are all forms of theft and one must guard oneself against them. Unchastity is also of several forms. Match-making (i. e., bringing about marriages, as a hobby), unnatural gratification, indulging in voluptuous speech, and visiting immoral married and unmarried women are all forms of unchastity and should be avoided. The fault of *parigraha* or worldly attachments consists in desiring more than what is needed by an individual. Accumulating even necessary articles in large numbers, expressing wonder at the prosperity of another, excessive greed and changing the proportions of existing possessions are all forms of *parigraha* and should be discarded.¹ The last vow is noteworthy as it indirectly aims at economic equalisation by peacefully preventing undue accumulation of capital in individual hands. It recommends that a householder should fix, beforehand, the limit of his maximum belongings, and should, in no case, exceed it. If he ever happens to earn more than that, he must spend it away in charities, the best and recognised forms of which are distribution of medicines, spread of knowledge, provision for saving the lives of people in danger, and feeding the hungry and the poor. Obviously, these vows are of a great social value as they accord a religious sanction to some of the most important public and private interests and rights which are, in modern times, safeguarded by the laws of the state.² A due observance of them, for example, would save a man from application to him of almost any of the

1. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VII, 25-29.

2. Hiralal Jain: Cul. H. I., Vol. I, p. 232.

sections of the Indian Penal Code.¹ This is borne out by the fact that the proportion of jail-going (for non-political reasons) population in the Jaina community was definitely less than that of any other community in the Bombay Presidency.²

A charge is generally laid against the system of Jaina ethics to the effect that it fosters the self-centred attitude, and does not take care of the society and therefore social element in Jaina ethics is not strong.³ It is true that the main aim of Jainism is to attain freedom from the transmigration of soul and the whole Jaina ethics has been based on this foundation. All rules of conduct are so designed as to secure the aim as early as possible. As there is no outside agency to help the individual in his efforts to secure salvation, it is natural that more importance was given to the individual. But this does not mean that ethics was confined to individuals alone. On the contrary, the ethical code was evolved for the whole society.⁴ Jaina ethics took pains to provide for the welfare of both the society and the individual. It recognised the need for taking care of the society, and also aspired to bring the highest conceivable form of good within the individual's reach.⁵ The social aspect of individual's life was never ignored. An individual was never conceived as separated from the society and social life. He was enjoined to achieve his goal while leading the worldly life which necessarily involves relations with other members of the society. All the Tīrthaṅkaras, whom the Jainas worship, did lead a social life and did attain salvation at the end. It is clear that social life was never considered as an impediment to one's spiritual progress if necessary precautions are taken. These precautions are included in the twelve vows of a layman. These vows play a good part in the life of a single Jaina as well

1. (i) Latthe, A. B. : *An Introduction to Jainism*, pp. 65-69.
 (ii) Jain C. R. : *Jain Culture*, p. 28.
2. Latthe, A. B. : *An Introduction to Jainism*, pp. 63-64.
3. (i) Stevenson, S. : *Heart of Jainism*, p. 297.
 (ii) Turner, R. : *The Great Cultural Traditions*, p. 397.
4. Sanghavi, S. : *Jaina Samskr̥tikā Hrdasya*, p. 15.
5. Jain, C. R. : *Jain Culture*, p. 5.

as that of the whole community. The layman who adopts the twelve vows, or some of them, is left ample freedom to fulfil all his worldly duties, and to remain in fullest concordance with worldly propriety and etiquette even if he happens to occupy any responsible post which requires energetic and violent acting, in the interest of the state.¹ Jaina ethical rules are meant for men of all positions—for kings, warriors, traders, artisans, agriculturists, and indeed for men and women in every walk of life. Do your duty and do it as humanely as you can—this, in brief, is the primary principle of Jainism.² It is evident that social element in Jaina ethics is not neglected. Further, Jaina ethics includes the negative as well as positive rules of conduct. These prescribed rules of conduct are not limited for practising within the members of Jaina community. Jaina ethics embraces not only followers of Jainism but in a true sense all living beings. It is obvious that Jaina ethics tries to regulate the mutual relations of human beings and for that purpose twelve vows and ten meditations or reflections are laid down. Among them the five main vows are more important from the point of social relations. It is contended from a detailed analysis of the five main vows that Jaina ethics solves the individual problem of attaining spiritual merit and at the same time shows the way of solving all outstanding social and world problems.³

The third prominent fact about Jaina ethics is the utmost importance given to *Ahiṁsā* or avoidance of *Himsā*, that is, injury. The noble principle of *Ahiṁsā* has been recognised by practically all religions but Jainism alone preaches the full significance of *Ahiṁsā* to such an extent that Jainism and *Ahiṁsā* have become synonymous terms. Jainas always say that “*Ahiṁsā Paramo Dharmah*”, that is, *Ahiṁsā* is the highest religion. The philosophy of Jainism and its rules of conduct are based on the foundations of *Ahiṁsā* which has been consistently followed to its logical

1. Krause, C.: Interpretation of Jain Ethics, pp. 21–22.

2. Smith, V. A.: History of India, p. 53.

3. (i) Boniprasad: World Problems and Jain Ethics, pp. 2–17.
(ii) Divakar, S.: Jaina Sāsana, pp. 370–390.

conclusion. That is why among the five main vows first place has been given to the observance of *Ahimsā*. *Ahimsā* is regarded as the principal vow and the other four vows are considered to be merely details of the first vow. *Himsā* has been defined as injury to the vitalities through passioned activity of mind, speech and body.¹ The Jaina scriptures always maintain that the appearance of attachment and other passions is *Himsā* and their non-appearance is *Ahimsā*, because under the influence of passion, the person first injures the self, through the self, whether there is subsequently an injury caused to another being or not. Thus whatever is done under the influence of passion, that is through *Pramāda Yoga* meaning careless activity of mind, speech and body, and without any caution is included under *Himsā*.² Wherever any wrong statement is made through *Pramāda Yoga*, it is certainly known as falsehood. As *Pramāda Yoga*, the chief cause of *Himsā*, is present in all such statements, *Himsā* occurs in falsehood also.³ The taking, by *Pramāda Yoga*, of objects which have not been given, is deemed as theft and that is *Himsā* because it is the cause of injury to the self in the form of a moral fall and to the person deprived of. There is no exclusivity between *Himsā* and theft. *Himsā* is inherent in thefts, for in taking what belongs to another, there is *Pramāda Yoga*. Thus all theft, like all falsehood, is included in *Himsā*.⁴ Indulgence in self-passion always brings about *Himsā* because it originates out of desire.⁵ Hence *Abrahma* or sexual impurity is a form of *Himsā*. *Parigraha* or possession of worldly goods is of two kinds, external and internal. The renunciation of *Parigraha* of both sorts is *Ahimsā* and their appropriation is *Himsā*. Internal *Parigraha*, that is, the desire for worldly objects, prejudicially affects the purity of the soul, and this injury to the pure nature of the soul constitutes *Himsā*.

1. S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., VII, 13.

प्रमत्तयोगात् प्राणदद्यपरोपणं हिंसा ।

2. S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 44 and 47.

3. Ibid, 91 and 99.

4. Ibid, 102 and 104.

5. Ibid, 100.

External *Parigraha*, that is, the actual possession of worldly objects, creates attraction and love for them, which defiles purity of the soul and therefore amounts to *Himsā*.¹ Thus it is evident that as *Himsā* is included in falsehood, theft, sexual impurity and possession of goods, all the main five vows of Jainas are based on the principle of *Ahiṃsā*. That is why it is enjoined upon every Jaina to avoid *Himsā* under any pretexts.²

The fourth important thing connected with Jaina ethics is the question of its practicability. Jaina ethics lays down very elaborate rules of conduct—both for laymen and ascetics. As prescribed rules of conduct are described even to the minutest details, it is feared that it would be difficult to put them into practice. But from a close examination it will be seen that the fear is unfounded. It has already been noted that even though the rules of conduct are same for all people, they are to be followed stages by stages. Accordingly the vows have been divided into two categories: *Anuvratas* or small vows and *Mahāvratas* or great vows. The householders have to practise the former and the ascetics the latter. Similar is the case with other observances. Moderation is the key-note of householders' life and severity of saintly discipline. The important hallmark of Jaina ethics is the fact that a graduated course is prescribed with a view to make it possible for every person to observe all rules of conduct by tolerably easy gradations. Further it is not enjoined upon a person to observe all rules of conduct pertaining to a particular stage in life. It has been specifically mentioned that the three-fold path of liberation, consisting of right belief, right knowledge and right conduct, is to be constantly followed according to one's capacity. It is always stressed that the severity of rules of conduct is to be adjusted after taking into account one's own status and capacity. It matters little whether the rules are followed fully or partially and what is more important is the fact that one should not deviate from the path of liberation.³ This means that a person can take all the

1. *Ibid.*, 115, 118 and 119.

2. For a list of pretexts under which it is wrongly believed that *Himsā* is admissible, vide S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 79-80.

3. S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 20, 197, 200 and 209.

vows or can make a selection of some of them. The aspect of practicability of Jaina ethics can be best explained by showing the way of observing the basic rule of conduct, namely, *Ahimsā*.

Ahimsā is abstention from *Himsā*. The renunciation of *Himsā* may be either complete or partial. The complete renunciation (known as *Autsargikī Nivṛtti*) is accomplished in nine ways, by self, through agent, or by approbation, and in each case through mind, body or speech. That which is not complete, is partial renunciation (known as *Apavādikī Nivṛtti*).¹ For a householder it is not possible to practise complete renunciation, and therefore he is recommended to discharge his worldly responsibilities with the minimum injury to others. For giving more practical guidance in this matter *Himsā* has been analysed, according to the mental attitude of the individual, into four kinds, namely, *Gṛhārambhī* or accidental, *Udyamī* or occupational, *Virodhī* or protective, and *Saṁkalpī* or intentional. *Gṛhārambhī Himsā* is that which is unavoidably committed in the performance of necessary domestic duties, such as preparation of food, keeping the things clean, construction of buildings, wells, etc. *Himsā* performed in the exercise of one's profession whether of a soldier, or an agriculturist, or a trader, or an industrialist is *Udyamī Himsā*. *Virodhī Himsā* is that which is unavoidably committed in the defence of person and property against assailants and enemies. *Saṁkalpī Himsā* is that which is committed intentionally or knowingly, for example, hunting, offering sacrifices, killing for food, amusement or decoration, etc. One who has renounced the life of a householder certainly avoids all four kinds of *Himsā*. It is significant to note that it is enjoined upon a householder to abstain from *Saṁkalpī Himsā* or intentional injury and not from the accidental, occupational and protective *Himsā* as it is not possible to do so while living in the householder's stage. However, a householder has been advised to try his best to avoid as far as possible the first three kinds of injury as well and a householder has to make a steady progress in such an endeavour. Thus a householder's vow of *Ahimsā* means abstention from intentional hurting and it

1. S.B.J., Vol. IV., P.S., 76.

can be easily put into practice.¹

The last significant fact about Jaina ethics is the prescription of one ethical code to all people irrespective of their position and stage in life. The rules of conduct are exactly the same both for laymen and ascetics with the only obvious difference that while the former observe them partially the latter have to observe them strictly. The ascetic life is thus a continuation of householder's life and this has fostered intimate relationship between the two main divisions of the Jaina community. As the ascetics are not generally recruited directly from outside but are taken from the *Sravakas* or householders, a feeling of oneness is created so far as the spiritual enterprise of the people is concerned. Since spiritual upliftment was the main aim of people, common practices in spiritual enterprise brought the laymen and monks together and this was the prime factor in the survival of Jainism as compared with other religions. It cannot be doubted that this close union between the laymen and monks brought about by the similarity of their religious duties, differing not in kind, but in degree, has enabled Jainism to avoid fundamental changes within, and to resist dangers from without for more than two thousand years, while Buddhism, being less exacting as regards the laymen, underwent the most extraordinary evolutions and finally disappeared in the country of its origin.² Thus the ethical code was in a way responsible for the continuity of Jaina community in India for such a long time inspite of oppositions from other faiths.

9. JAINA WORSHIP

(I) Objects of Worship :

Generally, the object of worship is the Being who is believed to have created this world and who is considered responsible for the happiness and sorrow in this world. Jainism does not believe

1. (i) S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., Introduction, pp. 25-30.

(ii) Hiralal Jain : Cul. H. I., Vol. I, pp. 230-231.

2. (i) Jacobi, H. : Jainism, E. R.E., Vol. VII, p. 470.

(ii) Turner, R. : Great Cultural Traditions, Vol. I, p. 397.

in any creator of this world and hence the question of worshiping him does not arise. Further, in Jainism the individual soul is regarded responsible for its happiness or sorrow. Infinite happiness is the natural quality of the soul and every soul is capable of attaining that stage of happiness after making it free from the Karmic bondage. As the aim of every Jaina is to obtain that pure condition of the soul after completely conquering all the Karmas, naturally the objects of worship are those who have attained or are on the way of attaining the supreme purity of the soul endowed with the qualities of infinite perception, infinite knowledge, infinite happiness and infinite power. Such a person with infinite qualities is known as *Jina* and he serves as the ideal to be aimed at by all persons who desire to escape from the cycle of births and deaths. The beings who have attained that ideal or have considerably advanced on the way to that ideal are termed as *Parameshthins*, that is, supreme ones. There are five such *Parameshthins* and they are the objects of worship in Jainism.

The first one is known as the *Siddha Parameshthin*. An omniscient being who has conquered *samsara*, that is, the cycle of births and deaths, and has realised the true nature is called the *Siddha Parameshthin*. He represents the highest Being. Next in order comes the *Arhat* (or *Tirthankara*) *Parameshthin*. This represents a lower stage than the *Siddha Parameshthin*, in as much as it is not the final stage in liberation. *Arhats* are embodied souls which have attained omniscience, but have not yet discarded the last vestments of human body. Nevertheless, in some respects, the stage of *Arhat* should be considered, from the human point of view, more important and therefore generally enumerated as the first, because it is in this stage of *Arhat-hood* that the *Tirthankara* reveals for the benefit of the world the path to salvation, and all the various scriptures describing such a path. There appeared twenty-four such *Tirthankaras* in the modern world period. The remaining three *Parameshthins* are the *Acharya Parameshthin*, *Upadhyaya Parameshthin* and *Sadhu Parameshthin*. These three do not represent the stage of complete liberation from *samsara* but nevertheless represent important stages towards that goal. *Acharya Parameshthin* is the head of saints and he wholeheartedly

devotes himself to perform various duties regarding the propagation of religion. Next in rank comes the *Upādhyāya Parameshthīn*. His duties are much more modest. He has no authority to initiate people into Jaina religion or to organise Jaina *Sangha*, (that is, organisation). He is a teaching saint. The last comes the *Sādhu Parameshthīns*, that is, all those great souls who do not have any definite function either of authority or of instruction but still illustrate through their conduct the great path to salvation. All these five constitute the *Pāñcha Parameshthīns*, the five supreme ones, worshipped by Jainas as representing the ideal in life at different stages of realisation.¹

Apart from *Pāñcha Parameshthīns*, which are the proper objects of worship, Jainas extend their reverence, if not worship, to other beings also. Along with human beings like *Parameshthīns* Jainas worship spirits or superhuman beings but the latter are not accorded as much reverence as it is given to the former. Among superhuman beings foremost place is reserved for *Yakshas* and *Śāsanadevatās* who attended on Tīrthaṅkaras.² The names of attendant spirits, both male and female, resemble names of Hindu gods or goddesses and some names are even common to both. At the time of worshipping Tīrthaṅkaras, their respective *Yakshas* and *Śāsanadevatās* are also invoked. Jainas, especially Śvetāmbaras, have their own sixteen goddesses of learning. Jainas revere Indras or kings of gods.³ Besides, they have a pantheon of their own, in which they reckon four classes of superhuman beings, namely, Residential or *Bhavanapatis*, Peripatetic or *Vyantaras*, Stellar or *Jyotiṣhkas*, and Heavenly or *Vaimānikas*.⁴ Further,

1. (i) Chakravarti, A : " Jainism " Cul. H. I., Vol. I, pp. 191-194.

(ii) Jaini, J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, pp. 2-4.

(iii) S. B. J., Vol. IX, N. S., 71-75.

2. For a list of attendant spirits vide Buhler : Indian Sect of the Jainas, pp. 66-71.

3. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 372.

4. (i) Burgess, J. : ' Papers on Śatruñjaya and the Jainas ', I. A., Vol. II, p. 17.

many Jainas according to local customs, allow the existence of Hindu gods and goddesses, worship them and sometimes keep their idols in Jaina temples.¹ The Hindu gods who have here and there secured a share in Jaina worship are Ganesa, Skanda, Bhairava and Hanumana.² We get various accounts of Jaina reverence towards Hindu gods and goddesses in several District Gazetteers.³ Kshetrapala, the god of cities, is worshipped in the same way as the Grâma-devatâs are worshipped by the Hindus.⁴ Among the Hindu goddesses six are more honoured by Jainas. They also revere Sarasvatî, the Hindu goddess of learning and several Mâtâs.⁵ It has to be remembered that in Jainism these deities have even different associations. Further, every caste and family has got its own caste-deity and family-deity and caste-deity are at times found in Jaina temples.⁶ In general it can be said that in Śvetâmbara temples we find far more evidence of the influence of Hinduism than in the Digambara temples.⁷ Lastly, sacred animals, trees, places, and emblems and temples, idols and

(ii) Jacobi, H.: "Demons and Spirits (Jain)", E. R. E., Vol. IV, p. 608.

(iii) S. B. J., Vol. II, T. S., IV, 10-16.

(iv) Sen, A. C.: Some Cosmological Ideas of the Jains, I. H. Q., Vol. VIII, pp. 45-47.

(v) For a full description of the Jaina Gods, vide Jaini, J. L.: Bright Ones in Jainism, pp. 3-15.

1. (i) Stevenson, S.: Notes on Modern Jainism, P. 94.

(ii) B.G., Vol. IX, Pt. I, p. 111.

(iii) Wilson: Works by H.H. Wilson, Vol. I, pp. 319-321.

2. Glasenapp: Jainism, p. 374.

3. Vide especially B.G., Vol. IX, XXII, XXIV.

4. (i) Hamilton, B.: "On the Śrûvaks or Jains", Transactions of R.A.S. of Great Britain & Ireland, Vol. I, P. 531.

(ii) Handiqui, K. K.: Yaśastilaka & Indian Culture, p. 332.

5. Mâtâ is a type of Hindu goddess. For the importance given to the Hindu Goddess Apibikâ by the Jains, see J.U.B., Vol. IX, Pt. II, p. 147.

6. Glasenapp: Jainism, P. 373.

7. Stevenson, S.: Notes on Modern Jainism, p. 93.

scriptures are considered as worthy of reverence by Jainas.¹ Even though we find the custom of worshipping superhuman beings, and Hindu gods and goddesses prevalent among Jainas, it must be remembered that Jainism, really speaking, allows the worship only of *Parameshthins*, that is, ideal human beings. The worship of Hindu gods and goddesses is certainly against the spirit of Jainism.² Really speaking such gods are regarded as false gods in Jainism and right faith excludes belief in the existence or efficacy of such gods. It appears that Jainas might have started this practice in imitation of Hindus. But now-a-days with the spread of Jaina education and revival of interest and better understanding in Jaina religion, faithful Jainas strongly oppose these irreligious practices.³ Even in past the Jaina Āchāryas have emphatically denounced the worship of non-Jaina deities and directed the attention of the Jainas to real and faultless gods of Jainism.⁴

(II) *Intention of Worship :*

Jainas worship only those beings who have achieved salvation in this life by their own efforts or are on the way of liberation. Such human beings are known as *Parameshthins* and are worshipped by the Jainas as representing the ideal in life at different stages of realisation. We have seen that among the *Pañcha Parameshthins*, Tīrthaṅkaras are considered more important from human point of view because they reveal the path of salvation for the benefit of mankind. This Tīrthaṅkara worship is undertaken only for spiritual reasons and not for getting any worldly benefit out of it. In fact, a Tīrthaṅkara does not desire to be prayed at all, nor can he do any favour to his devotee, because he is not concerned with events in this world as he has left it for good. Since a Tīrthaṅkara is not endowed with the act of creation and regulation of this world, the question of asking favours in worldly matters does not arise. A Tīrthaṅkara is, therefore,

1. Glasenapp, H.: Jainism, p. 373.

2. Sanghavi, S.: Jaina Sanskr̥tikā Hṛdaya, pp. 10-11.

3. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 374.

4. For example vide Varūṇagacharitam, XXV, 74-78.

worshipped as an ideal to be aimed at by all persons who desire salvation. Hence the intention of Jaina worship is very pure and it is undertaken with a view to spiritual advance in the direction of that ideal.¹ The attitude of a Jaina devotee is best expressed in the following stanza which is commonly repeated while performing Jaina worship:

मोक्षमार्गस्य नेतारं भेत्तारं कर्मभूमृताम् ।
ज्ञातारं विश्वतत्त्वानां वन्दे तदगुणलब्धये ॥

"Him who is the leader of the path to Liberation, who is the crusher of mountains of Karmas, and who is the knower of all reality, Him I worship in order that I may realise those very qualities of His." Nothing is ever offered to Tirthankaras to obtain any boons from them. They are the model of Perfection for unemancipated beings, having been men themselves at one time in the past.²

But it is a fact that this ideology behind the Jaina worship is not accepted in its real sense by many Jainas. An ordinary Jaina is not satisfied with getting internal purity by worship. He considers a Tirthankara as a king, opens his heart before him and intensely desires to have his kind help in all his difficulties, small or great. When this element of favour by an outside agency is introduced, it is natural that Tirthankaras are worshipped in the same manner as Hindu gods are worshipped. While surrendering something to the Tirthankara, a corresponding favour is expected in return.³ In many of the hymns composed in honour of *Jina*, the Jainas appeal to him with as much favour as the Brähmapa to his gods; and there are often expressions in them which ascribe to *Jina* a creative power.⁴ A more favourable interpretation of these terms is possible and it is evident that such beliefs and practices are contrary to the real spirit of Jaina

1. Bhattacharya, H. : Divinity in Jainism, p. 45.

2. Jain C. R. : What is Jainism, p. 33.

3. For examples of belief in divine grace among Jainas, see Sharma, S. R. : Jainism and Karnāṭaka Culture, pp. 142-146.

4. Buhler, J. G. : On the Indian Sect of the Jainas, p. 19.

worship. They are considered to be result of false knowledge and as such true Jainas, who have obtained right faith, do not approve them.¹

(III) *The Manner of Worship:*

According to Jainism knowledge may be derived by considering four aspects of the thing known, namely, *nāma*, *sthāpanā*, *dravya*, and *bhāva* or its name, representation, substance and nature.² Similarly from these four aspects, we get the four kinds of Tīrthaṅkara worship. *Nāma*-worship is uttering or hearing the name of a Tīrthaṅkara. Worshipping the material representation like picture, image, statue, etc. of a Tīrthaṅkara is *Sthāpanā*-worship. *Dravya* connotes the thing or person which is to become in the future and hence *Dravya*-worship means adoring the souls which are to become Tīrthaṅkaras in the future. *Bhāva* suggests the thing or person in its actual nature and therefore the type of reverence accorded to a Tīrthaṅkara, when he was living on this earth as an omniscient being, by his contemporaries, is known as *Bhāva*-Worship.³

Among these four ways by which a Tīrthaṅkara can be worshipped, the second form namely idol-worship is more prevalent among the Jainas. Majority of Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras are in favour of idol-worship but Tārapāpanthis among the former and Sthānakavāsīs among the latter strongly oppose it. It is needless here to enter into the merits and demerits of idol-worship advanced by the contending parties and into the controversy regarding the antiquity of image-worship among the Jainas.⁴ We shall see in brief the manner of worship of both the sections, namely, those who practise and those who do not practise idol-worship.

The idols are intended to give a view of the all knowing beings in their concentrated posture and they remind the people

1. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 370.

2. Jain J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, p. 74.

3. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 375.

4. For a detailed discussion, vide Glasenapp : Jainism, pp. 397-401.

of their virtues. Idol-worship is thus not the worship of the stone or metal of which the images are made but of the virtues they represent. The Digambara and Śvetāmbara idols differ in certain respects. The Digambara images are either in sitting or erect postures and the postures are called Padmāsana or Kāyat-sarga respectively. The erect image has its feet close to each other, the hands left straight down and the half closed eyes pointed to the end of the nose. In the sitting attitude, the eyes are in the same position but the feet are twined into each other and the up-turned palms of the hands are placed together in the centre of the folded feet. Neither cloth nor ornament has any place on the images. It is, in fact, an embodiment of a perfectly dispassionate mind in complete self-concentration.¹ In contrast to the simple, unadorned Digambara figures, the Śvetāmbara images are given staring glass eyes, are adorned with golden ornaments and jewels, and are represented as wearing loin clothes.² The self-contemplation mood characteristic of Digambara images is thus absent in Śvetāmbara images.³ The images of all Tīrthaṅkaras are practically of the same type and they can be identified only with the help of their respective *Chinhas* or cognizances which are always inscribed below the idols.⁴ The householder worships the images with eight classes of things while ascetics only offer salutations to them. The eight-fold worship is as follows:-

- (i) *Jala Pūjā* is bathing the image with water;
- (ii) *Chandana Pūjā* is marking or sprinkling the idol with chandana, that is, sandal-wood paste and Keśara, that is, saffron;
- (iii) *Pushpa Pūjā* is offering flowers before the image or garlanding it;
- (iv) *Dhūpa Pūjā* is waving of a lighted incense stick before the image or burning incense;

1. Latthe, A.B. : An Introduction to Jainism, pp. 44-45.
 2. Stevenson, S. : Notes on Modern Jainism, pp. 94-95.
 3. Glasenapp: Jainism, p. 401.
 4. For the main characteristics and different varieties of Jaina Images, vide, Bhattacharya, B. C. : Jain Iconography, Lahore, 1939.

- (v) *Dīpa Pūjā* is keeping or waving up a light near the image;
- (vi) *Akshatā Pūjā* is offering rice in front;
- (vii) *Naivedya Pūjā* is offering sweetmeats; and
- (viii) *Phala Pūjā* is the offering of fruits and nuts of all kinds.¹

These eight types of worship need not be performed in any particular order and at times even some of them could be performed. There are different hymns to be sung in offering each of these things. The offerings are called *Nirmālyā* and they are not to be taken for use or eaten by the offerer, if not by any Jaina. It is said to be a great sin to do so.²

The idol-worshippers are known as *Mandiramārgī*, that is, those who go to temples for their spiritual upliftment and non-idol-worshippers are termed as *Sādhumārgī*, that is, those who follow the saints for the same reason. The *Sādhumārgīs* maintain that idol-worship has not been prescribed by the Tīrthaṅkaras, that the references of idol-worship in Jaina books are later interpolations, that idol-worship is against the *Bhāvanā* or spirit of Jaina religion and that it has been introduced in the Jaina religion by priests for their selfish ends.³ Since the *Sādhumārgīs* abhor the very idea of idols, the question of a detailed ritual for their worship does not arise. Instead they go to their religious houses and there perform their daily religious duties. The religious house of Sthānakavāśi Jainas is known as an *Upāśraya* or *Upāsaro* and the six *Āvaśyakas* (i.e. daily duties), namely, *Sāmāyika*, *Chaturvimsati-Jinastuti*, *Vandanā*, *Prati-krmāṇa*, *Kāyotsarga* and *Pratyākhyāna*, are performed there only.⁴

-
1. For the significance of these eight articles used in worship, vide Jain, K.P.: "Śāstrotka Jaina Pūja Vidhāna," Digambara Jain, Vol. XXII, pp. 401-408.
 2. (i) Stevenson, S. : Notes on Modern Jainism, pp. 103-105.
(ii) Latthe, A. B. : An Introduction to Jainism, P. 47.
 3. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 398.
 4. Stevenson, S. : Notes on Modern Jainism, pp. 99-102.

Among the Tārapāpanthis, the religious building is known as *Chaityālaya* which, according to them, means *Granthālaya*, that is, house of sacred books. The Tārapāpanthis visit the *Chaityālaya* and do their religious duties especially *Sāmāyika*, *Jinastuti* and *Vandanā* there.¹

(IV) *Places of Worship :*

(A) *Temples :*

The idol-worshippers necessarily require temples for performing their worship. Jainas have lavished an enormous amount of money on the construction of temples throughout India from ancient times. Among Jaina temples the most old are the cave temples. Near the cave temples are the caves meant for the monks to live and sleep in. The most famous of all Jaina caves and cave temples are those found at Udayagiri in Orissa, at Badami in the Bijapur District of Mysore State (formerly in Bomaby State) and at Ellora in the Aurangabad District of Bombay State.² But more beautiful than the cave temples are the ground temples. The best of such temples are often found in very remote spots, and it is suggested that they were built at times when the Jainas had to hide in such places to avoid Hindu persecution.³ Each temple has an open porch (*mandapa*), a closed hall of assembly (*sabhā mandapa*) and an inner shrine or cell (*garbha-gha*) in which the idol is kept. In front of many Jaina temples we find pillars (*mānastambhas*) on which idols are placed. There is a considerable difference in the construction of Jaina temples in Northern and Southern India.⁴ Temples are constructed out of donations and wherever Jainas are there we come across Jaina temples. The vast number of Jaina temples can be explained by the fact that the Jaina religion considers the construction of new temples or rebuilding of old, dilapidated temples as a meritorious act. The

1. J. H., Vol. VIII, pp. 290-303.

2. Fergusson, J.: History of Indian and Eastern Architecture, Vol. II, P. 9.

3. Russell, R.V.: T.C.C.P., Vol. I, P. 227.

4. Stevenson, S.: Heart of Jainism, P. 285.

Jaina Āchāryas in their literature glorify the act of building temples,¹ and their religious-minded followers faithfully carry it out. In some places the number of Jaina temples is more than necessary and in many places several temples are constructed so near each other that temple-cities are formed. The most famous temple-cities are on Mount Abu in Rajputana, on mounts Girnarā and Satruñjaya in Kathiawar, at Kunthalagiri in Osmanabad District and at Sravapabelgoļa in Mysore State. Temples are always cleanly maintained and they have become proverbial for their neatness.² One gets a deep and calm impression when one enters a Jaina temple and sees the Jaina idol in a self-contemplation mood. In a temple there is the main idol of a particular Tīrthaṅkara and other idols of other Tīrthaṅkaras. In some temples are also placed images of Hindu gods and goddesses below the idol of the principal Tīrthaṅkara in the temple, in other niches or shrines or upper storeys.³ A temple priest or a pujārī is appointed by the community. In the Digambara temples the pujārī is always a Jaina and in the Śvetāmbara temples he is generally a Hindu, and is either a Mālī (gardener) or a Kapābi (farmer) or a Bārota (bard) by caste. Further, in Śvetāmbara temples the pujārī eats himself the offerings made to the idol while in Digambara temples the pujārī, if he is not a temple priest, leaves it for the temple servants.⁴ The Jaina will ordinarily visit a temple and see the Tīrthaṅkara every morning before taking his food, and his wife often goes with him. If there is no temple in their own town or village, Jainas will go to another, provided that

1. For example see Varāhgacharitam, XXII, 47.

2. Krause, C: An Interpretation of Jain Ethics, P. 15.

3. Enthoven, R. E.: T. C. B., Vol. III, p 434.

4. Stevenson, S.: Notes on Modern Jainism, p. 95.

In this connection it is reported by Prof. Dalaśukha Malavaniya that among Śvetāmbaras also Bhojaka Brāhmaṇas are appointed as Pujāris at some places and that these Bhojaka priests are really Jainas though they are termed as Brāhmaṇas. The number of these Bhojaka Brāhmaṇas is very meagre and now they refuse to work as Pujāris. That is why other Hindus are kept as Pujāris in Śvetāmbara temples.

it is within a practicable distance.¹ In the daily temple worship the image is bathed by the temple priest in milk and on special days in the five nectars or *pañchāmrta*. The priest repeats sacred verses, sandal paste is marked at certain places of the image and it is decked with flowers.²

(B) *Upāśrayas*:

Upāśrayas are separate buildings erected by each sect for their monks and nuns. *Upāśrayas* are mostly two-storeyed buildings and there is no outstanding difference between them and the houses of laymen. There is always a lecture hall in an *Upāśraya* and it is here that the monks preach or explain sacred texts to laymen who come to visit them. In *Upāśraya* alone monks and nuns give advice to their followers and accept or make them to do *Pratikramanya*, that is, repentance of all transgressions. *Upāśraya* is the central place of the community and its construction and maintenance charges are borne by the laymen.³ As the Sthānakavāsis do not have temples, they perform their religious duties generally in *Upāśrayas*.⁴

(C) *Chaityālayas*:

Chaityālayas are the places where the religious duties are performed by Tāraṇapanthis, the followers of a non-idolatrous subsect of Digambaras. The meaning of *Chaityālaya*, according to them, is *Granthālaya*, that is, the library. In the middle of the *Chaityālaya* is erected a pulpit and on it the fourteen books of Tāraṇasvāmi, the founder of Tāraṇapantha, are placed. Since Tāraṇapanthis do not have temples, *Chaityālaya* serves as their central place.⁵

10. FESTIVALS AND FASTS

Many festivals and fasts are observed by the Jainas. Festivals

1. Russel, R. V. : T. C. C. P., Vol. I, p. 229.

2. For a detailed account of Abhisheka (bathing of the idol) ceremony, vide, Jain, C. R. : Change of Heart, pp. 134-142.

3. Glasenapp : Jainism, pp. 407-408.

4. Stevenson, S. : Notes on Modern Jainism, pp. 100-101.

5. J. H., Vol. VIII, pp. 290-303.

are performed to commemorate the important events of the past and the fasts are undertaken for self-purification. Both festivals and fasts are intended to divert the attention of laymen from their worldly activities to their ultimate goal. They serve to strengthen the devotion of laymen to spiritual uplift. Just as visits to the sacred places create a deep impression on the minds of people, similarly the observance of various festivals and fasts reminds the people of their main objective in life. The festivals and fasts are observed mainly as religious ceremonies. According to Jainism the religious ceremonies are to be performed at the proper time and place which are determined through the help of astronomy. The knowledge of astronomy is one of the principal accomplishments of a Jaina priest and it is the duty of a Jaina priest to ascertain the proper time and place for all religious ceremonies.¹ The number of Jaina festivals and fasts is quite large and hence we shall describe in brief the most important of them.

(i) *Paryūshana*, or *Daśalakṣaṇa Parva*:-

It has already been noticed that in Jaina religion more significance has been attached to the practice of austerities and fasting is one of the main ways of performing austerities. Various fasts have been prescribed for Jainas and among them the fast of *Paryūshana* is the most sacred. Even though both Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras observe it with great enthusiasm there is a difference in the time and way in which they observe it.

According to Digambaras the *Paryūshana* lasts every year for ten days from the fifth to the fourteenth day (both days inclusive) of the bright half of the month of *Bhādrapada*.² On these days early in the morning all people assemble in the temple and perform the eight-fold worship on a large scale. After the worship, on every day, one chapter out of the ten chapters of the *Tattvārtha-*

1. Das, S. R.: The Jain School of Astronomy, I.H.Q., Vol. 8, pp. 35-36.

2. The statements made by Mrs. Stevenson (Notes on Modern Jainism, p. 107) and Mr. Enthoven, R. V. (T. C. B., Vol. III, P. 434) that *paryūshana* lasts for 15 days among the Digambaras are not correct.

Sūtra, the Bible of the Jainas, is read and explained to the people and further people are enlightened on the value of one of the ten *Dharmas* or reflections. Because special attention is devoted to the importance of *Daśadharma*, that is, ten reflections, during these ten days, the *Paryūshana* is also known as *Daśalakshana Parva*. In these days practically all men and women perform fast according to their capacity. A few observe fasts for all ten days without taking any food whatsoever, while many take food once a day during this period. The last day of *Paryūshana*, known as *Anantachaturdaśī*, is considered as particularly sacred and is observed by performing special ceremonies. Generally on this day all people observe fast and spend their whole day in a temple.¹

Among the Śvetāmbaras, the *Paryūshana* begins with the twelfth of the dark half of Śrāvana and ends with the fifth of the bright half of Bhādrapada. Thus it lasts for eight days. The special object with which they keep *Paryūshana* is to obtain pardon for the sins of the year. The people observe the fast with varying strictness. While some fast for the whole eight days, many fast on every other day (and eat specially dainty food on the alternate days) and all fast on the last day. People go to the *Upāśrayas*, where special services of reading scriptures and others are held for them, as often as they can, and some of them spend the whole day there. Further, for gaining special merit, people are enjoined to do *Poshadha*, that is, to behave like an ascetic for twenty-four hours while remaining in an *Upāśraya*. The last day of *Paryūshana*, known as *Saṁvatsarī*, is the most solemn day of all. Apart from fasting, people greet each other and ask forgiveness for any injuries inflicted during the past year, and letters are written to friends at a distance asking their forgiveness also.² In many towns, on the third day of the *Paryūshana*, the Śvetāmbaras organise a procession in honour of the *Kalpa-Sūtra*,³ a scripture which they hold in great reverence. Lord Mahāvīra's

1. Kailashachandra : Jainadharma, pp. 310-311.

2. Among the Digambaras this is done on the first day of the dark half of Aśvina, vide Kailashachandra : Jainadharma, p. 310.

3. Kalpa Sūtra has been translated into English by Dr. H. Jacobi vide S.B.E., Vol. XXII.

birth-day is conventionally celebrated on the fifth day of *Paryūshana* even though it really falls on the thirteenth day of the bright half of *Chaitra*. The Śvetāmbaras organise a cradle procession in honour of the day.¹

The Jainas are specially zealous during *Paryūshana* to prevent any animal life being taken. In many places they have prevailed on respective local authorities to prohibit slaughter of animals during these days. In other places they try to stop, if necessary by payment of money, slaughter of animals at least on the last day.²

(ii) *Siddhachakra Pūjā or Saint-wheel Worship:*

This is performed only by Śvetāmbara Jainas twice a year in *Chaitra* and *Āsvina* and lasts for nine days beginning on the seventh and ending on the full-moon day. It ranks next in importance to *Paryūshana*.³ In every Śvetāmbara temple there is a Saint-wheel, or *Siddhachakra*,—a little eight-sided plate made of either brass or silver with five tiny figures. These figures represent the *Pañcha Parameshthins*. Between the figures are written the names of the three jewels of the Jaina faith and also the word ‘*tapa*’, i.e., austerity. This plate, which thus bears on its surface a complete summary of Jainism, is regarded as of such importance that no Śvetāmbara temple is without it. Once during the days of worship people take the Saint-wheel in procession out of the town and bathe it in water. This little pilgrimage is known as *Jalayātrā*.⁴

(iii) *Ashtānhika:*

The fast of *Ashtānhika* is regarded next in importance to *Paryūshana*. Only Dīgāmbaras observe this fast. It is performed

1. Stevenson, S.: Festivals and Fasts (Jain), E.R.E., Vol. V, pp. 875-877.
2. Stevenson, S.: Notes on Modern Jainism, p. 109.
3. Glasenapp : Jainism, p. 445.
4. Stevenson, S.: Festivals and Fasts (Jain), E. R. E., Vol. V, p. 877. The statement made by Stevenson that the worship lasts for eight days is wrong. It lasts for nine days.

thrice a year during the week beginning from the lunar eighth in the months of *Kārtika*, *Phālguna* and *Āshādha*. In these days, like in *Paryūshana*, the fast is observed with varying strictness.¹

(iv) *Mahāvīra Jayanti*:

The birth-day anniversary of Lord Mahāvīra falls on the thirteenth day of the bright half of *Chaitra* and this is celebrated with great pomp and enthusiasm throughout India by all Jainas. Processions are taken, meetings are held and the message of Lord Mahāvīra is explained to Jainas and non-Jainas alike. In some states and provinces this day is declared as a public holiday. This is the only festival commonly celebrated by all sections of the Jaina community.

(v) *Vīraśāsana Jayanti*:

This is celebrated mainly by Digambaras Jainas every year on the first day of the dark half of *Śrāvanya*. The day is important because on this very day Lord Mahāvīra, after gaining omniscience delivered his first religious discourse on the Vipulāchala mountain near Rājagṛha in the country of Magadha.²

(vi) *Śruta-Pañchamī*:

Śruta-pañchamī falls on the fifth day of the bright half of *Jyeshtha*. On this day, according to Digambaras, their two saints Pushpadanta and Bhūtabali, completed the writing of the sacred book *Shatkhandaśāgama* and it was then worshipped by all members of the Jaina community. In remembrance of that event every year on that day the Digambaras worship their sacred books and remove dust and insects from them.³ The Śvetāmbaras do the same thing on the fifth day of the bright half of *Kārtika*. They call this day as *Jñāna-pañchamī* instead of *Śruta-pañchamī*.⁴

1. (i) Kailashachandra : Jainadharma, P. 312.

(ii) Russell, R. V. ; T. C. C. P., Vol. I, pp. 229-231.

(iii) B. G., Vol. XXIV, P. 138.

2. Divakar, S. C. : Jaina-Śāsana, pp. 257-258.

3. Divakar, S. C. : Jaina-Śāsana, pp. 269-270.

4. Kailashachandra : Jainadharma, P. 314.

The institution of this festival has been of incalculable use in preserving Jaina literature, for not only are the books worshipped but all the volumes in Jaina treasure-houses are supposed to be dusted, freed from insects and rearranged on this day.¹

(vii) *Days of Abstinence:*

In addition to the special days like the above, many Śvetāmbara Jainas observe as fasts, with more or less strictness, twelve days in every month. These days are the two second, the two fifth, the two eighth, the two eleventh, the two fourteenth and the bright and dark fifteenth of each month.² The Digambaras, however, observe as fasts ten days in every month of the year, that is, the second, the fifth, the eighth, the eleventh and the fourteenth days of both the bright and dark halves of the month.³ Those who cannot do these throughout the year, do it only during *Chāturmāsa*, that is, the four months of rain from *Āshādha* to *Kārtika*.⁴ Less devout Jainas among the Śvetāmbaras observe only five days of abstinence, namely, the two eighth, the two fourteenth and the fifteenth of the bright half of the month,⁵ but among the Digambaras only four days, namely, the two eighth and the two fourteenth days, are observed.⁶ Moreover, four full-moon days during the year are observed as special fasts by the Śvetāmbara Jainas. These full-moon days are in the months of *Kārtika*, *Phālguna*, *Chaitra* and *Āshādha*. People fast on these days, decorate their temples with lamps, and go to the temples to worship. The *Kārtika* and *Chaitra* full-moon days are considered more important and on these two days people try to go on pilgrimage to any sacred place, especially to hills of *Satruñjaya* in Kathiawar. If they cannot go, they still manage to acquire some merit by

1. Stevenson, S.: Festivals & Fasts (Jain), E.R.E., Vol. V, P. 878.

2. Ibid, P. 878.

3. B. G., Vol. XXII, P. 118.

4. Russell, R. V.: T.G.C.P., Vol. I, pp. 229-231.

5. Stevenson, S.: Festivals & Fasts (Jain), E.R.E., Vol. V, P. 878.

6. B. G., Vol. XXII, P. 118.

worshipping a map or photograph of Śatruñjaya.¹

(viii) *The Bathing of Gommateśvara:*

The bathing of Gommateśvara at Sravanabelgola in Mysore State is one of the rare festivals of the Digambara Jainas as it is done after an interval of so many years. The last two festivals were held in 1940 and in 1953 A. D. The idol of Gommateśvara (i.e., of Bahubali, the son of the first Tīrthaṅkara, Lord Rshabhanātha) was carved by about 983 A. D.² and it is regarded as one of the wonders of the world since nowhere else we come across such a fine, well proportioned, colossal statue of 57 feet in height carved out of one stone only. It is but natural that utmost importance is attached by the Digambara Jainas in visiting and seeing the bathing ceremony of the idol of Gommateśvara.³

(ix) *Diwālī or Dipāvalī:*

Apart from the festivals and fasts described above, which are observed only by the Jainas, there are other festivals which are observed by Jainas along with Hindus. Among such festivals that of *Diwālī* is most important, as well as most sacred. But there is a difference in the reasons for observing this festival between the Jainas and the Hindus. According to Jainas when their last Tīrthaṅkara Lord Mahāvira achieved Moksha or salvation in the early hours of the last day of the month of *Āśvina* in the year 527 B. C. the celestial and other beings who were present at that time worshipped him and instituted an illumination saying that " Since the light of intelligence is gone, let us make

1. Stevenson, S. : Festivals and Fasts (Jaina), E. R. E., Vol. V, pp.877-878.

The statements made by Mrs. Stevenson that Digambaras also observe these four full-moon fasts (vide Notes on Modern Jainism p. 109) and that Digambaras observe the two full-moon fasts in the months of *Phalguna* and *Ashādha* are not correct.

2. Rice, B.L. : Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, P. 47.

3. For a description of the whole bathing ceremony, vide Jain, H. : Jaina Śilālekha Saṅgraha, Introduction, pp. 33-34.

an illumination of material matter."¹ From that time the followers of Mahāvīra celebrate every year the festival of lamps in honour of his achieving liberation. Their year, known as *Vīra Nirvāṇa Saṃvat*, also begins from this date. On this day early in the morning people visit the temple and worship the idol of Lord Mahāvīra with sweet balls known as *Nirvāṇalāḍū*. Because of the happy event of gaining salvation by their Lord, people prepare special sweet dishes on that and subsequent days. The other ceremonies like *Lakshmi-pūjana* and *Bhāu-Bīja* attached to *Divālī* have no religious significance and are performed by the Jainas according to the local Hindu customs.

(x) *Rakshābandhana* :

Another great festival which is observed by the Jainas, especially by the Digambara Jainas, in common with the Hindus,² is that of *Rakshābandhana*. It teaches the spirit of affection towards the co-religionists. The Jainas observe it on the full moon day of *Śrāvanya* because on this day their ascetic Vishṇukumāra saved through his own spiritual powers the lives of seven hundred Jaina monks from the clutches of human-sacrifice organised by Bali, the King of Hastināpura.³ In honour of this event the Jainas every year on that day worship the great sage Vishṇukumāra and the seven hundred monks. The significance of this festival is that just as Vishṇukumāra removed the danger over the Jaina community by his own efforts, similarly the Jainas should bear in mind that they should also try to protect in times of distress any aggression against their idols, temples, ascetics, institutions, etc.⁴

(xi) *Akshayatṛīyā*:

Like *Divālī* and *Rakshābandhana*, the *Akshayatṛīyā* is also

1. *Kalpa-Sūtra*, S. B. E., Vol. XXII, P. 266.

2. The Hindus observe this day as a Gala Day without any religious significance. See Gupte, B. A.: *Hindu Holidays and Ceremonials*, P. 173.

3. For a full story, vido Kailashachandraji : *Jainadharma*, pp. 317-320.

4. *Divakara*, S. C. : *Jaina-Śāsana*, P. 262.

celebrated by both Hindus¹ and Jainas. *Akshayatṛīḍyā* falls on the third day of the bright half of *Vaiśākha* and it is considered as one of the most auspicious and sacred days by the Jainas. According to them on this day Lord R̄shabhadeva, the first Tīrthaṅkara, received in accordance with the religious ritual the food in the form of sugar-cane juice for the first time after his continuous fast of six months from the hands of Śreyāṁsa, the king of Hastinā-pura, and hence the sanctity of the day. On this day Lord R̄shabhadeva is worshipped and his idol is bathed in sugar-cane juice. The celebration of this day is intended to inspire people to extend gifts—of whatever value they might be—to right persons and thus to secure merit for them in the way by which king Śreyāṁsa secured indestructible merit (*Akshaya Puṇya*) by giving gift of even sugar-cane juice to Lord R̄shabhadeva.²

From the description of Jaina festivals and fasts it is evident that the Jainas have their own festivals and fasts³ and that some of them are peculiar to only certain sections of the community. Further, they observe some festivals in common with the Hindus but they attach different significance for their celebration. Again, in certain parts they have adopted the local Hindu festivals after giving them a new colouring to suit their religion. The Karnā-taka Jainas, for example, worship on the *Gaṇeśa-Chaturthī* day the sage Gautama under the name Gaṇādhipa instead of worshipping the Hindu god Gaṇapati and instead of worshipping Veṅkaṭaramaṇa like local Brahmins, they worship Bharatarāja, their ancient king.⁴ In addition to these, the Jainas follow a number of Hindu festivals, like *Dasarā*, *Makarasaṅkrānta* and others, which have no connection with their religion. This might be due to the close proximity between Jainas and Hindus. But it should be noted that only the Hindu festivals are observed by the Jainas not with the view of gaining any religious merit

1. On this day Hindus offer oblations to deceased parents. See Gupte, B. A.: *Hindu Holidays & Ceremonials*, P. 5.

2. Divakara, S. C.: *Jaina-Śāsana*, pp. 265-269.

3. Wilson, H. H.: *Works by Wilson*, Vol. I, P. 322.

4. B. G., Vol. XXII, P. 118.

but as a part of their social life with the Hindus. No doubt for some time past the Gujerath Jaina women were worshipping the goddess of small-pox on the Śītalā-saptami day along with the Hindu women,¹ but such practices are being discontinued as they go against the Jaina religion.² At the same time it should not be lost sight of that the Hindu festivals and fasts which are mainly religious like *Rāmanavamī*, *Gokulāshṭamī*, *Mahāśivarātra*, etc. are not observed by the Jainas. It can, therefore, be said in conclusion that the Hindu festivals with a distinctly religious tinge of their own are not celebrated by the true Jainas.

11. JAINA SUPERSTITIONS

Along with the Hindus the Jainas also believe that there are superhuman beings who can influence the fate of individuals as well as of groups of individuals in good and bad manner. Jainas further contend that even though such beings have limited power and are governed by the doctrines of Karma, still they can exert good or bad influence on fate of human beings because of their (superhuman beings') position which is the direct result of their actions in the past births. Naturally these superhuman beings cannot do anything to the liberated beings but they can, to some extent, extend happiness to, or inflict sorrow on, the ordinary beings. That is why, it is argued, human beings have to strive to please and secure favour from the superhuman beings.³ Hence we find that most of the Jainas have a firm belief in magic and charms, and they pacify evil spirits, ghosts, and witches, in the same way as other Hindu castes do.⁴

The Jainas believe in spirit possession and call their family spirits 'pitrad' or fathers. Though they profess not to believe that infants are attacked by spirits they perform the ceremonies observed by Brahmanic Hindus in honour of Mothers Fifth and Sixth. When children suffer from Bālagraha, a form of convul-

1. Stevenson, S.: Festivals & Fasts (Jain), E.R.E., Vol. V, P. 878.

2. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I and II, pp. 93, 132-133, 290-291, 327-328, etc.

3. Glaserapp : Jainism. pp. 414-415.

4. Hassan : T. C. N. D., P. 269.

sion, Jaina women think that it is the work of spirits. Jainas profess not to hold the ordinary Brahmanic belief that the first wife comes back and plagues the second wife. Still they hold in great terror Jakhins, that is, the ghosts of women who die with unfulfilled wishes. Among Jainas, as among other Hinus, Jakhins plague the living by attacking children with lingering diseases. When a child is wasting away Jaina parents make the Jakhin a vow that if the child recovers, Jakhin's image shall be placed with their family gods. After the recovery of the child, the image is daily worshipped with the house gods with great reverence. This Jakhin worship is said to be common among the local Jainas.¹

In some places Jainas of all classes believe in sorcerers, witches, and soothsayers and consult them in cases of sickness or other misfortune. But they have no professional exorcists or charmers chiefly because their place is filled by the Jaina priests. When sickness is believed to be caused by spirit possession the priest is consulted. The priest tries various methods in succession. He gives the *tirtha* or holy water to the sick person to drink. He rubs *arigāra* or ash on the brow of the sick person. He asks the members of his family to start Jakhin worship. He ties the *tālta* or charmed casket round the sick person's arm or neck. Lastly, he starts *anushthāna* or god pleasing ceremony. When all remedies are of no avail Jainas sometimes take the sick to a holy place called Stavanidhi, and the sick or some relation on his behalf worships the spirit-scaring Brahmanidhi until the patient is cured. The Jainas profess to have no sacred pools, animals, or trees that have a power of spirit-scaring.² In certain places in South Kanara a regular worship of Bhūtas or devils is undertaken by the Jainas.³

Unlike most Brahmanic Hindus, Jainas do not believe that a woman in her monthly sickness is specially liable to spirit attacks. In their opinion a woman runs most risk of being possessed when

1. B. G., Vol. XXIV, P. 139.

2. (i) B. G., Vol. XXII, P. 118.

(ii) B. G., Vol. XXIV, P. 140.

3. Thurston, : T. C. S. I., Vol. II, P. 427.

she has just bathed and her colour is heightened by turmeric, when her hair is loose, and when she is gaily dressed, and happens to go to a lonely well or river bank at noon or sunset. Boys are also apt to be possessed when they are all well-dressed or fine looking or when they are unusually sharp and clever.¹

Orthodox Jainas who object to the early or direct form of spirit action believe in the more refined *dṛṣṭa* or evil eye as a cause of sickness. According to the popular Jaina belief all eyes have not the blessing power of the evil eye. Various reasons are given for those who possess an evil eye. For example, it is believed that if at the time of cutting the child's naval any of the blood enters the child's eyes, their glance is sure to have a blasting or evil power.² Further, they fear perfect happiness, and whenever they see it, they believe that an evil eye will harm the happy one through jealousy. It is considered that anything dark or bitter will avert this, and so, if new jewellery is worn, a black thread is tied on to it; if a new house is built, a black earthen vessel is placed outside; and if a beautiful child is taken out, its cheek is marked with a black smear. In the same way at a wedding a lemon is tied in the turban of the bridegroom and in the dress of the bride, so that something sour may safeguard the sweetness of their lot. When illness occurs, it is also put down to the influence of an evil eye and to remove it a detailed process known as '*Najara bandhi*' is undergone. Again, another method of removing the influence of an evil eye from a sick person is to wave a loaf of millet bread round his head and then give it to a black dog; if the animal eats it, it is believed that the influence of the evil eye passes into the dog.³

Apart from the beliefs mentioned above Jainas in certain places have many other superstitions. On the fifth day of *Śrāvana* many Jaina women worship serpents, apparently to propitiate the spirits of their ancestors. In the days of plague or cholera

1. B.G., Vol. XXIV, P. 139.

2. B.G., Vol. XXIV, P. 139.

3. (i) Stevenson, S.: Heart of Jainism, pp. 264-266.

(ii) Glasenapp: Jainism, P. 417.

offerings are made according to the advice of the Brâhmaṇa priests. During the epidemic of small-pox, Jaina women take certain vows before Śitalâ Mâtâ, the goddess of small-pox. Again, Jaina women often go to Hindu or Jaina temples and promise to offer something if only a son may be born to them.¹ Further, it is believed that the dreams can foretell the good or bad future and many examples are noted in Jaina literature where the dreams had suggested the occurrence of both the happy and unhappy events.² Moreover, the Jainas have a faith in both the auspicious and inauspicious signs and the Jaina books give a long list of such signs especially to be noted at the time of starting on a journey.³ Further, magic occupies an important place in the Jaina literature. It ranges from the gross and crude practices to avert the evil eye for affording protection against malignant men and spirits to the subtle process of discovering one's thoughts, or inducing a magic sleep, going through the air, causing invisibility and compelling obedience of human and divine beings, by means of the dreadful black art.⁴ The Jainas of Rajputana were considered as magicians and were supposed to have possessed supernatural skill. They were, therefore, known as Vidyâvân or Magi (that is, the Man of Secrets) of Rajasthan.⁵ Similarly, a few Mysore Jainas, are skilled magicians and others have attained yogic life. They also believe in the efficacy of the *mantrams*.⁶ It is stated that Manadeva, the spiritual leader of Jainas, even suppressed the plague of Taxilla by composing the Śântistotra which contained many mantras.⁷

In this connection it should be noted that the superstitions mentioned above have no religious sanction at all. Jainism has

1. Stevenson, S. : Heart of Jainism, pp. 266-267.

2. Glasenapp : Jainism, pp. 418-419.

3. Śripâlachandraji : Jaina Sampradâya Śikshâ, pp. 751-756.

4. Kalipada Mitra : Magic and Miracle in Jain Literature, I. H. Q., Vol. XV, P. 175.

5. Tod : Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II, P. 602.

6. Iyer L. K. A. : M. T. C, Vol. IV, P. 445.

7. Barodias, U. D. : History and Literature of Jainism, P. 63.

never enjoined upon its followers to accept such beliefs because they go against its basic principle, namely, non-existence of divine grace. Jaina saints had visualised that the people, who are much after securing personal favour from gods, are prone to believe in and abide by such superstitions. According to Jainism *Samyag-darśana* or Right Faith is the primary condition expected in its followers. Right faith, as we have already noted, means a firm belief in the principle of Jainism. It is important to observe that among other things this right faith must be free from the three types of superstitious ignorance,¹ and all superstitions described above come under these three categories of superstitious ignorance. Hence the true believers and followers of Jainism do not approve of these superstitions and the Bombay Gazetteer has also admitted this fact.² From the fact that the Jaina superstitions have no religious basis and that they are just like Hindu superstitions, it is evident that the Jainas might have adopted them from the Hindus.

12. JAINA SAMSKĀRAS

The life of a Jaina layman is regulated by various ceremonies through which he has to pass right from his conception upto his death. These ceremonies are prescribed by religion with a view that a layman would lead a life in accordance with the religious principles and attain the main aim of final liberation. Since religion wants that the ceremonies should be performed at proper times, they are known as *Samskāras* or Sacraments. Such ceremonies are not uniform in the main sects of the Jainas and further many of them differ in their details from province to province. Without going deep into the differences we shall observe, in brief, their main features.

The two principal sects of the Jainas, namely the *Digambaras* and the *Śvetāmbaras*, prescribe different ceremonies for their adherents even though their main aim is the same. According to the *Digambaras*, a *Śrāvaka*, that is, a layman, has to pass

1. See page 208 ante.

2. B. G., Vol. XXIV, P. 139.

through the fifty-three ceremonies mentioned in their sacred book *Ādi-purāṇa*.¹ They are as follows:-

- (1) *Ādhāna or Garbhādhāna*: i.e., conception-ceremony, is performed before a woman conceives. When a woman attains puberty, she and her husband should go to the temple and perform worship in the prescribed manner. After this *Ādhāna* ceremony the pair should cohabit at night only for the sake of progeny and not for sexual attachment.
- (2) *Prīti*: is performed in the third month after the conception. In this worship, music, etc. should be performed to keep the pregnant woman delightful.
- (3) *Suprīti*: The above ceremonies should be performed in the fifth month after conception.
- (4) *Dhṛti*: The same should be performed, in the seventh month, for the sake of the child to be born.
- (5) *Moda*: It consists in the writing of the primary letters अ॒ ति॑ आ॒ ऊ॑ सा॑ on the body of the pregnant woman in the ninth month.
- (6) *Priyōdbhava*: It consists in worship, etc., at the birth of a child.
- (7) *Nāmakarma*: The child should be given a name on any auspicious day after twelve days from its birth. It should be done with due worship and the name should be one from the 1008 names of *Jina*.
- (8) *Bahiryāna*: After two, three or four months the child should be taken out of the house on a convenient auspicious day.
- (9) *Nishadyā*: Then the child should be made to sit after duly performing the worship.
- (10) *Annaprāśana*: It is feeding the child after doing worship in the eighth month or so.

1. *Ādi Purāṇa*, XXXVIII, 55-62, and 70-312.

- (11) *Vyushti*: It is the first anniversary to be performed with worship as usual and with fasts.
- (12) *Kesavāpa*: It is the ceremony of keeping hairs after shaving for the first time.
- (13) *Lipisankhyānasaiagraha*: It means that in the fifth year the child should be taught to write at the hands of a learned layman after performing worship.
- (14) *Upanīti*: It is the initiation ceremony and it is performed in a Jaina temple in the eighth year of the child. After this the child wears the sacred thread as a sign of having taken the five small vows and is known as a *Brahmachāri* or a celibate. Now he has to maintain himself on begging alms.
- (15) *Vratacharyā*: Leading a strict celibate and single life, the boy should keep the vows and should study various subjects from his teacher.
- (16) *Vratāvataraya*: It is to be performed in the 12th or 16th year after completing his studies. The boy should take leave of his preceptor and adopt any of the prescribed ways of livelihood. Now he need not be very strict in his life but will have to maintain celibacy till he gets married.
- (17) *Vivāha*: On the advice of the teacher, the boy should be married to a girl from a good family in accordance with the prescribed rules. After marriage the pair should go on a pilgrimage for seven days and then should cohabit in the ovulation period only for the sake of progeny.
- (18) *Varnalābha*: Until now the son was in the house of his father. After worshipping God the father gives a part of his property to his son in the presence of other persons and asks his son to make a separate household and to lead a good life.
- (19) *Kulacharyā*: He should now perform the six daily duties of a householder.

- (20) *Gṛhīśitā*: Excellence in layman's duties should be attained through wisdom, character, etc. with a view to become superior to others.
- (21) *Praśānti*: Quietude should be got by assigning family-affairs to the care of the sons.
- (22) *Gṛhatyāga*: When a person feels that he has satisfactorily fulfilled the duties of a householder, he should leave the house after handing over, in the presence of his friends, all his property to his sons, and advising the eldest son to continue the family tradition.
- (23) *Dīkshādya*: After leaving the house he should take up to the pre-ascetic life.
- (24) *Jinarūpatā*: It consists in the throwing up of the clothes and taking on the life of an ascetic without any bondage.
- (25) *Maunādhyayanavṛtti*: Concentrated study should now begin when there should be no talk on anything but study.
- (26) *Tīrthakṛdbhāvanā*: After full study he should think again and again on the sixteen reflections of a Tīrthaṅkara.
- (27) *Gurusthānābhypagama*: With the consent of his preceptor he should accept the post of teaching ascetic and begin to teach others.
- (28) *Ganopagrahaya*: By his preaching and actions he should try to protect all members of the Jaina community.
- (29) *Svagurusthānāvāpti*: After transferring all his duties to his worthy disciple, he should assume the position of an Āchārya, i.e., the head of the ascetics.
- (30) *Nihsarigatvātmabhāvanā*: Relying on his disciple he should devote his time to self-meditation only.
- (31) *Yoganirvāṇasamprāpti*: By following supreme austerity

ties he should concentrate only on the nature of the self.

- (32) *Yoganirvāṇasādhana*: Discarding food and care of the body, he should aim at total concentration.
- (33) *Indrōpapāda*: After death he goes to the status of an Indra, i.e., the king of gods, by virtue of his merits.
- (34) *Indrabhisheka*: Gods then consecrate him as an Indra.
- (35 & 36) *Vidhidāna and Sukhodaya*: Having ascended the throne of Indra, he enjoys the happiness in the heaven.
- (37) *Indratyāga*: He then abandons the pleasures of heaven.
- (38) *Avatāra*: He descends down from the heaven to the earth to become a Tīrthaṅkara.
- (39) *Hiranyajanmatā*: Then the soul enters the embryo of a lady who is to give birth to a Tīrthaṅkara.
- (40) *Mandarendrabhisheka*: When he is born, Indra worships him on the Meru mountain.
- (41) *Gurupūjana*: Indra worships this to be Tīrthaṅkara in childhood.
- (42) *Yauvarājya*: He gets the position of an heir-apparent in his young age.
- (43) *Svarājya*: He secures the power over whole empire.
- (44) *Chakralābha*: He acquires the chakra, that is, the nine stores and the fourteen jewels.
- (45) *Digvijaya*: He starts for the conquest of the whole universe.
- (46) *Chakrabhisheka*: The conquest is celebrated.
- (47) *Sāmrājya*: He guides the subsidiary kings in their duties towards their subjects.
- (48) *Nishkrānti*: He then gives his empire to the eldest son and becomes an ascetic.
- (49) *Yogasainmaha*: He gets the power due to omniscience and austerities.
- (50) *Ārhantya*: He attains the status of an Arhat.

- (51) *Vihāra*: The Arhat or Tīrthaṅkara preached the truth to all people.
- (52) *Yogatyāga*: Then he draws the soul into itself.
- (53) *Agraniṇyṛti*: Then he achieves final deliverance.

These fifty-three ceremonies describe the progress of a layman to Moksha or final liberation. But from the nature of the ceremonies it is clear that no individual in this age can possibly pass through all of them. The number of ceremonies for an ordinary householder will therefore have to be limited for practical purposes and we find that the Digambaras have tried to curtail them. But it is surprising that they have not arrived at a fixed number of ceremonies. The late Brahmachāri Śitalaprasādaji has prescribed¹ for the householders the first twenty-six of the above mentioned fifty-three ceremonies and in addition that of Antyakarma, that is, death ceremony. Papđita Lalārāma Śāstri in his book² "Shoḍaśa Saṁskāra" (i. e. sixteen Sacra-ments) really prescribes in all eighteen ceremonies, namely, the first seventeen of the fifty-three ceremonies referred to above and death ceremony.

The Śvetāmbaras do not accept the ceremonies given by the Digambaras. On the contrary they have evolved their own ceremonies. According to them layman has to pass through sixteen ceremonies prescribed in their sacred book "Āchāradinakara".³ The ceremonies, in brief, are as follows:-

- (1) *Garbhādhāna*: It is performed in the fifth month after conception. The Brāhmaṇa priest, who is specially invited, chants sacred hymns and blesses the couple. This is done with a view to ensure the protection of the mother and the child in the embryo from various kinds of fears.

- (2) *Puṁsavāna*: It is done in the eighth month after conception with a desire to get a male issue. On any

1. Vide Śitalaprasāda: Gṛhasthadharma, Bombay, 1913.

2. It is published by Jinavāṇī Prachīrakā Karyālaya, Calcutta, 1924.

3. Vardhamānasūri: Āchāradinakara.

auspicious day very early in the morning the pregnant woman is made to sit under an open sky. The preceptor sprinkles holy water on her, chants 'mantras' or hymns and gives her blessing that she may have delivery without difficulty.

- (3) *Janma*: This is the birth ceremony. When the child is born, its naval cord is cut, the mother and child are given a bath and the astrologer is asked to prepare its horoscope. The preceptor is called and he ties the amulet round the child's hand after chanting hymns to Goddess Ambikā with an intention that she may protect the new-born child.
- (4) *Suryendudarśana*: It means bowing to the sun and the moon. On the third day after the birth of the child, the preceptor, after due worship of the idol of Jina and the image of the sun, makes the mother and the child to bow down to the sun and at the same time recites 'mantras'. In the evening the same process is performed in connection with bowing down to the moon.
- (5) *Kshirāśana*: On the same day the preceptor sprinkles the sanctified water on the child and then the mother's milk is given to the child. Through his 'mantras' the preceptor blesses the child to the effect that it may be endowed with perfect health and long life.
- (6) *Shashṭhi*: At night on the sixth day after the birth of the child, the preceptor worships the eight goddesses of protection (i.e., Rakshaṇadevi), namely, Brahmāṇī, Māheśvari, Kaumāri, Vaishpavī, Vārāhi, Indrāṇī, Chāmūḍā, and Tripurā, and goddess Shashṭhi or Ambā. On the next day morning the preceptor sprinkles the sanctified water on the child and blesses it with 'mantras'.
- (7) *Śuchikarma*: As the mother is considered to have become impure because of delivery, she is purified by the preceptor after the lapse of a certain period which varies according to classes. The Brahmins are puri-

fied after a period of ten days, the Kshatriyas twelve days, the Vaiśyas sixteen days and the Śūdras one month. This purification is known as Suchikarma.

- (8) *Nāmakarma*: It means giving name to the child. It is performed on the same day on which the 'Suchikarma' is performed; or sometimes it is performed on the second or third day after the 'Suchikarma'. In the presence of all members of the family, the astrologer reads the child's horoscope prepared by him and the preceptor conducts the worship of vital planets. Then they all proceed to the Jaina temple where after the worship of Tīrthaṅkara a name is given to the child by its paternal aunt.
- (9) *Annaprāśana*: It means the giving of food to the child for the first time. This is performed on any auspicious day during the sixth month in the case of a male child, and during the fifth month in the case of a female child. After the worship to be performed by the preceptor is over, the mother feeds the child from the food offered to the family deity.
- (10) *Karṇavedha*: This is piercing the lobes of ears of the child when it becomes three, five or seven years old. At this time the preceptor duly performs the worship of Mātās or Hindu goddesses and chants certain 'mantras'.
- (11) *Kshaurakarma or Chūḍākarma*: Then on any auspicious day this tonsure ceremony is performed. The preceptor worships the Mātās and then the barber of the family shaves the child. In the case of the upper three classes a tuft of hair is kept on the crown of the head and in the case of a Śūdra the head is shaven completely.
- (12) *Upanayana*: This initiation ceremony is allowed only for the first three classes and that too at a specific time, namely, for the Brahmins during the eighth year,

the Kshatriyas during the eleventh year and the Vaiśyas during the twelfth year. Śūdras are not entitled to have this ceremony. On an auspicious day the preceptor after performing the worship of a Jaina idol in front of the house, chants certain hymns and gives the sacred thread to the boy. Then he communicates three times the '*Pañcha Parameshthī Mantra*' in the boy's ears and making him a Brahmacāri the preceptor teaches him the vows to be followed by him. At last the boy is required to go and beg from Jaina houses.

- (13) *Vidyārambha*: It means the commencement of study. On an auspicious day the preceptor thrice recites the 'mantra' of Sarasvati, the goddess of learning, into the right ear of the boy and then the pupil is taken in a procession to his teacher.
- (14) *Vivāha*: This is the most important ceremony in the life of a layman. We have already described in detail the marriage ceremony in the previous chapter.
- (15) *Vratāropa*: This is the ceremony of taking vows and it is considered specially significant because it is believed that a person acting according to vows is alone entitled to happiness in this world and to a good place in the next birth. Unlike the preceding ceremonies, this ceremony is performed by any Jaina ascetic. The ceremony consists of taking one or more of the twelve vows of a layman.
- (16) *Antakarma*: When a person is on the death-bed, he offers final prayers, does repentance for the past misdeeds, distributes some amount in charity, leaves solid or liquid food on the verge of death and lastly dies with his mind contemplating the *Pañcha Parameshthins*. The dead body, after giving it a bath and wearing it new clothes, is taken to a cremation ground in a procession. The people return home from the cremation ground when the body is completely burnt.

On the third day, after throwing the ashes into a river, all the relatives go to a temple and perform worship there. Then they all visit the *Upāśraya* where the ascetic lectures to them on the transitory nature of this worldly life and impresses on them the necessity of performing religious duties. The near relatives are considered unclean for ten days and no days in honour of the dead are observed.

Even though the Digambara and Śvetāmbara sacred books have given in detail the ceremonies to be performed by their followers, it is a fact that all the ceremonies are not observed by the Jainas and that those ceremonies, which are observed, are not necessarily performed according to the strict rules laid down in the religious books. On the contrary, in many respects they resemble the corresponding Hindu ceremonies. The Jaina sacred books which prescribe these ceremonies are not very old. The Digambara's *Ādi-purāṇa* was written in the ninth century A. D.¹ and Āchāra-dinakara was written in Samvat year 1468. Thus as the ceremonies are prescribed sufficiently late, it is likely that the Jaina ceremonies might have been designed after the Hindu ceremonies. Whatever might be in theory, in practice at least the Jaina ceremonies look like the Hindu ceremonies.² It is stated about the Deccan and Karnāṭaka Jainas that of the sixteen sacraments, which are nearly the same as the sixteen Brāhmaṇa sacraments, they perform thread-girding, marriage, puberty, and death, and that their rites do not differ from those performed by the Brahmins.³ The same is said about the Gujarāṭha Jainas.⁴ Regarding the Daśa Śrīmālī Jainas of Kathiawar, who form a bulk of the Jaina population, it has been remarked that many Jaina ceremonies are not performed at all by them, and most of the ceremonies observed by them are in accordance with

1. Winternitz : History of Indian Literature, Vol. II, p. 481.

2. (i) Colebrook: Miscellaneous Essays, Vol. II, p. 192.
(ii) Wilson, H. H. : Works by Wilson, Vol. I, p. 322.

3. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. II, p. 86.

4. Enthoven, R. E. : T. C. B., Vol. III, pp. 431-433 & 435.

the Vedic rites.¹ The domestic ceremonies, such as those of birth, marriage, death and so on, of the Jainas of Southern India resemble generally those of the Brāhmaṇas². In spite of their revolt against Brahmanism, the Mysore Jainas observe many of the Brāhmaṇa customs³. In respect of rules and customs, such as initiation, marriage and death, of the Jaina laity of the Central Provinces it is stated that there is comparatively little to distinguish the Jaina from the Hindus.⁴ Thus it is clear that the Jaina ceremonies in general resemble the corresponding Hindu ceremonies in various parts of India.

In this connection it may be further noted that the Jaina ceremonies themselves are not practised in a uniform manner all over India. Though the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras have different ceremonies, still neither the Digambaras nor the Śvetāmbaras observe their own ceremonies in the same manner throughout India. There are obvious differences from province to province. As a rule the Jainas in South India wear a sacred thread. The sacred thread is worn by the Jainas in Mysore,⁵ and in the Deccan⁶ after going through a detailed ceremony. In the South Arcot District in the Madras Province though Jaina girls never wear a sacred thread, they are taught the threadwearing mantram, amid all the ceremonies usual in the case of boys, when they are about eight years old.⁷ On the contrary, in the Gujarātha the Jainas do not wear a sacred thread at all.⁸ Therefore the question of thread-girding ceremony does not arise at all. And where the sacred thread is worn, the thread-girding ceremony is not considered essential. In the Central Provinces Jaina boys are invested with a sacred thread on the occasion of

1. Doshi, C.M.: Daśā Śrimālī Jaina Banias of Kathiawar, Chapter VI.

2. Thurston.: T.C.S.I., Vol. II, pp. 427 & 433.

3. Iyer L.K.A.: M.T.C., Vol. III, p. 463.

4. Russell, R.V.: T.O.C.P., Vol. I, p. 225.

5. Iyer, L.K.A.: M.T.C., Vol. III, pp. 421-427.

6. Enthoven, R.E.: T.O.B., Vol. II, pp. 86-87.

7. Thurston: T.C.S.I., Vol. II, pp. 433-434.

8. Enthoven, R.E.: T.O.B., Vol. III, p. 432.

their wedding or at 21 or 22 if they are still unmarried at that age.¹ As regards this great diversity in the practice of wearing sacred thread it is contended by Pañdita Nāthurāma Premī, the noted Jaina scholar, that this practice is not referred to at all in the old Jaina literature and is prescribed by later Jaina works with a view to stem the tide of widespread persecution of Jainas by the Śaivas especially in the Karnāṭaka and Southern India.² Whatever may be the reason, the fact is there that there is a great diversity in the practice of wearing a sacred thread among the Jainas from province to province. The same can be safely asserted in respect of another important ceremony, namely, that of marriage. There is, indeed, little in common among the detailed marriage rites of Mysore,³ Deccan,⁴ and Gujerātā.⁵ Even the marriage ceremony of all the Saitavāla Jainas, the members of one caste, is not similar. In many respects the Saitavāla Jainas of Ahmednagar District in the Bombay Province⁶ and of the Hyderabad state,⁷ differ from each other in their marriage ceremony. Like marriage the funeral ceremony also is not performed by the Jainas in the same fashion in all provinces.⁸ While in the Karnāṭaka no words are uttered in the funeral procession, in Gujerātā the words Rāma, Rāma are uttered. The Karnāṭaka Jainas observe impurity for ten days but the Gujerātā Jainas from five to ten days. The Gujerātā Jainas neither perform memorial or Śraddha ceremony between the tenth and the thirteenth days nor do they keep

1. Russell, R.V. : T.C.C.P., Vol. I, p. 225.

2. Nāthurāma Premī : " Yajñopavīta & Jaina Dharma ", J.H., Vol. XII, pp. 143-147 and 242-243.

3. Iyer, L.K.A. : M.T.C., Vol. III, pp. 406-416.

4. Enthoven, R.E. : T.C.B., Vol. II, pp. 87-90.

5. Enthoven, R.E. : T.C.B., Vol. III, pp. 432-433.

6. B. G., Vol. XVII, pp. 101-102.

7. Hassan : T. C. N. D., pp. 261-263.

8. For views of Jainas and Hindus regarding the death and disposal of the dead, vide Jacobi, H. : " Death and disposal of the Dead (Jain) ", E. R. E., Vol. IV, pp. 484-485.

monthly or yearly memorial days. But in the Karnātaka, Śrāddha ceremony is performed every month for one year.¹ Though the keeping of days in memory of the dead is against the tenets of Jainism, yet many adhere to this rule and we find its traces in some places. The Bogāras of the Hyderabad state² and the Saitavālas of Ahmednagar District³ do observe Śrāddha ceremony like Karnātaka Jainas. It appears that only Osavāla Jainas do not gather the ashes of the dead.⁴ Thus it is clear that there is no uniformity in the practice of Jaina ceremonies.

13. JAINA TĪRTHAKSHETRAS OR PLACES OF PILGRIMAGE

All Hindus believe that visits to holy places will bring special merit to them and dispel their demerits. That is why they have been advised to make a pilgrimage to their sacred places known as *Tīrthas*. According to the Hindus a *Tīrtha* is a place which is considered holy for certain specific reasons. The rivers near some famous temples have been attributed with the power of destroying demerit and gaining merit and such places are known as *Tīrthas*. Similarly the place where a lady had gone as sati, i.e., had ascended the funeral pyre of her husband, is regarded as a *Tīrtha* or holy place by the Hindus. But the Jainas do not accept these meanings as they go against their religious beliefs.⁵ The Jainas attribute only one meaning to the word *Tīrtha* and that is the *Tīrtha* is a place which shows the way how to cross the ocean of *Samsāra*. Just as an idol reminds us of the virtues and qualities of a great personage whom it represents, similarly a *Tīrtha* reveals the nature of life led on this place by great personages. As *Tīrthas* are connected with the lives of great persons who have achieved liberation, it is natural that they are helpful in creating *Ātmajāgrti*, that is, self-enlightenment in the minds of people who visit them. That is why Jaina laymen have been advised to visit

1. B. G., Vol. IX, Part I, pp. 101-102 and Vol. XXIV, pp. 144-145.

2. Hassan : T. O. N. D., p. 265.

3. B. G., Vol. XVII., p. 103.

4. B. G., Vol. XVII, p. 82.

5. R. S., J, 22.

Tirthakshetras for purifying their faith in Jainism.¹

The Jainas regard the following places as their *Tirthakshetras*:

- (i) The places where the Tirthankaras were born, for example, like Kūḍalapura which is the birth place of Lord Mahāvīra, Rājagrha, the birth place of the 20th Tirthankara Lord Munisūrvrata, Banārasa, the birth place of the 7th and 23rd Tirthankaras, Lord Supārśvanātha and Lord Pārśvanātha, etc.
- (ii) the places where the Tirthankaras first renounced the *Samsāra* and initiated into a religious life, for example, Kāmpilā in the U. P. where the 13th Tirthankara Lord Vimalanātha took to religious life, etc.
- (iii) the places where the Tirthankaras practised great austerities, for example, Prayāga for the austerities of the first Tirthankara Lord Rshabhanātha, etc.
- (iv) the places where the Tirthankaras achieved *Kevalajñāna* or omniscience, for example, Hastināpura where the 16th, 17th and 18th Tirthankaras, namely, Lord Śāntinātha, Lord Kunthunatha and Lord Aranātha achieved omniscience, etc.
- (v) the places where the Tirthankaras realised emancipation, for example, Sammedasikhara, for salvation of twenty Tirthankaras, etc.
- (vi) the places where the great ascetics lived and achieved liberation, for example, Śatruñjaya in Kathiawar, Gajapantha, Māngitūṅgi in Bombay Province, Kunthalagiri in Hyderabad State, etc.
- (vii) the places famous for their beautiful temples or wonderful idols, for example, Abu mountain in Rajputana, Śravaṇabelgola in Mysore State, etc.

The Jainas divide their *Tirthakshetras* into two broad categories, namely, the *Siddhakshetras* or *Nirvāṇakshetras*, that is, the places from where either the Tirthankaras or other great

1. Vide सूलक्षणः किपास्तीपेयात्राया दृष्टिशुद्धये । S. D., II, 84.

ascetics realised their liberation, and the *Atisayakshetras*, that is, the places which are sacred for other reasons.¹ Thus the places mentioned under (v) and (vi) above come under the category of *Siddhakshetras* and the remaining under that of *Atisayakshetras*. At times the idols in certain places are believed to bestow great favours on their devotees. Hence such places are also considered as *Atisayakshetras* and their number is increasing even now. Recently Mahāviraji and Padmapuri in Jaipur State are added to this type of *Atisayakshetras*.²

The number of Jaina *Tirthakshetras* is great. Because of the downfall of Jainism, many Jaina *Tirthas* have been forgotten and not a few have been appropriated by other religionists. The Jaina idol of Lord Pārvanātha at the Badrinātha *Tirtha* has been turned by the Hindus into that of Badriviśala and it is worshipped by the Hindus in that form.³ The Jainas maintain that the famous temple of Vīthobā at Pañdharpura in Mahārāshtra, the biggest place of pilgrimage of the Hindus, once belonged to the Jainas but the Brāhmaṇas forcibly converted their idol of Lord Neminātha, the 22nd Tīrthaṅkara, into that of the Hindu God Vīthobā.⁴ The same plea is made by the Jainas regarding the Hindu temples of Ambābāī and Vishṇu at Kolhapur. Kolhapur is an *Atisayakshetra* of Jainas and their temples, according to them, have been converted by force into Hindu temples.⁵ In this way even though the Jainas had to lose their *Tirthakshetras*, still at present they have quite a large number of them which are

1. Nāthurāma Premi : *Jaina Sāhitya aura Itihāsa*, p. 186.

2. Divakara S.C., : *Jaina-Śāsana*, p. 248.

3. Kailashachandrapati : *Jainadharma*, p. 321.

4. For detailed reasons, vide,

(i) Rev. J. Stevenson : "On the Intermixture of Buddhism with Brahmanism in the religion of the Hindus of the Deccan," J.R. A.S. of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. VII, (1843), pp. 1-8.

(ii) Thomas, E. : "The Early Faith of Aśoka," J. R. A. S. of Great Britain & Ireland, Vol. IX, (1877), pp. 166-167.

(iii) Chopade : *Pañdharpurachā Vīthobā*.

5. Jain, K. P. : *Jaina Tīrtha aura Unaki Yātrā*, p. 85.

situated in most lovely places throughout the length and breadth of India. The strength of Digambara Jaina *Tirthakshetras* is about one hundred and twentyfive¹ all over India and the number of Śvetāmbara Jaina *Tirthakshetras* may come to that figure.²

The rift between the Digambara and Śvetāmbara is evident in the matter of *Tirthakshetras* also. There are few *Tirthakshetras* like Sammedaśikhara, Pāvāpura, Giranāra, Śatruñjaya, etc. which are accepted by both the sects. But there are many others which are accepted by either of the two sects. The Digambaras alone approve the *Tirthakshetras* like Gajapantha, Kunthalagiri, Māngitūngi, Badavāni, Śravaṇabelgoja, etc. while Śvetāmbaras have their own *Tirthakshetras* like Abu mountain, Saṅkheśvara, Kulapāka, etc. The division has not only stopped with this. In respect of the *Tirthakshetras* of common allegiance both the sects vociferously put forward their claims of ownership and right to worship according to their own rituals, and crores of rupees have been spent upto now by them in legally establishing their respective claims. As a result in some places fixed time is allowed to both the sects to worship according to their own practices. Thus at the *Tirthakshetra* of Antariksha Pārvanātha in Berar the Śvetāmbaras have to worship from 6 a. m. to 9 a. m. and from 12 a. m. to 3 p. m. and the Digambaras from 9 a. m. to 12 a. m. and from 3 p. m. to 6 p. m.³

As the Jaina *Tirthakshetras* are famous for their beauty and grandeur all over India, we shall describe, in brief, only a few of the most outstanding *Tirthakshetras*.⁴

(1) *Sammeda śikhara*:

It is the most ancient and sacred place of pilgrimage of all Jainas. Every true Jaina considers himself fortunate if he visits

1. Jain, K. P.: *Jaina Tirtha aura Unakī Yātrā*, P. 30.

2. Only in Gujarat Śvetāmbaras have sixteen *Tirthakshetras*, Vide *Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory*, Vols. I and II.

3. Kailashachandra: *Jainadharma*, p. 331.

4. For a detailed description of ancient Jaina sacred places, see, Nāthurāma Premi: *Jaina Sāhitya aura Itihāsa*, pp. 188-238.

the place at least once in his life. The Sammeda sikhara mountain is situated in the Hazaribagh District of Bihar Province. Excluding Lord Rshabhadeva, Vāsupūjya, Neminātha and Mahāvīra, the remaining twenty Tīrthaṅkaras realised emancipation on this mountain. In honour of the twenty-third Tīrthaṅkara, Lord Pārvanātha, the place is known as 'Pārasanātha Hills' also. On the different summits of the mountain twenty temples containing the foot-prints of the twenty Tīrthaṅkaras have been erected to commemorate their memories. One has to travel nearly twenty miles to go round these temples.

(2) *Pāvāpura :*

As the last Tīrthaṅkara Lord Mahāvīra attained liberation at Pāvāpura, it is the sacred place of all Jainas. It is situated in the Patna District of Bihar Province. There is a tank in the place, in the midst of which stands the temple known as Jalamandira. The foot-prints of Lord Mahāvīra and those of his two disciples, namely, Gautamasvāmī and Sudharmasvāmī, are inscribed there. Thousands of people assemble here on the last day of *Aśvina*, that is, the day on which Lord Mahāvīra attained emancipation.¹

(3) *Giranāra :*

Giranāra is a group of hills situated in Kathiawar. On the

1. Recently some scholars have begun to contend that the town Pāvāpura, venerated by all Jainas, is not the real place of Mahāvīra's liberation. They have suggested other localities in this connection, e. g. (i) Dr. Rājabali Pāṇḍeya considers that Pāvānagara must lie in the ruins of Saṭhiyānīva-phājilanagara situated 9 miles away in south-eastern direction of Kūsinagara, the place of Buddha's nirvāpa. (ii) Mr. Cunningham is of opinion that the modern Paṭaraunā in Dvāravati district must be the real pāvā. (iii) Pandite Rāhula Sāṅkrtyāyanā regards Paṭapura (પાતપર) near Rāmakolā Station as the ancient Pāvā. These are all conjectures and it may be noted that so long as excavations are not carried out in Pāvāpura, venerated by the Jainas, no definite opinion can be given in this controversy. For detailed discussion vide Rājabali Pāṇḍeya : "Bhagavāna Mahāvīrakī Nirvāpabhūmi Pāvāki Śthiti", Śri Mahāvīra Commemoration Volume, vols. I & II, pp. 45-48.

peaks of hills several beautiful Jaina temples have been erected. Here, the twenty-second Tirthāṅkara, Lord Neminātha, practised austerities, preached religion and attained Moksha. Pradyumna-kumāra, Gajakumāra, Gapadhara Varadatta and innumerable ascetics attained liberation on this place. That is why it is the most sacred place for all Jainas. Moreover, the antiquity of the place is traced to the time of Lord R̥shabhadeva, the first Tirthāṅkara, and it was the scene of various important events in the history of Jaina community.¹

(4) *Satruñjaya Hills :*

Śatruñjaya or Siddhagiri is a celebrated place of pilgrimage at Paliṭāṇa in Kathiawar. On the hills there are nearly three and a half thousand Śvetāṁbara Jaina temples and only one Digāṁbara Jaina temple. That is why the Śvetāṁbaras consider this as the most sacred of all sacred places. From here three Pāṇḍu-putras and several ascetics attained Moksha. This city of temples is considered by J. Burgess as without a match in the world.²

(5) *Mount Abu:*

The Mount Abu in Rajaputana is wellknown for the world famous Jaina temples at Dilwara. Col. Tod says that, "Beyond controversy this is the most superb of all the temples in India and there is not an edifice besides the Taj Mahal, that can approach it." There are one Digāṁbara and five Śvetāṁbara Jaina temples. Out of the five one was constructed by Vimala Śāha, a merchant and banker of Gujarātha, at a cost of eighteen crores and fifty-three lacs of rupees in 1031 A. D. Another was constructed by Vastupāla and Tejapāla, the brother ministers of King Viradhabala of Gujarātha, in 1231 A. D. at the cost of twelve crores and fifty-three lacs of rupees. These are built of white marble and are very widely known for delicacy of carving, beauty of details and magnificent ornamentation.³

1. Jain, K. P.: *Jaina Tirtha sara Unaki Yātrā*, pp. 99-106.

2. Nahar & Ghosh : *Epitome of Jainism*, P. 680.

3. Nahar & Ghosh : *Epitome of Jainism*, P. 685.

(6) *Śravanabelagola*:

Śravanabelagola is the ancient and beautiful *Tīrthakshetra* of Digambara Jainas and its importance can be gauged from the fact that it is known as "Jainabadri" or "Jaina Kāśi".¹ It is situated in the Hassan District of Mysore State. It comprises two hills, namely, Chandragiri and Vindhya-giri, and a white pond in between. As Śramaṇas or Jaina ascetics used to live in large numbers, the place was named as Śravanabelagola—or white pond of the Śramaṇas. The Emperor Chandragupta Maurya came here along with his preceptor Bhadrabāhu, stayed here for many years as an ascetic and breathed his last according to the Jaina fashion, namely that of *Sallekhanā*.² On the Chandragiri mountain there are caves for the residence of ascetics and fourteen large temples. The foot-prints of Bhadrabāhu Svāmī are kept in one of the caves. On the Vindhya-giri mountain there are in all ten temples and the exquisitely beautiful statue of Gommaṭesvara. In the words of Fergusson, "Nothing grandeur or more imposing exists anywhere out of Egypt and even there, no known statue surpasses it in height or excels it in the perfection of art it exhibits."³ Thousands of Jaina pilgrims assemble here at the time of the grand festival of the bathing of the statue.⁴ The importance of Śravanabelagola is further enhanced by the existence of several ancient inscriptions of great historical value.⁵

From the above description it is evident that as Jainism attaches more value for going on a pilgrimage, various *Tīrthakshetras* have been built and maintained by the Jainas. It is enjoined on every Jaina, whether a householder or an ascetic, to

1. Jain, K. P. : *Jaina Tīrtha-sura Unakī Yātēś*, p. 61.
2. (i) Smith, V. A. : *Early History of India*, pp. 151 & 418.
(ii) Rice, B. L. : *Mysore & Co. rg from Inscriptions*, pp. 4-8.
3. Fergusson : *History of Indian & Eastern Architecture*, Vol. II, p. 72.
4. Vide Page 251 ante.
5. Jain Hirnalal : *Jaina Śilāla-ha-Saṅgraha*, Introduction, pp. 54-112.
For its secular importance vide,
Salatore, B. A. : "Śravanabelgoḷa— Its Secular Importance", J. A.,
March, 1940.

visit a *Tirthakshetra* and he does gain merit even if he dies on the way.¹ Those who are not in a position to go on pilgrimage can also get the benefit of pilgrimage, if they can render any help to persons who are on their way to *Tirthakshetras*. Moreover, it is said that persons going on a pilgrimage will gain additional merit if they will bear the expenses of their fellow-pilgrims. In Jaina literature we come across many examples where Jaina Kings or Ministers have led a *sangha* or a large group of people to the places of pilgrimage.² Even now rich Jainas lead such Jaina *sanghas* to *Tirthakshetras* and in commemoration of this act they are given the honorific title of Saṅghapati, Saṅghavi, Saṅghai or saṅghave by the Jainas.

14. OCCUPATIONS AND PROFESSIONS

From the present state of Jainas it appears that a predominantly large majority of them is engaged in some kind of business. They are known as *Baniyās* or *Vāpiyās* and are included under the *Vaiśyas*. The predominance of *Vaiśyas* is, historically speaking, a comparatively recent development because in ancient times Jainas were found in all classes and especially among the *Kshatriyas*. But due to various reasons the number of Jainas in other classes gradually dwindled and in consequence we now notice that the followers of Jainism are mainly *Vaiśyas*.³

The very first rule of the thirty-five rules of conduct for laymen lays down that a person should follow some kind of business or profession in a just and honest way for the maintenance of his family. The only restriction he has to observe in the choice of his avocation is that it must not be of an ignoble or degrading nature in the sense that it should not involve wholesale destruction of life. The prohibited businesses are those of butchers, fishermen, brewers, wine-merchants, gun-makers and the like.⁴ The Jaina

1. S. D., II, 84 and VIII, 30, 31.

2. Glasenapp: Jainism, p. 451.

3. Nathurama Premi: "Jainadharma Pālnevā'e Vaiśya hi kyom ?" J. H., Vol. XII, pp. 449-453.

4. Warren H.: Jainism, p. 76.

Scriptures mention fifteen varieties of business enterprises which involve great injury to living beings and hence the Jaina laymen are required to avoid them. They are such as those involving great use of fire, cutting of trees or plants, castrating bullocks, clearing of jungles by employment of fire, drying up lakes, rivers, etc.¹ This does not mean that a butcher or brewer cannot be a Jaina; he can be a Jaina but he will be in the vowless stage of soul's evolution.²

It is generally believed that the main principle of Jainism, namely, *Ahimsā* or not hurting any living being, bars the Jainas from becoming the agriculturists or soldiers.³ But this is not the case. The first Tīrthaṅkara Lord R̄shabhadeva asked the people to follow six kinds of professions for their maintenance and both the professions of an agriculturist and of a soldier were included in them.⁴ Apart from this, we come across numerous references pertaining to agriculture in Jaina literature from which it could be seen that in general agriculture was not forbidden to Jainas.⁵ At present the main occupation of the Jainas in Karnātaka is that of agriculture. In regard to them it is stated that except some of the larger landholders who keep farm-servants the Jaina landholders, with the help of their women, do all parts of field work with their own hands. They are considered as the hardest working husbandmen who make use of every advantage of soil and situation.⁶ Even in Gujarātha where the Jainas are mainly traders and industrialists, there are some Jainas whose occupation is only agriculture.⁷ From the fact that even in the days of Lord

1. Rampuria, S. C. : Cult of Ahimsā, P. 22.

2. Jaini, J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, P. 72.

3. Jacobi, H. : Jainism, E. R. E., Vol. VII, P. 473.

4. असिम्पिः कृषिक्षेत्रा वाणिज्यं शिल्पमेव च ।

कमोणीमानि वोदास्युः प्रजानीवनहेतवे ॥ A. P., XVI, 170.

5. Kapadia, H. R. : "Some references pertaining to agriculture in Jain Literature", I. H. Q., Vol. X, pp. 797-800.

6. B. G., Vol. XXIV, P. 135.

7. Jaina, Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I & II, P. 526.

Rshabha, the first Tirthankara, rules were made, among other things, regarding politics, warfare and archery¹ shows that the Jainas were not averse to fighting as such. In the past many Jainas were in the fighting forces of the state as can be seen from a large number of Jaina generals and warriors,² and even now some are employed in the defence forces of India. It has already been explained how the principle of *Ahimsā* does not come in the way of following any profession by a Jaina.³

The Jainas follow practically all sorts of avocations but they are mainly money-lenders, bankers, jewellers, cloth-merchants, grocers and recently industrialists. As they hold the key positions in all these occupations, it is no wonder that a large proportion of mercantile wealth of India passes through their hands. Apart from occupations, Jainas have taken to professions also. They are found mainly in legal, medical and teaching professions and nowadays many Jainas are holding important responsible positions in various departments of the Central, Provincial and State Governments.

15. FOOD AND DRINK

The Jainas are very particular regarding their food and drink. Since the ethical code of the Jainas is based on the main principle of *Ahimsā*, we find its thorough application in the matters of food and drink also. While dealing with the rules of conduct for a layman we have noticed that every householder is required to possess *Ashta Mūlagunas* or eight fundamental virtues which are the observance of the five *anuvratas* and abstinence from the use of flesh, wine and honey.⁴ The injunction against eating flesh of any living being is quite obvious. The Jainas do not take food which involves the slaughter of animals, fishes, birds, or anything

1. Kalipada Mitra: "A Jain View of the Origin of Institutions", I. C., Vol. V, P. 44.

2. (i) Salefore, B.A.: Medieval Jainism, pp. 101-153.

(ii) Altekar, A. S.: Rāshtrakūṭas and Their Times, pp. 99 and 316.

3. Vide page 233 ante.

4. Vide page 220 ante.

that has five or less sense-organs. That is why they have to abstain from eating *Kandamūlas*, that is, underground stems and roots like potatoes, onions, garlic, reddish, turnip, carrot, beet-root, etc. which are supposed to contain a multitude of small insects. Similarly, they must not eat fruits of Gular, Anjeer, Pipal, Pakar and Banyan which are the birth places of mobile beings.¹ Further, it is necessary for a Jaina to take his meals during daytime because *Himsā* is inevitable when food is prepared or taken in the absence of sunlight.² Therefore the Jainas have to renounce night-eating throughout the year and those who cannot do so all the time, at least do it during the *Chāturmāsa* or the four months of rainy season when there is a large growth of insects. Again, the Jainas are required to wipe most carefully anything that is to be used for food, with a view to exclude as tenderly as possible any of the tiny living creatures which might be found in or on it. In the same way as a precautionary measure in avoiding injury to very small living beings, the Jainas have been enjoined to strain or filter water, milk, juice, or any liquid drink before use.³ It must be said to the credit of the Jainas that they do observe very scrupulously all these rules regarding food. It is the outstanding feature of Jainas throughout India that they are strictly vegetarians, never eat at night, and always use strained water. It is said that when a Jaina traveller wishes to quench his thirst at a tank or a stream, he covers his mouth with a cloth, stoops down, and thus drinks by suction. This cleanly custom is highly recommended for use everywhere.⁴

Along with flesh, wine and all kinds of intoxicants, or even stimulants, are prohibited. They are not considered necessary for the life and well-being of the body. Wine is the birth place of many beings which are generated in liquor and hence those who are addicted to wine, necessarily commit *Himsā*. Further, it is stated that wine stupifies the mind, one whose mind

1. S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 72.

2. S. B. J., Vol. IV, P. S., 120-134.

3. S. D., II, 14.

4. Dubois : Hindu Manners, Customs and Ceremonies, pp. 703-706.

is stupified forgets piety; and the person who forgets piety commits *Himsā* without hesitation. Similarly, pride, fear, disgust, ridicule, ennui, grief, sex-passion, anger, etc. are all forms of *Himsā* and all these are concomitants of wine.¹ Like wine, honey is also prohibited because it is considered that even the smallest drop of honey very often represents the death of bees. If one uses honey which has been obtained by some trick from honey-comb, or which has itself dropped down from it, one necessarily commits *Himsā* in this case also, because of the destruction of creatures of spontaneous birth born there.² In the same strain the Jainas have been advised not to use stale butter as after a lapse of some time the butter becomes a birth-place of small beings due to extreme fermentation.³

As regards the question of food and drink one thing must be remembered. Jainism admits that only liberated souls are in a position to observe complete non-injury and that mundane souls have to commit *Himsā* for their maintenance as life thrives only on life. Though *Himsā* is unavoidable in the sustenance of life, Jainism, by rules of conduct, tries to limit it for essential purposes only. The rules of conduct never sanction injury, but they try to restrict it to the lowest possible minimum, by taking into account the gradations of injured living beings. The higher the stage of development of the injured being is, (i. e., the closer it has approached the state of perfection), the heavier the sin of the injury committed is considered to be. Thus, from the practical point of view, the sin of hurting a plant is smaller than that of hurting an animal, the sin of hurting an animal is smaller than that on hurting a human being, etc. From this standpoint, it can be understood why Jainism forbids flesh-eating, and, on the other hand, objects little to the eating of vegetables.⁴ Therefore, what is enjoined on Jainas is simply this: "Do not destroy life, unless

1. S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 62-64.

2. S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 69-70.

3. (i) S.B.J., Vol. IV, P.S., 11.

(ii) S.D., II, 12.

4. Krause C.: *Heritage of the Last Arhat*, P. 11.

it is absolutely necessary for the maintenance of a higher kind of life."¹

16. DRESS AND ORNAMENTS

The Jainas are required to pursue the path of *Ahimsā* in the matter of dress also. They have not to wear the furs and the plumes that are obtained by torturing their owners—animals and birds.² For the same reason the use of silken and woollen garments is prohibited for all Jainas.³ Here we can mark the difference between the Hindus and the Jainas. The Hindus do not consider silk as impure and they use silken garments at the time of worshipping or taking their meals. It is necessary for Jainas to restrict the use of leather goods to the minimum. They have to avoid all leather articles meant for decoration, for example, tiger-skin, deer-skin, etc. and are required to use substitutes for leather goods wherever it is possible, for example, belts, purses, straps for watches, etc. Where the use of leather goods is unavoidable they have to see that leather is procured from naturally dead animals and not from slaughtered animals.

One of the rules of conduct meant for laymen lays down that a Jaina should dress according to his means, and if he has the means to dress extravagantly, still he should not do so.⁴ This means that Jainas should not care much for their dress with a view to look more beautiful. According to them the clothes should be sober, though not sombre, and they should not aim at displaying bodily contour, to excite the passions of the beholder.⁵

At present there is no particular standard dress of Jainas all over India. They dress according to local customs and usages. The native Jainas of a province are hardly distinguishable in the matter of dress from the other people of their standard of living. Thus there is little in common in regard to dress among the Jainas

1. Jaini, J. L. : Outlines of Jainism, P. 71.

2. Jain, C. R. : Jain Culture, P. 47.

3. Krause, C. : Heritage of the Last Arhat, P. 9.

4. Warren, H. : Jainism, P. 81.

5. Jain, C. R. : Jain Culture, P. 49.

of different provinces. Many Jainas, especially from Māravāda and Gujarātha, have settled in other provinces for commercial reasons but they have not fully adopted the dresses of respective provinces where they have settled. But there is a marked tendency among such Jainas to use the dress of the province of their adoption, especially among those who have settled permanently there and have severed all their connections with their home province. Thus the Hummada Jainas of Mahārāshṭra, who have practically no relations with Hummadas of Gujarātha or Māravāda, have adopted the Mahārāshṭriān dress completely. It is natural that this tendency is more discernible in the case of men than that of women.

What applies to dress is also true in the case of ornaments. There are no particular ornaments of the Jainas. They wear the ornaments which are commonly used by the people of the region. As the Jainas are a comparatively rich community and as they deal in gold, jewels and precious stones, they put on various kinds of ornaments. Like other women, Jaina women also are more fond of ornaments than men. In ancient Jaina literature fourteen kinds of ornaments are mentioned.¹.

17. LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE

The Jainas have no particular language of their own like the Muslims, Sikhs and other minority community members. The Jainas always use the language of the region. As the Jainas are distributed throughout the length and breadth of India and are staying there for hundreds of years, they not only use various languages but have successfully contributed to the growth of these languages.² Lord Mahāvīra preached in Ardhamāgadhi language and many ancient sacred books are written in that language. Naturally Ardhamāgadhi is more dear to Jainas and to understand their sacred texts, they learn that language. Later, many Jaina works were written in Sanskrit and therefore Jainas show equal respect to Sanskrit also. It is asserted that the Jaina literature

1. Jain, J. C. : Life in Ancient India as depicted in Jain Canons, P. 98.

2. Vaidya, P. L. : Jaina Dharma āṇi Vāṅgmaya, pp. 77 & 78.

was responsible for giving birth to the Hindi language and that the Jainas have enriched it from time to time.¹ Gujarātha is the stronghold of Jainas at present and even in the past they wielded an enormous influence on all activities of Gujarātha. Gujarāti, therefore, claims more Jaina adherents than any other language and the Jainas have, in proportion to their number, taken a large share in enriching the language and literature of Gujarātha.² Strangely enough Mahārāshṭra does not figure prominently in the history of Jainism in India and as a result Jainas could not contribute much to Marāṭhi language. Marāṭhi Jaina literature is comparatively very recent and much of it is adopted from other languages.³ The Marāṭhi literature itself did not exist before the tenth century A. D. and in fact it is suggested that the main reason for no output of Marāṭhi literature before the 10th century A. D. is that Jainism was not strong in Mahārāshṭra. If Jainism would have flourished in Mahārāshṭra, it would have given an impetus to the Marāṭhi literature as it so ably did in case of Kannada literature.⁴ It may, however, be noted that the earliest composition in Marāṭhi is found in the Jaina inscription on the Gommateśvara statue at Śravāṇabelagola. If there is any language for which the Jainas could be proud of it is the Kannada language. The history of Jainism in Southern India is primarily the history of that religion in Karnāṭaka where it held sway for a continuous period of not less than eleven centuries from the early days of Christian era. It was during the Golden Age of Jainism under the Gaṅgas that Kannada literature got considerable patronage and impetus,⁵ and throughout this

1. Vide (i) Jaina, K. P. : *Hindi Jaina Sāhityakā Saṅkshipta Itihāsa*.
 (ii) Tomar, R. : "Jaina-Sāhitya ki Hindi Sāhitya ke Dena" Premī Abhinandana Grantha, pp. 464-467.
2. Vide (i) Desai, M. D. : *Jaina Sāhityano Itihāsa*,
 (ii) Desai M. D. : *Jaina Gurjara Kaviyo*.
3. For a detailed list of Jaina literature in Marāṭhi, vide, Shah, R. N. : "Marāṭhi meh Jaina Sāhitya aura Sāhityika", Premī Abhinandana Grantha, pp. 530-537.
4. Altekar, A.S. : *Rāshṭrakūṭas and Their Times*, pp. 412-413.
5. Sharma, S. R. : *Jainism and Karnāṭaka Culture*, P. 92.

period and even afterwards the Jainas were predominant in enriching the Kannada language and literature by every possible means.¹ The names of Jaina writers like Pampa, Ponna and Ranna have become immortal in Kannada literature. In the extant Jaina literature both published and unpublished in various provincial languages, the Kannada Jaina literature by far occupies the foremost position. Jainism played a great part in the history of the Tāmila and Telugu land during the medieval period and here also, like in the Karnāṭaka, the Jainas did not lag behind in enriching the Tāmila and Telugu literature. In this connection Dr. Saletore observes that, "One of the best claims of Jainism at the hands of posterity is that it contributed to the literature of all the three provinces. The Jaina teachers as the intellectual custodians of the Āndhra-deśa, the Tamil land, and Karnāṭaka most assiduously cultivated the vernaculars of the people, and wrote in them great works of abiding value to the country. Purism was the keynote of their compositions, although almost all the early Jaina writers were profound Sanskrit scholars. With them originated some of the most renowned classics in Tamil, Telugu and Kannada. It has been rightly opined that the Jainas gave to the Tamil people their didactic classics like the Kural and the Nāladiyāra, major and minor Kāvyas, and quite a number of other works as well. To the Āndhra-deśa and Karnāṭaka, among other precious gifts, the Jainas gave the Champū Kāvyas or poems in a variety of composite metres interspersed with paragraphs in prose."² Thus it will be evident that the Jainas have no language of their own but they have identified themselves completely to the language of the province where they reside. This identification has gone to such an extent that in the present demand of redistribution of provinces on the linguistic basis the Jainas are taking prominent part in their respective provinces. Further, being

1. Vide (i) Saletore, B.A. : Medieval Jainism, pp. 264-267.

(ii) Bhujabali Shastry, K. : "Jaina Kannada Vāṅgmaya," J.S.B., December 1938

(iii) Rice, E.P.: History of Kanarese Literature, Chapters II & III.

2. Saletore, B. A. : Mediaeval Jainism, pp. 262-263.

mainly a commercial community, the Jainas are linguists in the sense that they can successfully use more than one language.

Apart from the contributions of the Jainas to the literature in various provincial languages, the Jainas possess a vast amount of their sacred literature written by their veteran Āchāryas or teachers in the Sanskrit, Prākrit and Apabhramśa languages. There is a division in the sacred literature also. The Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras have their separate sacred books and there are very few books like Umāsvāti's *Tattvārthaśādīgama-sūtra* which are revered by both the sects.¹ In face of severe opposition from other religionists the Jainas have preserved with great care a considerable portion of their literature. Many of these works are still lying in the manuscript form and comparatively a few of them have been published in the modern book form. Along with religion and ethics, the Jaina works deal with various kinds of subjects like grammar, prosody, glossary, mathematics, medicine, astrology, etc. The Jaina authors have used several forms of literature like prose, poetry, story, sūtra, etc. Further, it is maintained that the Jaina literature contains a huge amount of historical material dispersed in various kinds of works and that their thorough and scientific investigation will throw a new light on ancient Indian history.²

18. JAINA INSTITUTIONS

Though the Jaina community is a small community of fourteen lacs population which is spread throughout India and has been split up into various sects, sub-sects, castes, sub-castes, language groups, etc., still we find that the Jainas are conducting from the last so many years a good number of institutions for the benefit of both their community members and other people in general. Their institutions can be broadly divided into two categories,

1. For a detailed description of Jaina sacred and other literature, vide,
 - (i) Glasseapp : *Jainism*, Chapter III.
 - (ii) Weber : "Sacred Literature of the Jainas" translated by Dr. H. W. Smith, I. A., Vols. XVII, XVIII, XIX, XX and XXI.
2. Jain, K. P. : "Jaina Sāhitya meen Prāchīna Aitihāsika Sāmagrī." *Premi-Abhinandana-Grantha*, pp. 455-463.

namely, charitable and other institutions meant for the Jainas and non-Jainas alike and institutions run exclusively for the upliftment and welfare of the Jainas. It is obvious that the Jainas are in a position to maintain a large number of institutions of both the types because they can afford to do so. By conducting the institutions of the first type they have secured good-will from others and through the institutions of the second type they have tried to protect their religion and stabilise their community for all these years. The Jainas are inclined to start charitable institutions for the benefit of all people irrespective of religion, caste or creed because Jainism has enjoined upon its followers to show compassion to all living beings and especially to the needy. Further, it is one of the six daily duties of a Jaina layman to give something in gift to others. The gifts have been classified into four kinds, namely, gifts of food, protection, medicine and learning to the people who require it. These are known as *āhāra-dāna*, *abhaya-dāna*, *aushadha-dāna* and *śāstra-dāna*. Let us see some of the representative or typical institutions of both the types conducted by the Jaina community at present.

In the institutions of the first type the foremost place is secured by the *Dharmaśālās* or Rest Houses. Practically in every big town and at the places of pilgrimage we come across the rest houses built and maintained by the Jainas. All rest houses, with the exception of a very few ones, are made available to all people free of charge. Some of them have been equipped with utensils, beddings, etc. which are given to the travellers on a nominal hire charge. The exact number of Jaina rest houses in India is not available but their large number can be imagined from the fact that only in Gujarātha there are as many as two hundred and sixty-six rest houses run by the Śvetāmbara Jainas.¹ In giving shelter or protection, the Jainas do not distinguish between men or animals and they have extended their helping hand to animals also by maintaining what is known as *Pāñjarāpolas* at several places. Various kinds of animals and birds are looked after in the *Pāñjarāpolas*. Persons send their crippled or useless animals to the *Pāñjarāpolas* and sometimes animals

1. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I and II, P. 522.

are purchased with a view to save them from the clutches of butchers. The sick animals are given medicine and at certain places veterinary doctors are also employed. Some *Pāñjarāpolas* maintain insect-houses where insects collected from the streets are kept and neatly fed.¹ So far as Gujarātha is concerned there are sixty-five such *Pāñjarāpolas*.² Along with other Hindus, the Jainas have established associations like Jīvadaya Jīlānaprashāraka Mapdaļa for the propagation of use of vegetarian food and for the prevention of slaughter of animals at the time of sacrifices.

Further, the Jainas try to alleviate the pains of suffering people by arranging to give medicine free or at nominal charges. For this purpose the Jainas have opened dispensaries and hospitals for the benefit of the general public. In majority of the cases the medical treatment given is Āyurvedic. Wherever the Jainas are concentrated in a good number and are in a good financial position, they open such dispensaries. For example, in Sholapur city only the Digambara Jainas conduct two free dispensaries and one well-equipped eye-hospital. This custom is of long standing and from some Jaina inscriptions it appears that the provision of medicine, along with food and learning, was made in the Jaina Mathas.³

Moreover, many educational institutions like schools, colleges and libraries are financed by the Jainas but are thrown open to the general public. Where they could not start them of their own accord, they help such projects by constructing buildings for them or by giving substantial donations to them. For other general purposes the Jainas have not lagged behind to give their support. The Jainas have contributed liberally and unsparingly to relieve mankind from famines.⁴ There is no humanitarian cause which does not get sympathetic help from the Jainas.

In the second category of Jaina institutions, those of a religious nature get prominence over those of social or educational

1. B.G., Vol. IV, pp. 114 and 115.

2. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols. I & II, P. 522.

3. J. B. B. R. A. S., Vol. X, P. 237.

4. Jhavery, M. B. : Historical Facts about Jainism, pp. 17-18.

character. In the Jaina institutions of a religious character the first place will have to be assigned to the *Grantha-Bhāṇḍāras* or Book-houses. The Jainas possess a very large number of books written on paper or on palm-leaves. These have been assiduously preserved by the Jainas for the last so many centuries. At the centres like Mūḍabidri in South Kanara District, Kāraṇjā in Berar, Pāṭāṇa in Gujarātha and Jessalamira in Rājputānā hundreds of books are preserved. Recently only catalogues of the manuscripts lying at these places have been published,¹ and it is not known when these will be edited and published in book forms. Only in Gujarātha there are fifty-six *Grantha-Bhāṇḍāras* of Śvetāmbara Jainas,² and in the whole of India their number must be sufficiently large because practically every big Jaina temple possesses a *Grantha-Bhāṇḍāra*.

Though the Jainas have carefully preserved such a vast amount of literature, yet it must be admitted that they failed in their ultimate purpose of preserving the manuscript in the sense that for a long time they neither allowed the people to see them nor they got them published. In fact in early years of this century the Jainas vehemently opposed to the printing of their sacred books, did not allow to bring the printed books in temples and the persons responsible for printing such books were boycotted.³ Slowly they changed their ideas and with a view to propagate and popularise their literature they started their own institutions at various Jaina centres. The institutions like the Central Jaina Publishing House at Arrah in Bihar, the Māṇikachanda Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Bombay, Śrī Jaina Ātmānanda Sabhā and Śrī Jaina Dharm Prasāraka Sabhā, Bhavanagar, Āgamodaya Samiti, Surat, Devachanda Lālabhāī Pustakoddhāraka Fund, Surat, and the Jaina Siddhānta Prakāśī Samsthā, Calcutta did a great pioneer work in editing and publishing the important

1. (i) Bhujabali Shastri : Kannada Prāntiya Tāḍpatriya Grantha-Sūchi.
 (ii) Dalal and Gandhi : Descriptive Catalogues of Manuscripts in the Jaina Bhāṇḍāras at Jessalamira and Pāṭāṇa.

2. Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory, Vols I & II, P. 523.

3. Jain, P. D. : Jaina Samāja ke Bisavī Sadi ke Pramukha Āndolana, "Premī-Abhinandana Grantha, P. 653.

Jaina books. Realising the value of this work from the point of spread of Jainism, a host of Jaina institutions like publishing houses and libraries were started all over India. No other community of fifteen lacs population would have given donations for publishing its literature such as done by the Jaina community. In spite of this the net result is not satisfactory. The original enthusiasm dwindled and due to absence of persistent endeavour, the former progress is not maintained at all.¹ At present a few institutions like Siṅghī Jaina Granthamālā, Bombay, the Bhāratīya Jñānapīṭha, Benaras, and the Parishada Publishing House, Delhi are doing some good work in the field but in general it can be said that still much remains to be done in this direction. It is stated that the numerous unknown manuscripts are lying in *Grantha-Bhāṇḍāras* and if they are not edited and published by Jaina scholars, they are likely to be lost for ever.²

Just as the work of publishing Jaina books is considered as a religious act, in the same way the imparting of religious education is regarded as a religious duty. The sacred books would be of no avail if there are no persons who could understand them thoroughly. Thus with a view to prepare learned men well-versed in all branches of Jaina literature and to impart religious education to laymen, institutions like *Pāṭhaśālās* or religious schools and Examination Boards were established by the Jainas at several places all over India. As the Dīgaṁbaras and the Śvetāmbaras have separate literature, they have their own *Pāṭhaśālās* and Examination Boards. Nowadays as people do not take much interest in religious education, such institutions are not thriving but still there are institutions like Śrī Syādvāda Dīgaṁbara Jaina Mahāvidyālaya, Benares, which impart higher religious education.

Another important Jaina institution of a mainly religious character is that of a *Bhāttāraka*. The *Bhāttāraka* is a religious preceptor of a Saṅgha or Gachchha, i. e., of a group of Jainas. The institution, which is found in the Dīgaṁbara Jainas only, was established in the mediaeval period. It was first established

1. Vide Vira dated 11-1-1947, P. 3.

2. Vaidya, P. L. : Jaina Dharma āpi Vāigmayā, P. 76.

at Delhi and later on at several places all over India. Some of the important places were Gwalior, Jaipur, and Dungarpura in Rājputānā; Idāra and Sojitrā in Gujurātha; Nagpur and Kāraṇjā in the Central Provinces and Berar, Lātura and Malakhēdā in the Hyderabad State; Kolhapur; Mōdabidrī and Kārakala in South Kanara District; Śravaṇabelgoḷa in Mysore State, and Penugopḍā and Kāñchi in South India. In some of the places even now we come across the *Bhattārakas* who are having a sufficient hold over their followers in spite of the fact that the institution as such is in a decadent condition. As regards the origin of the institution nothing definite is known. But it is maintained that when day by day the Digambara Jaina ascetics became lax in their conduct, the practice of nudity by Jainas was looked down upon by the Muslim rulers, and the community was on its way of disintegration due to uncertainty and insecurity prevailing at that time, the institution of *Bhattārakas* was constituted to save the religion and its followers from utter destruction. The *Bhattāraka* was placed above the laymen and below the ascetics. His duties were religious as well as social. He used to be the keeper of the conscience of the Jaina community within his local jurisdiction. He administered to all their wants, temporal and spiritual. He officiated, superintended, or directed the celebration of domestic rites like birth, marriage and death and he was their physician, astrologer, adviser and father-confessor. He also officiated to all the religious ceremonies, consecration of temples and images, worships, and devotional meetings and delivered religious discourses to all.¹ Thus, the *Bhattāraka* served a very useful purpose. Through his own learning and behaviour and with the help of his trained disciples, he not only spread the message of Jainism but also unified the disintegrated Jaina community. Without the introduction of the *Bhattārakas* the Digambara sect would have hardly survived. But later on the institution degenerated to such an extent that instead of serving as a force of integration it hastened the disintegration of its adherents. The *Bhattāraka* became worldly minded, tried to

1. J. G., Vol. XXVIII, P. 31.

amass wealth and to raise his position by means both fair or foul, and utterly neglected his religious and social duties. Instead of catering to the needs of Jainas in general, he restricted his field of activity to a particular caste of Jainas only. As a result we find that in the Deccan each principal Jaina caste came to have a separate *Bhattāraka* who controlled the social and religious life of that caste.¹ Naturally, this widened the gulf between various Jaina castes. Further, many Digambara Jainas, seeing the perverted behaviour of the *Bhattārakas*, revolted against the very institution and founded what is known as the Terāpantha sub-sect of the Digambara sect in the latter part of the 17th century of the Vikrama Era. Thus on the issue of *Bhattāraka* the Digambara sect has been split up into two equal sections, the Bisapanthis, who are the followers of the *Bhattārakas* and the Terāpanthis who do not believe in the *Bhattārakas*. In recent years the condition of *Bhattārakas* has not improved at all and hence at present there is a question before the Digambara Jainas whether to discard the institution altogether or to retain it by giving it a new shape to suit the changed circumstances. The general opinion seems to be in favour of retaining the institution because a religious preceptor is considered necessary to look after the spiritual life of the people. It is suggested that if the *Bhattārakas*, who are well-educated, who wish to renounce life after fulfilling their worldly desires, are appointed and recognised not as the heads of particular castes but as organisers, propagators and preceptors of the Digambara Jaina sect, then not only the Digambaras would be united by closing their rift between the Bisapanthis and Terāpanthis but also they would be benefitted in the long run by diverting the large estates of the *Bhattārakas* to various social and religious purposes.²

The Jainas have started various institutions of a social

1. Vide Page 101 ante.

2. For a detailed and masterly account of the institution vide Nathurama Premi : *Bhattāraka*, J. H., Vol. VII, Nos. 7-8, pp. 59-69, No. 9, pp. 13-24, Nos. 10-11, pp. 1-9, and Vol. VIII, No. 2, pp. 57-70.

character for the betterment of their community. In the first place, they have organised a large number of associations with a view to bring the members together and to solve several social problems. A majority of such associations are formed by the members of a particular caste or gachchha. The associations like Khandelavāla Jaina Mahāsabha, Śvetavāla Jaina Mahāsabha, etc. deal with the problems of their caste only. Sometimes the associations are confined to the particular caste or gachchha members hailing from a certain locality. Thus Śri Bombay Lokāgachchha Jaina Saṅgha is restricted to the followers of the Lokāgachchha residing in Bombay and the members must belong to the families hailing from Maṅgrola, Porabandara or Verāvala in Kathiawar. At times the associations like the Dakṣiṇa Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabha, Mahārāshṭriya Jaina Sabha, etc., are formed on a provincial basis which are technically open to all Jainas of that province but in reality they are dominated and run by the members of one sect. Thus the Dakṣiṇa Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabha is predominantly of the Digambaras and the Mahārāshṭriya Jaina Sabha is of the Śvetāmbaras. There are other provincial associations like Mum̄bai Prāntika Digambara Jaina Sabha which are avowedly meant for the members of one sect only. Further, both the sects and practically all the subsects have their associations of an all-India character. Of these the All India Śvetāmbara Jaina Conference and All India Sthānakavāsi Jaina Conference are well organised and have their headquarters at Bombay. The Dīgañbaras have three, so to say, rival associations of an all-India character but in fact their field of activity is confined to Northern India only. There are a few noteworthy associations of a local character like Bombay Jaina Yuvaka Saṅgha and of an all-India character like Bhārata Jaina Mahāmaṇḍala which embrace all sections and sub-sections of the Jaina community. All these small and big associations have tried and to a considerable extent succeeded in eradicating the irreligious and bad practices of their members. Mainly due to their efforts we see that the worship of Hindu gods has practically lessened, the observance of Hindu festivals like Holi and Sitalā-saptami is discontinued, the performance of Śrāddha ceremony from religious motive is

declining, and bad practices like bride-price, child-marriage, extra expenditure on ceremonies connected with pregnancy and death, beating the breasts while crying over the death of a person, etc. are going out of vogue. Further, they have created interest in the Jaina religion, history, literature, culture, etc. as a result of which it is found that generally people are marrying among the Jainas only and the marriage ceremonies are performed according to Jaina rites and that the Jainas are inclined to take religious education and to observe Jaina practices day by day. But these associations have not created a sense of one-ness among all Jainas. On the contrary they have fostered separatist tendencies. Practically all associations are confined to a caste or to a sect or a sub-sect and those which are free to all persons irrespective of caste or sect are very few, without influence and have not as yet become popular.

Along with associations the Jainas also started newspapers or journals with a view to educate the people in the principles of Jainism, to safeguard Jainism from the attacks of other religionists and to solve the social problems confronting the society from time to time. These journals are mostly conducted by the Jaina associations and as such the traits of Jaina associations are clearly visible in Jaina journals also. There are caste and sub-caste journals like Osavāla, Osavāla Navayuvaka, Kachchī Dasā Osavāla Prakāśa, Khaṇḍclavāla Hitechchhu, etc.; sect and sub-sect journals like Sthānakavāsi Jaina, Digambara Jaina, Tāraṇapantha Digambara Jaina, etc.; provincial journals like Pragati āpi Jina-vijaya, Jaina-Bandhu, the official organs of the Dakshina Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabhā and the Mahārāshṭriya Jaina Sabhā, etc.; and the all-India papers like Vira, Jaina Sandeśa and Jaina Gazette (Hindi), the official organs of the three all India Digambara Jaina associations, Jaina Prakāśa, the organ of all-India Sthānakavāsi Jaina Conference, etc. A very few papers like Jaina Gazette and Jaina Jagat, which are the official organs of Bhārata Jaina Mahāmaṇḍala, are concerned with all Jainas. Again, Jaina Mahilādarśa, Jaina Mahilā and other papers are mainly devoted to the problems of Jaina women and are mostly conducted by Jaina ladies. The papers are published in English, Hindi, Guja-

rāthī, Marāthī, and Kannada languages and many papers use two languages in the same issue or in the alternate issues. Magazines like Jaina Antiquary, Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara, and Anekānta are mainly devoted to research in Jainism and have established a good reputation. There are also orthodox papers like Jaina Bodhaka and progressive ones like Jaina Gazette (English). As all Jaina papers are considered as agencies for the propagation of Jaina religion, it will be seen that the Jaina community conducts a large number of papers hardly run by any other community of fifteen lacs population. There is a considerable infant-mortality among Jaina papers and a very few papers are self-supporting. As the papers have to depend on the charities for their existence, naturally they die out early. Among the existing Jaina papers the oldest is the Jaina Bodhaka (estd. in 1884 A. D.) from Sholapur. The papers like Jaina Divākara (estd. in V. S. 1932), Jaina Sudhārasa (estd. in V. S. 1933), etc. were started earlier than the Jaina Bodhaka but could not be continued. The exact number of Jaina papers, past and present, is not known but it is estimated that before 1938 there were as many as one hundred and sixteen Jaina papers conducted for a short or long period and in 1938 the number of Jaina papers was sixty-five.¹ The number might have possibly increased now. The papers have no doubt created interest in the minds of the people regarding Jaina religion and helped to remove the bad social customs and irreligious practices. But they hardly maintain and put forward views concerning the undivided Jaina community. On the contrary, the sectional and caste papers foster narrow visions. The absence of broad outlook in the Jaina community can, to a large extent, be attributed to these sectarian papers.

Like members of other communities the Jainas have recently launched some co-operative institutions for their benefit. The main form of co-operation is in the field of housing. The co-operative housing societies exist in Bombay and Ahmedabad. Through them residential accommodation at moderate or cheap rates is offered to the Jainas. But such institutions are not open

1. Nahata, B. A. "Bhūtakālīna Jaina Sāmājika Patra," J. S. B., June 1938.

to all Jainas. The societies are restricted generally to the members of a particular sect or caste or at times only to the members coming from a particular locality. Thus the Pāṭaṇa Jaina Mandala in Bombay offers accommodation to the Jaina families hailing from Pāṭaṇa only. Some years back the Jaina Sahakārī Bank was established in Bombay and the Bank is running a shop on co-operative basis. As compared with other communities the Jainas do not seem to take more interest in conducting co-operative institutions of various types on a large scale.

In the category of institutions started by the Jainas for their benefit the educational institutions receive considerable attention. Along with religious education, the secular education also is brought within the reach of all members of the Jaina community by various means. The Jainas prefer to impart to the students religious and secular education at the same time. For that purpose they have started residential schools and colleges known as *Gurukulas* where students are prepared for various university courses but at the same time care is taken that they lead a strictly religious life. This *Gurukula* system is becoming popular because the students trained by them remain religious minded throughout their life and are in a position to maintain themselves. The Mahāvira Brahmacharyāśrama (or *Gurukula*) at Kāraṇḍā in Berar and the Yaśovijayajī Jaina *Gurukula* at Pāliṭaṇa in Gujarātā are notable institutions in this regard. The number of such *Gurukulas* is small as too much expenditure has to be incurred on them because a majority of the students is admitted without any charges. Where *Gurukulas* could not be established, Boarding Houses or Hostels have been started at practically all big places and centres of education throughout India. Here residential accommodation is given to the Jaina students free of rent or after paying nominal charges. The students residing in such hostels are free to join any institution for their education but they are compulsorily required to take some elementary religious education, for which provision is made by the authorities, and to lead a religious life, that is, to visit the temple daily, to refrain from eating at night and eating prohibited things, etc. The poor and deserving hostel students are

sometimes given financial help in one form or another. With a view to accelerate the spread of education Funds are constituted to give scholarships or loans to deserving students wherever they may be. Generally the scholarship amount is given on the condition that the receiver has to refund it by instalments when he completes his education and is settled in life. In awarding the scholarships preference is shown to those who wish to prosecute higher studies in Jainism or desire to take specialised subjects. In giving scholarships it is necessarily seen that the student is religious minded. It can be said without any exaggeration that the spread of higher education among the Jainas is mainly due to the help rendered to them through the means mentioned above. Such institutions are really a boon to the poor students as they are helped in a critical period of their life. But like other institutions these institutions of an educational character also are purely sectarian. While the Mahāvīra Brahmacaryāśrama is meant for the Digambaras, the Yaśovijaya Jaina Gurukula is for the Śvetāmbaras only. The Boarding Houses and Scholarship Funds are reserved for members of one or the other sect or sub-sect. In the case of scholarship funds even further divisions are made. The scholarships are sometimes exclusively earmarked for students of a particular caste or sub-caste coming from a certain locality only. It is but natural that the separatist tendency is created in the minds of the students as they are made to feel that they belong to a certain section or sub-section. The Mahāvīra Jaina Vidyālaya of Bombay is probably the biggest Jaina institution giving residential accommodation and scholarships to the students, but it is exclusively reserved for the Mūrtipūjaka Śvetāmbara Jainas only. In educational centres like Bombay and Poona there are separate Boarding Houses for the Digambara, Śvetāmbara, and Sthānakavāsi Jaina students and even though they are situated very near each other, still there is hardly any communication among them. As the students trained in this atmosphere become the active members in the community, it is no wonder that they perpetuate the same separatist policies. In Bombay City the population of Jainas is not less than 33,000 but there is not even a single educational institution which is open to all Jainas irrespective of sect.

or caste. At present there is a move to start a Hostel for all Jaina students in Bombay but, judging from past experiences and present tendencies, it cannot be said when the project would materialise.¹

1. Recently small beginnings have been made to start Boarding Houses giving accommodation to Jainas of all sects, e. g., "The United Jaina Home" in Bombay is open to all Jainas and in Benaras "The Pär̄vā-nātha Vidyākrama" is open to Jainas and non-Jainas alike.

CHAPTER SIX

THE WORKING MODEL

1. INTRODUCTION

Jainism, being mainly concerned with the spiritual progress of the soul, naturally devoted more attention to the questions relating to the soul in all its aspects. According to Jainism, the utmost care of the soul must be taken by every body because it is firmly believed that the soul is in contact with the matter (i.e. Karma) from the time immemorial and unless the soul is completely freed from the Karmic matter, it will not obtain its natural position. In its natural condition the soul possesses the four important attributes of infinite perception, infinite knowledge, infinite happiness and infinite power. To obtain this position is the aim of every true Jaina and it is the primary duty of Jainism to show clearly the way to achieve that position. The main burden of Jaina literature is to delineate the path of salvation in unambiguous terms so that anybody can follow the path with full conviction about its ultimate success. Since an enormous amount of emphasis was laid on the question of the liberation of soul, it is but natural that the Jaina literature concentrated its attention more on this problem than on any other. If we casually notice the vast amount of secular and sacred Jaina literature, it will be manifest that the Jaina writers have, throughout these centuries, portrayed the philosophical side of their life very prominently as compared with the other sides. In the domain of serious literature the Jaina writers have produced far too many treatises upon the philosophical beliefs of their religion and hardly any good ones on its sociological and cultural convictions. Whenever Jaina writers felt persuaded to write on non-philosophical subjects, they turned to traditional and learned pursuits like the writing of books on grammar, prosody, astronomy, mathematics, or books of fiction, epics and stories, sometimes—

but only sometimes and always indirectly and impliedly—embodiment materials of a sociological character.¹

From these circumstances it is clear that the material available in the various kinds of Jaina literature is comparatively very meagre for the purposes of a social survey of the Jaina community. For a full social survey of the Jaina community detailed information is required about the conditions relating to the social institutions like marriage, family, caste, religion, etc. and the miscellaneous social customs and manners. Such a type of information is not readily found in Jaina literature. In the previous chapters an attempt has been made to utilise whatever information is readily available.

It is evident that for several reasons the information available in Jaina literature is quite insufficient for our purposes. The material is not only scanty but it is also scattered at different places. Generally a specific social problem is not dealt with in all its aspects. Many a time only stray references are made to social conditions prevailing at a particular time. Obviously, such references are applicable to certain parts of the country. Further, in many cases it appears that the information cited might have been obtained from indirect sources. As a cumulative effect of all these factors it goes very difficult to have a complete picture of the social conditions of the Jaina community. It is not that the information is of no use at all. It definitely serves the purpose of at least providing the rough back-ground existing in the past regarding various social conditions. What is needed is to supplement the information available in ancient Jaina literature by the information gathered in various ways in more recent times.

Of late, social surveys of various communities have been carried out by communal or non-communal bodies. But until now no such survey has been made about the social conditions prevailing in the Jaina community at a particular time. When the Census Reports and District Gazetteers were compiled for the first time information regarding the social conditions of the Jainas in several parts of the country was collected. It can be asserted

1. Dr. Bool Chand: *Jain Cultural Studies*, P. 6.

that the information so collected was not complete in many ways. As the Jainas formed a very small proportion of the total population of India and as they were scattered over practically all parts of India, it appears that much attention was not paid to note down and discuss their various institutions and customs and manners. Naturally little information is available on all these points. It has already been stated that formerly many Jainas regarded themselves as Hindus and hence it is likely that, in spite of instructions to the contrary, Jainas might have been included among Hindus by the census enumerators. Further, in the census operations of 1931, the Jainas, being more involved in the non-co-operation movement, did not purposefully furnish information about them. As the names of authorities from which the information was collected for the District Gazetteers are not mentioned, it is difficult to say anything about authenticity of the sources of their information. Apart from these facts we have to rely upon the Census Reports and District Gazetteers, for at no other place such a type of information is available and that is why they have been profusely referred to in previous chapters.

In recent years—and especially after the compilation of District Gazetteers—the Jainas have commenced to take more interest in their various social problems. With a view to tackle these problems and to suggest their solutions, they have written some books based on the information collected by them. Such books are mainly concerned with the problems of marriage and of giving rights to certain sections of the community which are considered low born and degraded by other sections.¹ It must, however, be borne in mind that these books have been written with a particular aim in view. Leaving aside the propagandist aspect of them such books provide a fund of information on the

1. (i) Jain, P. D. : *Vijātīya Vivāha Mīmāṃsā*.
- (ii) Koṭhārī, M.G. : *Jāti, Varṇa aura Vivāha*.
- (iii) Mukhyāra, J. K. : *Vivāha-Kahotra-Prakāśa*.
- (iv) Mukhyāra, J. K. : *Vivāhukā Uddeiya*.
- (v) Savyāsadehī : *Jaina Dharma aura Vidhavā Vivāha*.
- (vi) Sphuliṅga : *Dassā Pūjādhikāra-Vichāra*.
- (vii) Mukhyāra, J. K. : *Jinapūjādhikāra-mīmāṃsā*.

social problems concerned. Moreover, the Jaina authors, especially the Jaina ascetics, have recently put in black and white the traditions and different sorts of available information regarding several castes and sub-castes found in the Jaina community.¹ It is needless to add that these books furnish us with valuable information because these have been written by disinterested persons and that too without any ulterior motive. Further, with the rise of caste consciousness and the development of loyalty to the caste, many Jaina castes, in imitation of Hindu castes, arranged to get their histories written down either through the committees specially constituted for the purpose or by individual persons. Their main concern was to show the antiquity of their castes and to narrate the achievements of their important castemen.² Such books do serve their purpose because investigation is carried with so much zeal that every available information is tried to be included. Again, in recent times the Jainas have started a large number of newspapers—especially weeklies and monthlies—devoted to the many-sided development of the community. But, it must be admitted that a majority of these journals is concerned with religious and philosophical questions. They hardly discuss any social problem in all its aspects and try to collect all available information on certain problems which clamour for solution. Excepting a few journals like *Jaina Hitaishi*, *Jaina Antiquary*, *Anekānta* and *Jaina Gazette*, no other possesses that broad outlook which is so essential to view the social problems in a comprehensive manner. It is but natural that the Jaina journals do not directly contribute to provide us all possible information on a particular question. Nevertheless, their value as indirect source of information for certain social conditions cannot be minimised. All these different types of Jaina works have, as far as possible, been consulted and made use of in the foregoing chapters.

1. (i) Yati Śripālachandraji : *Jaina Sampradaya Śikshā*.

(ii) Muni Jñānasundaraji : *Jaina Jāti Mahodaya*.

(iii) Paṇḍita Rāmālālaji : *Mahūjana Vamsā Muktāvalī*.

2. (i) Osavāla Jātikā Itihāsa.

(ii) Jain, B. L. : *Agravāla Itihāsa*.

(iii) Zammanalālaji : *Lamechu Samājikā Saṅkshipta Parichaya*.

On the basis of information so received from several types of works mentioned above an effort has been made to present the available information on some important social institutions, customs and manners in a systematic way. But it cannot be ignored that a large number of such works and especially the District Gazetteers were published during the last two decades of the last century and the first three decades of the present century and as such have become out of date to some extent. Due to the spread of education and the activities of various social organisations in the past few decades, there has been a consequent change in the social customs and manners of the Jainas. With a view to find out in what spheres and in what measure the changes have taken place it was undoubtedly necessary to note down the social conditions prevailing in the Jaina community at present. As a comparatively small community of Jainas has been spread over the length and breadth of India, it was not possible to get the requisite information personally. Therefore, a detailed questionnaire¹ was prepared and its copies were sent to leading Jainas all over India. The scientific investigation of social conditions of Jainas was, I suppose, not undertaken till now and it was thought necessary that an appeal should be made to the members of the Jaina community to furnish the requisite information. Accordingly, the questionnaire was fully endorsed by twelve influential and leading members of the Jaina community. These signatories to the endorsement were so chosen that they included not only the representatives of important Jaina associations and institutions from different parts of the country, but also the most learned and respected personalities of the community. Again, copies of the questionnaire were sent to the editors of various Jaina journals representing the views of different sects, sections, schools of thought and associations of the community with a request to give publicity to the scheme of a social survey of the Jaina community and to ask their readers to send their answers to the questionnaire as early as possible. It is gratifying to note that many journals, in their editorial comments, expressed the necessity of having such a

1. A copy of the questionnaire will be found at the end of the Book.

scientific survey of social conditions prevailing in the Jaina community at present and urged upon the members to send their replies as a part of their social duty. Some papers even translated and published the full text of the questionnaire and appealed to the Jaina leaders and associations of different places that realising the importance of such a survey from the point of view of Jaina society, they should arrange to get as large a number of replies as possible.¹ In addition to this, I attended the annual sessions of some important Jaina associations and personally requested the members, after explaining the importance of the scheme, to answer the questionnaire. I also visited several places of Jaina centres, saw the leading members there, and extended to them the same request. Thus, more than one thousand copies were distributed to the educated and responsible members of the Jaina community all over India and as a result of appeals, requests and repeated reminders one hundred and fifty-four replies were received. Though the number of replies received is comparatively meagre, yet it serves our purpose because the replies are received from important sections of the community from practically every part of the country—right from Amritsar and Calcutta in the North to Tanjore and Trichonopoly in the South—and they are really valuable as many of them have come from very well educated persons occupying responsible positions in the society. Based on the information received from these replies a present-day picture of social conditions found in the Jaina community is given in this chapter.

The questionnaire consists of fifty questions drawn with a view to elicit information on the different aspects of Jaina social life. The questions can be conveniently divided into four broad categories. The first six questions are meant to get general information about the persons answering the questionnaire. As the question numbers 7 to 28 deal with the social institutions of caste and marriage they form the second category. The institution of Bhāttāraka is confined to certain castes among Jainas and hence the question about it has been included in this section only. The

1. Vide 'Prabuddha Jaina', Vol. IX, No. 2, dated the 15th May 1947.

third category consists of question numbers 29 to 33 which are concerned with the institutions of the family. The remaining questions form the fourth category and they ask information about some miscellaneous social customs and manners as well as individual opinions on certain topics of social interest. In addition to the answers to these questions, the persons were requested to make special remarks, if any, regarding any matter of social importance.

2. NAMES AND SURNAMES

The question numbers 1 and 2 are concerned with the full name and address of the person to whom the questionnaire is addressed. From the replies received it will be evident that the Jainas have no particular surnames which are common all over India and that their surnames differ in different provinces. In Western India or Gujarātha the surnames commonly found among the Jainas are Shah, Gandhi, Mehta, Doshi, Patel, Parikh, Sanghavi, Kapadia, Kothari, Vora, Zaveri, etc.; in Northern India they are Jain, Nahata, Daddha, Chopra, Singh, Kashlival, Gangaval, Sarupria, etc.; in Central India they are Jain, Singhai, Mogha, etc. in Hindī Districts and Mahajan, Junankar, Belokar, Vaidya, Chavare, etc., in Marāthī Districts; in Mahārāshtra and Karnātaka they are Sangave, Chaugule, Magdum, Patil, Gunjal, Tukol, Upadhye, etc. and in South India they are Shetty, Jain, Shastri, Shaligram, Chakravarti, etc. Further, the surnames and names of the Jainas of a particular province are generally like those current in that province. The names and surnames of Jainas like Kamata Prasada Jain from North India, Chimanlal Chikubhai Shah from Western India, Laxman Annaji Phaltane from Mahārāshṭra, Tamanna Kuberappā Tukol from Karnātaka and Y. J. Padmarajiah from South India are in accordance with the general practices of the respective provinces. In South India the common practice of writing a name of a person is in the order of first the name of the native place, then the name of his father and then his name. Accordingly, Y. J. Padmarajiah stands for Yelekya-thanahalli Jinadattappa Padmarajiah. The Northern Indians observe the practice of not mentioning the father's name while

writing their names. That is why the name Kamata Prasada Jain does not include father's name. Again, there are very few names which are peculiar to Jainas only and such names are the names of Jaina Gods, Saints and Goddesses like Ādinātha, Ajitanātha, Padmanātha, Śantinātha, Neminātha, Parasanātha, Vardhamāna, Mahāvīra, Bharata, Bahubali, Gautama and Padmāvatī. Along with these a large number of Hindu names like Śāṅkara, Gaṇapata, Paraśurāma, Ātmārāma, Sadaśiva, etc., are also commonly used by the Jainas. From the above facts it can be stated that in awarding and writing the names the Jainas follow the customs prevalent in the respective provinces. Only in few cases the Jainas adopt peculiarly Jaina names as their names and 'Jain' as their surname. The absence of any difference in the nomenclature of Jainas and others, particularly Hindus, is obviously due to the reason that the Jainas are the permanent residents of their provinces from the very beginning. That is why Jainas from Gujerātha and Māravāda who have for some time settled in other provinces for commercial purposes can be easily distinguished from the native Jainas from their names. Of course nowadays the difference in names (and not the surnames) between the native and the non-native Jainas of a province is dwindling because there is a noticeable tendency among all Jainas to adopt modern, popular and national names such as Vasant, Vilas, Ramesh, Subhash, Bharat, Mandakini, Sarojini, Rajani, Prema, etc. If this tendency is accelerated it is likely that both the native and foreign Jainas of a province would come closer to each other and there will be only a slight difference between all Jainas and other residents of that province so far as the system of awarding names is concerned.

3. OCCUPATIONS AND PROFESSIONS

The question No. 3 deals with the occupations and professions of the Jainas answering the questionnaire. Though the questionnaire was sent to persons following different avocations and professions, the persons in specific occupations and professions only have sent their replies. Out of 154 persons who have sent their replies, 47 are from the legal profession including pleaders,

solicitors, barristers and Judges, 28 are from teaching profession including school teachers, college professors, Śāstris and research scholars, 25 are businessmen, 21 are doctors, 19 are in different services, mainly Government and business service, 5 are editors, 5 are social workers, 2 are landlords and 2 are engineers. From this it is evident that the well-educated persons in various lines have cared more to send their replies than the businessmen who by far form the largest proportion of Jaina population. Besides, it appears that the Jainas seem to prefer the legal, teaching and medical professions to other professions.

4. SECTS AND SUB-SECTS

The question No. 4 asks the information about sect and sub-sect of the person concerned. Among 154 persons who have replied to the questionnaire, 84 and 46 belong to the main Digambara and Śvetāmbara sects of Jainism respectively, while 22 and 2 belong to the Sthānakavāsi and Terāpanthi sub-sects of the main Śvetāmbara sect respectively. The replies of the Digambaras are by a great majority from the South India, Karnātaka, Mahārāshtra and Central India, while those of the Śvetāmbaras are from Gujarātha and Bombay and those of the Sthānakavāsis are from Rājasthāna; and this is quite in accordance with the concentration of the main sects and sub-sects of Jainas in the different parts of India.

5. GOTRA

The question No. 5 is concerned with the Gotra or any other division which is considered for marriage purpose. From the replies received it is abundantly clear that there is a great divergence in the observance of the gotra system among the Digambara and Śvetāmbara Jainas. The names of gotras mentioned by the Digambara Jainas from the different parts of India are as follows:

Western India and Bombay City:

Lakkī, Atreya, Vāmulla, Kāśava, Nāgara, Bhārilla, Kopḍala, and Haḍasola.

Northern India :

Kāśyapa, Jindala, Gārga, Pāṭapi, Gaṅgavāla, Ajamerā, Kamaleśvara, Koṭhiyā and Thākura.

Central India :

Kochhala, Bālamūra, Gohilla, Bajjhala, Bāsala, Koṭhiyā, Raulā, Chavare and Khatoḍa.

Mahārāshtra and Karnāṭaka :

Puṇḍarīka, Bhārgava, Vimalakīrti, Devālaya, Ubhayaketu, Buddheśvara, Kherajeśvara, Raziana and Uttareśvara.

Southern India :

Kāśyapa, Kūra, Supratishṭha, Devadatta, Gautama, Srivatsa and Satyakīrti.

Excepting the Kāśyapa gotra which is found in both Northern and Southern India, no other single gotra is prevalent in more than one part of the country. Thus, Degambaras seem to possess different gotras in different parts of the country. Further, if we consider the relation of these gotras with the castes, it will be noticed that each gotra, except the Kāśyapa gotra, is found in some particular castes only. The names of castes and the above mentioned gotras found therein are as follows :—

<i>Hummaḍa:</i>	Lakkī, Atreya, Kamaleśvara, Buddheśvara, Kherajeśvara, Uttareśvara and Raziana.
<i>Pallivāla:</i>	Kāśava.
<i>Narasinigapurā:</i>	Nāgara and Hadasola.
<i>Kathanerā:</i>	Kōḍala.
<i>Paravāra:</i>	Vāmulla, Bhārilla, Kochhala, Bālamūra, Gohilla, Bajjhala and Bāsala.
<i>Budhelānvayī:</i>	Kāśyapa.
<i>Agravāla:</i>	Jindala, Gārga and Goyala.
<i>Khaṇḍelavāla:</i>	Pāṭapi, Vaidya, Gaṅgavāla and Ajamerā.
<i>Golāpūrva:</i>	Koṭhiyā.
<i>Jaisavāla:</i>	Thākura.
<i>Nevi:</i>	Raulā.
<i>Bagheravāla:</i>	Chavare and Khatoḍa.

Saitavāla :	Pupḍarjka.
Pañchama :	Bhārgava, Vimalakirti, Devālaya, Satyakirti and Gautama.
Bogāra :	Ubhayaketu and Supratishṭha.
Naināra :	Devadatta.
Vaiśya :	Kāśyapa and Śrivatsa.
Kshatriya :	Kāśyapa.

Thus, the Kāśyapa gotra alone is found in three castes, namely, Budhelānvayī from Northern India, and Vaiśya and Kshatriya castes from Southern India. We have already noted¹ the names of gotras found in various Jaina castes and it will be observed that the names of gotras for example, in Agravāla and Khaṇḍelavāla castes, mentioned in the replies are already there.² Only in the case of gotras among Hummaḍas mentioned in the replies, the first two gotras, namely, Lākki and Atreya, are not traceable in the list of gotras already noted.³ These two gotras have been mentioned by two persons belonging to the Visā Hummaḍa Mevāḍa caste from Gujarātha and it is not known how these two have come into the Hummaḍas.

In general these gotras are exogamous groups and as such have necessarily to be avoided in contracting marriages. But it appears that this gotra system is not prevalent in all Digambara Jaina castes and in some cases even though it is existing, it is not considered for marriage purposes. It is stated that in the Bannore caste there are no gotras at all and that in the Śetavāla caste the gotras are not given prominence in contracting marriages but their place is taken by the surnames.

As against a large number of gotras among the Digambaras, the Śvetāmbaras have mentioned only a few gotras, namely, Kāśyapa, Hariśchandra, Arṁbesara, Dhaddhā, Nāhatā, and Nau-lākha. It has been stated that there are no gotras in the Visā Śrimāla sub-caste and this may be the condition in other castes

1. Vide Chapter III.

2. Vide Appendix IX and Appendix XI attached to Chapter III.
(Vide pages 131 and 134-136 ante)

3. Vide page 99 ante.

also. In any case the gotra rarely plays any role at all in fixing the marriages because only the caste and locality are taken into account. Sometimes at the most surnames are avoided in contracting marriages and this seems to be the practice among the Śvetāmbara Terāpanthī Osavālas. It has been specifically asserted on behalf of the Sthānakavāsi Jainas that there are no gotras among them. Like Śvetāmbaras they observe the limitations of caste and locality only. But it appears that they do take into consideration the surnames like Mālavapiyā, Muṭhā, Khiṇivasarā, etc. for purposes of marriage.

6. SANGLA, GANA, GACHCHHA AND ŚĀKHĀ

We have already noted¹ that the Jaina community was undivided upto the first century A. D. and that later on it was split up into several religious divisions and sub-divisions. The Jaina community from the early times consisted of four sections, namely, Sādhus, Sādhvis, Śrāvakas and Śrāvikās, that is, Male Ascetics, Female Ascetics, Male Laity and Female Laity. Afterwards for various reasons the divisions of Saṅgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Śākhā and of Gachchha alone, arose among the Digambaras and Śvetāmbara ascetics respectively and as a consequence the lay followers of these ascetics were also split up into such divisions. With a view to know whether the Jainas are still having such divisions or not and if so, to find out their names, the question number 6 regarding the Saṅgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Śākhā, was asked. From the replies it will be observed that nearly half of them do not mention anything at all and among the persons who do not know about their divisions the Digambaras form a larger proportion than the Śvetāmbaras. Besides, it has been stated that there are no such divisions among the Digambaras at present. Further, there are many Digambaras who have mentioned either the Saṅgha or the Gaṇa only. Hence it appears that the religious divisions of Saṅgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Śākhā are not so prevalent among the Digambaras now as they were formerly. Nevertheless, the following names of these divisions have been mentioned by the Digambaras.

1. Vide Chapter II.

Saṅgha: Mūla and Kāshṭhā.

Gapa: Balātkāra, Sena, Vidyā and Deśiya.

Gachchha: Sarasvatī, Pustaka, Nanditāta and Bhāratī.

Śākhā: Prathamānuyoga, Charapānuyoga and Prābhṛtaka.

Thus Mr. Śāntirāja Śāstri from Mysore belongs to Mūla Saṅgha, Deśiya Gapa, Pustaka Gachchha and Charapānuyoga Śākhā. The most popular grouping of these divisions seems to be the Mūla Saṅgha, Balātkāra Gapa and Sarasvatī Gachchha as this grouping is found among the Digambaras from different parts of India.

The Śvetāmbaras, excepting a few, have mentioned the following Gachchhas to which they belong: Tapā, Vijaya-Tapā, Brhat-Tapā, Loṅkā, Añchala and Kharatara. The names of the Śvetāmbara Gachchhas referred to in their books are one hundred and thirteen¹ but it appears that only few are prevalent among the Śvetāmbaras at present. So far as Sthānakavāśis are concerned it seems from their replies that a majority of them do not know or observe the Gachchha system. The names of two Gachchhas only have been mentioned by them, namely, Loṅkā Gachchha and Upakeśa Gachchha. On the contrary they have mentioned that they follow Liṅbaḍī Sampradāya and Bāvīsa Sampradāya, the two comparatively new religious divisions, instead of the Gachchha system.

7. THE CASTES AND SUB-CASTES

The questions from numbers 7 to 28 deal with the institution of caste and allied matters. The question number 7 is concerned with the names of castes and sub-castes. We have already noted² that the Jaina castes are many in number and this is also shown from the replies received. The 154 replies mention not less than 30 castes and sub-castes. If we co-relate the castes and sects, it will be found that the Digambaras possess a preponderantly large number of castes than the Śvetāmbaras. Out of the

1. Vide pp. 60-61 ante.

2. Vide P. 71 ante.

above 30 castes as many as 23 are referred to by the Digambaras and only 7 by the Śvetāmbaras. Further, the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras have distinct castes of their own and excepting the Agravāla caste no other caste is common to both the sections. On the basis of the names of castes given by the Digambara and Śvetāmbara Jaina Directories we have already stated that only Osavāla, Poravāda, Hummaḍa, Narasiṅgpurā and Nemā castes are found in both the sections¹ and now the name of Agravāla caste will have to be added to this list.

8. POPULATION AND DISTRIBUTION OF CASTES

The exact figures regarding the total population of Jaina castes and their distribution all over India are not available. As many Jaina castes have their organisations of an All India character—for example, Akhila Bhāratīya Paravāra Jaina Mahāsabhbā, Akhila Bhāratīya Saitavāla Jaina Mahāsabhbā, etc—it was thought that they might be having definite information on the above points. With a view to get this information the question No. 8 was asked. But unfortunately nobody has furnished exact information about the number and geographical distribution of his caste people. It appears that the caste organisations have not as yet paid any attention to this matter. However, from the replies, which did mention the approximate population of the castes concerned, it may be stated that only a few castes claim a strength of more than 50,000 and the rest are very small ones. The Osavāla, Śrimālī and Poravāda castes among the Śvetāmbaras and the Agravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Paravāra, Hummaḍa, Chaturtha, Pañchama and Saitavāla castes among the Digambaras possess more than 50,000 members each. The remaining castes are small ones. There is a large number of castes like Pallivāla, Bagheravāla, Dhākāḍa and Narasiṅgpurā among the Digambaras and Nemā, Mesari Bhāvāśāra and Bāvanagāma Bhāvāśāra among the Śvetāmbaras whose members number about 5,000 each. It is surprising to find that still there are Jaina castes having a population of less than 1,000. According to the statements of their own members the approxi-

1. Vide Chapter III, P. 75 ante.

mate population of castes like Bannore, and Nevi among the Digambaras and Levā Pāṭidāra among the Śvetāmbaras is about 1,000 each and Buḍhelānvayī and Kathanerā among the Digambaras only about 900 and 300 respectively. Thus there is not only a large number of castes in a small community but also the strength of their members is very uneven in the sense that while there are only a few castes having a somewhat decent number of members, the many remaining castes possess an undoubtedly meagre number of population.

As regards the geographical distribution of the Jaina castes it can be said from the replies that even though representatives of many Jaina castes are found, for obvious reasons, in practically all big cities and commercial centres, still different castes are located in different parts of the country. In general the Śvetāmbara castes are concentrated in Gujarātha, Kathiawar and Rajputana while the Digambara castes are spread all over India. Thus among the Śvetāmbaras the castes like Śrīmālī, Osavāla, Poravāda, Nemā, Bhāvashāra, Levā Pāṭidāra, etc. are found mainly in Gujarātha, Kathiawar and Rajputana; among the Digambaras the castes like Agravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Jaisavāla, and Buḍhelānvayī are found mainly in the United Provinces of India and Rajputana; the Paravāra, Pallivāla, Kaṭhanerā, Golā-pūrva, Bagheravāla, Bannore, Nevi and Dhākāda in the Central Provinces and Berar and Central India; the Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama and Bogāra in Mahārāshtra and Karnātaka; and the Upādhyaya, Vaiśya, Kshatriya and Naināra in South India.

9. INTER-RELATIONS OF CASTES

As the Jaina community is divided into a large number of castes and sub-castes it is necessary to know the nature of relations among these castes especially with reference to inter-dining and inter-marriage. With this aim in view the question No. 9 was asked and from the replies it appears that at present practically all Jaina castes can dine with all members of the Jaina community. Even though this freedom is given it is not regularly availed of. In general the sub-castes or castes have dining relations among themselves only. Thus the Jaisavālas and Khaṇdelas-

vālas among the Digambaras state that they practically do not dine with the other castes. Similarly, the Mesari Bhāvasāras and Bisā Agravālas among the Śvetāmbaras do not dine with even other castes of Jainas and the Levā Pāṭidāras have recently started to dine with other Baniyā Jaina castes. This might be due to the fact that the marital relations are necessarily confined to members of their castes only. But there is a marked tendency to extend the dining relations to all Jainas. In this respect the Digambaras seem to be more conservative than the Śvetāmbaras. Among the Digambaras the Hummaḍa and Khaṇḍelavāla castes observe that they maintain dining relations with the Digambara Jainas and the Budhelānvayī caste states that it has no objection to dine with the Visā Jainas. On the contrary, many Śvetāmbara Jaina castes assert that they not only dine with all Jainas but also with all Baniyā castes some of which are not followers of Jainism. Further, a new development is seen in both the main sections of the Jainas. Formerly many castes were not dining with some castes mainly for the reason that the latter were observing the practice of widow-remarriage. Nowadays this is not followed. Thus the Nevis among the Digambaras now dine with the Saitavālas and excepting some very few persons all the Śrīmālis among the Śvetāmbaras dine with the members of Pāṭidāra and Bhāvasāra castes.

As regards the marital relations between the several castes and sub-castes of the Jainas it may be pointed out that in general there is no inter-marriage between the persons belonging to different castes or to different sub-castes of the same caste. The caste or the sub-caste, as the case may be, is considered as a strict endogamous group. Thus even the very small castes like Kathānerā, Budhelānvayī and Nevi among the Digambaras and the Levā Pāṭidāra and Mesari Bhāvasāra among the Śvetāmbaras do not maintain marital relations with the other Jaina castes. Along with the sub-caste a further restriction of geographical locality is generally taken into account. This is observed more meticulously by the Śvetāmbaras than by the Digambaras. Among the Digambaras there is no rule as such that the members of a particular subcaste residing in a certain locality alone should marry among

themselves, but this is observed for all practical purposes because the members of a sub-caste are spread over a vast area. As the *Dasā Hummadas* and *Visā Hummadas* are found in *Rājaputānā*, *Gujarātha* and *Mahārāshṭra* naturally there are practically no marital relations between the *Dasā* or *Visā Hummadas* of these provinces. The same is the case with the *Saitavālas* of the *Bombay Province* and those of the *Central Provinces* and *Berar*. On the contrary it has been specifically laid down by the *Śvetāmbaras* that marriages should be contracted between the persons of a sub-caste residing in a particular locality only. Such a locality is called a '*ghoḷa*' and along with the sub-caste the '*ghoḷa*' is also taken into account for the purpose of marital relations. This rule is strictly enforced; and at times a girl can be brought from outside the '*ghoḷa*' but in no case a girl can be given outside the '*ghoḷa*' to which she belongs. Thus the *Visā Śrimālis* of *Gohilavāḍa* (which is a district in *Kāthiavāḍa*) or the *Visā Osavālas* of *Cutch* marry among themselves only. A further complication arises in this arrangement because of the fact that the members of a sub-caste or a caste belong to different sects of the same religion or to different religions altogether. In such cases marriages are freely contracted between the persons of a particular sub-caste and a '*ghoḷa*' even though they are the followers of different sects or religions. In spite of this freedom, a preference is always given to a marriage between the persons of the same sect or religion. Thus the *Dasā Śrimālis* of *Zalāvāḍa*—a district in *Kāthiavāḍa*—are divided into the *Mūrtipūjaka Śvetāmbara Jainas*, *Sthānakavāśī Śvetāmbara Jainas* and *Vaishṇavas* and irrespective of the fact that marriages can take place between the *Zalāvāḍi Dasā Śrimālis* of any sect or religion, marriages between these members of one sect or religion are definitely preferred. In this way, for example, the *Zalāvāḍi Dasā Śrimāli Sthānakavāśī Jainas* form an endogamous group and nowadays there is a growing tendency to take sect or religion into account while settling the marriages. Moreover, it must be observed that recently very small beginnings have been made by both the *Digambaras* and the *Śvetāmbaras* to ignore the barriers of caste and locality. No doubt this is restricted to a few castes only but it has got its

value as a noticeable change for the better. It has been stated that the members of the Bannore caste in the Central Provinces and Berar have started keeping marital relations with the members of the Bagheravāla, Padmāvati Poravāla and Saitavāla castes of the same province. In the Karnātaka recently marriages take place among the members of the Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra and Harada castes. Similarly, it has been mentioned that among the Śvetāmbaras inter-marriages have started between the Śrimālis and the Osavālas.

10. HIERARCHICAL ORGANISATION OF CASTES

Among the Hindus castes are generally arranged in an hierarchical order so that some castes are superior to other castes. The question number 10 was asked so as to know whether the Jainas believe in hierarchy of caste organisation in their community. From the replies it is clear that not even a single person accepts the hierarchical organisation. It has been specifically stated that Jainism enjoins no caste system and therefore the question of arranging them in an order of respectability does not arise at all. Nevertheless, it is admitted that there is something like caste pride and due to it many castes consider themselves superior to others. In general the castes in which the practice of widow-remarriage is observed are considered inferior to other castes where that practice is not followed. That is why some of the Saitavālas, Chaturthas and Pañchamas among the Digambaras and the Bhāvasāras among the Śvetāmbaras are looked down upon. Further, there are many castes, especially in Gujarātā and Northern India, which have been divided into Visā or Bisā and Dassā or Dassā and the Visā (or pure) Jainas of every caste consider themselves better than the Dassā (or degenerated) Jainas who have been outcasted for some fault of theirs or their fore-fathers. Sometimes the castes are divided into Visā, Dasā, Pañchā and Adhiyā divisions and these are regarded to be in the descending order of respectability. This feature is common both for the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras. Apart from this there are some Digambaras who regard Digambaras as superior and Śvetāmbaras as inferior. Such views are held by some Śvetāmbaras

also. Though such views are found in the Jaina community they are not given much importance and it has been expressed by many persons that these things must be removed as early as possible.

11. CASTE PANCHĀYATAS

Under the caste system generally every caste possesses a *Pāñchāyata* or a Council of Elders to supervise and control the various relations of its members. The *Pāñchāyata* has got its own constitution, is required to perform certain functions and is given some powers. With a view to know these facts about the caste *Pāñchāyatas* among the Jainas the question number 11 was asked. From the replies it may be noted that the *Pāñchāyata* seems to be the most common feature of a caste among the Jainas. It has, however, been reported that castes like Golāpūrva, Bannore, Bagheravāla, Bogāra and Vaiśya are not having caste *Pāñchāyatas*; but it appears that as their present population is small they might be having regular caste *Pāñchāyatas* formerly because there are many castes at present possessing *Pāñchāyatas* only in name.

Generally speaking there seems to be no constitution for these *Pāñchāyatas*. These are all old organisations and are not formed now. They are of a hereditary character in the sense that in general the office-bearers as well as the members are succeeded by their sons. The *Pāñchāyata* of a place consists of a general body and a small committee of a few members. All adult caste members or only eldest members of families of that place constitute the general body and the leading persons of the caste form the small committee. Sometimes both the general body and the small committee are presided over by an influential person known as '*Śetha*' in Gujarātha, '*Sarapañcha*' in Mährāshṭra and '*Yajamāna*' in South India. The office of the '*Śetha*' is always hereditary and his opinion counts much in deciding the matters. In some places the caste-organisation is known by the name '*Saṅgha*' instead of by '*Pāñchāyata*'. At times instead of having a separate '*Saṅgha*' for each place, a '*Saṅgha*' is formed to comprise a '*Ghoṭa*', that is, a particular locality and therefore all places coming under the jurisdiction of that '*Ghoṭa*' have a common '*Saṅgha*'. Further, it is stated that among the Cutchi

Dasā Osavāla Mūrtipūjaka Svetāmbara Jainas there is a new caste-organisation known as '*Mahājana*'. Every thirty adult members, including ladies, elect one representative and such elected representatives of Cutchi Dasā Osavāla Mūrtipūjaka Śvetāmbara Jainas residing in any part of India constitute the Central *Mahājana*. There are also provincial and local *Mahājanas* which have to work under the direction of the Central *Mahājana*.

The duties, which are enjoined upon the caste *Pañchāyatas* to perform, are not many. In general their duties can be divided into two broad categories, namely, religious and social. In the first category are included the duties like the repairs and maintenance of temples owned by the caste and making necessary arrangements for the celebration of various religious festivals. They are also required to see whether the important religious injunctions are strictly observed by their members. The social duties are concerned mainly with the settlement of caste-disputes arising especially out of various marriage restrictions imposed by the caste upon its members. All questions regarding marriage like the number and choice of partners, age of marriage, way of marriage-ceremony, widow-remarriage, divorce, adultery, etc. are dealt with by the *Pañchāyata* and this forms the main part of its duties.

There is no fixed rule regarding the ways of raising the funds required for the performance of the duties mentioned above. The funds are collected either through big grants or small voluntary contributions. At many places regular compulsory contributions from members are not taken and where such contributions are levied they are nominal. The contributions vary from Re. 1/- to Rs. 5/- per family per year and only at a few places it is collected at the rate of Re. 1/- per married person. Another source of income is that of fines collected from its members but it seems that the amount so collected is generally very negligible.

As regards the powers of *Pañchāyatas* it can be said that they are empowered to inflict various sorts of punishments upon the defaulters. Generally they give repeated warnings and if the warnings fail they take recourse to fines which in many cases are symbolic. Then the punishments of a religious nature are availed

of. The defaulters are asked either to give donations to religious institutions, or to perform religious worship, or to go on a religious pilgrimage. Many a time the defaulters are ordered to give a special feast to all members of the caste. As a last resort the defaulters are outcasted. The excommunication may be either partial or complete. In the first case the defaulters are not allowed only to enter the temple and in the second the caste-members are asked not to dine and marry with the defaulters. Regarding the use of these powers a general charge is made against caste *Pañchāyatas* to the effect that the punishments are given according to whims and in giving punishments discrimination is usually made between the rich and the poor. Naturally this could not be tolerated for a long time and due to the efforts of younger people we find that the above powers hardly used by many *Pañchāyatas* during the last twentyfive years. At present in several places the caste *Pañchāyatas* have become defunct bodies and where they have got a semblance of existence they are not respected and cared by vast majority of their members.

As the social conditions have changed to a great extent, the Jainas are not satisfied with the working of caste *Pañchāyatas* during the last few decades. But at the same time they have not taken any action in the matter. They have neither reorganised the caste *Pañchāyatas* on modern lines nor have they abolished them and established new organisations in their places. With a view to ascertain the opinion of Jainas with reference to the problem of ending one way or the other this state of indecision, the question No. 12 was asked and from the replies it will be noticed that still the opinion is equally divided. While they accept the fact that it is undesirable to maintain the *Pañchāyatas* in the old form, they have, it seems, not, as yet, made up their minds regarding the new form the *Pañchāyatas* should assume. The persons in favour of abolition or reorganisation of caste *Pañchāyatas* are practically equal in number. Those in favour of abolition contend that the *Pañchāyatas* of the old rigid type cannot be welcomed because they tend to create a feeling of segregation from other Jaina castes in social affairs. Besides it is thought that the *Pañchāyatas* will automatically cease to exist with the

removal of marriage restrictions. In any case they wish that at every place there should be an organised or well-represented institution so that the Jainas may remain united. That is why they suggest that instead of organising the Jaina community on a caste-basis, the Jainas should be organised on an all-India basis with its provincial, district, taluka, city or village branches and the social, religious, educational and other activities of the community should be carried out by these institutions. However, there are a few persons who think that this arrangement should be applied to the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras separately. On the other hand, there are persons who believe that the caste-organisation cannot be removed so long as the caste system remains. They feel that as small units for self-amelioration, the *Pañchāyatas* are useful bodies. Hence they suggest that the institution of *Pañchāyatas* should be retained in a new form. The hereditary character of the *Pañchāyatas* must be removed and they must be formed on an election basis so that learned and impartial men can control the affairs of the caste. Many persons think that the working of the *Pañchāyatas* could be regularised if they are given a legal form and so it is suggested that the *Pañchāyatas* should be run as registered societies. Again, some propose that the castes or subcastes should organise themselves on a provincial or on all-India basis. Thus it is suggested that the Dasā Śrīmālī Jainas of Gujarātha should have one organisation and that instead of the Saitavāla caste *Pañchāyatas* at various places, there should be only one organisation like All India Saitavāla Jaina Mahāsabha.

12. CASTE FEASTS

It is a widespread custom among many castes to give feasts to their members on certain occasions. Jaina castes cannot be an exception to this. With a view to know whether caste dinners are given and if so, on what occasions, the question No. 13 was asked and from the replies it will be observed that it is customary with practically all Jaina castes to give dinners on specific occasions. The most common occasions are marriages, death and religious ceremonies. Among the religious ceremonies may be

included the occasions like *Paryūshana*, that is, completion of the *Paryūshana* festival; *Vratodyāpana*, that is, conclusion of a religious vow; *Pratishthā*, that is, ceremonial installation of an idol in a temple; and *Yātrā*, that is, returning safely from a pilgrimage. The custom of *Maranabhoja*, that is, giving a dinner on the 12th or 13th day after the death of a person, though practised by many Jaina castes all over India, is against the tenets of Jainism. That is why with the general awakening of Jainas in recent times the death feasts are not only becoming rare but also are completely discontinued by many castes, at several places. The popularity of caste feasts as such is dwindling and no regular caste feasts are given. When the feasts are given, nowadays there is a tendency to limit it to one's friendly circle and relatives instead of inviting all members of the caste. Even this has stopped due to the introduction of rationing of food. Thus from the last few years the caste feasts are not given at all.

13. JAINA AND HINDU CASTES

As the Jainas, Hindus and others are living side by side in this country from the last so many centuries and as the proselytising activities were formerly carried on with zeal and vigour by Jainism, Hinduism or other religions, it is likely that certain social relations may exist between the Jaina community and other communities through the agency of some social institutions. To ascertain the nature of such relations coming under the system of castes question number 14 was asked, and from the replies it may be noted that among both Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras there are castes all over India which are found in other communities also but there are practically no relations, either of food or of marriage, with them. In North India the castes of Agravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla and Jaisavāla are found among the Hindus— and especially among the Vaishpavas— but only Agravālas maintain inter-marital relations and the Jaina Khaṇḍelavālas and Jaisavālas have no relations at all with the Vaishpava Khaṇḍelavālas and Jaisavālas. It is stated that even the gotras of Hindu Khaṇḍelavālas are different from those of the Jaina Khaṇḍelavālas. In Central India Bagheravāla (or Lāḍa), Pallivāla and Golapūrva

castes are seen among Vaishpava Hindus and Jainas but there is a complete absence of relation between them. In Western India the Dasā Śrimālī caste is found among Śvetāmbara and Sthānakavāsi sub-sects of Jainism and among Śaiva, Vaishpava and Svāmīnārāyapa sub-sects of Hinduism, but it is mentioned that though forty years back marriages used to take place freely between the Dasā Śrimālis, irrespective of the sect to which they belonged, the position is not so at present. Now the Jaina Dasā Śrimālis have no relations with Hindu Dasā Śrimālis and among the former the Śvetāmbaras and Sthānakavāsis do not possess inter-marital relations. Similarly the Jaina Poravādas and Nemās have discontinued their practice—which was current only 60 years back—of marrying with the Hindu Poravādas and Nemās respectively. It seems that only Jaina Levā Pāṭidāras even now dine and marry with the Hindu Levā Pāṭidāras and that among the Jaina and non-Jaina members of the Bāvanagāma Bhāvasāra caste, inter-dining and inter-marital relations are kept without any restrictions. In South India like Pañchama Jainas there are Pañchamasālis among the Lingayatas and Pañchamas among the Hindus but the Jaina Pañchamas have no relations with the other Pañchamas. The same is the case with the Upādhyāyas from the Jainas and the Hindu Brahmins. Similarly like Jaina Vaiśyas there are Baṇṭas among the Hindus of South Kanara but there are hardly any relations between them. It is stated that the Velliālas of Śaiva sect of Hindus from Tanjore District were followers of Jainism upto the 10th century A. D. and now they have no relations with any Jainas of that District.

14. RULES OF ENDOGAMY AND EXOGAMY.

The question number 15 is concerned with the rules of endogamy and exogamy, their observance and the possible improvements therein. The rules of endogamy of the Jaina community at present, as revealed from the replies, are such that while contracting marriages the caste or sub-caste, the sect or sub-sect and the geographical locality are generally taken into consideration. This means that the persons belonging to the same sub-sect or sub-caste and geographical locality alone can have marital rela-

tions among themselves and their relations with outsiders are strictly forbidden. Thus, in general the Jainas observe the following forms of endogamy, namely, the caste or sub-caste endogamy, religious or sectional endogamy and local or place endogamy which is in Gujarātha known as *Gholā*. As regards the rules of exogamy it can be said that among the castes in which the gotra system exists, the gotras are necessarily avoided for the purpose of marriage. There is no fixed rule as to how many gotras are to be avoided and the number of gotras to be avoided differs from caste to caste. While the Paravāras avoid four gotras, the Khaṇḍelavālas avoid two or four gotras, and the Golāpūrvas avoid any two gotras. A 'Sagotra' marriage is never approved. There are many castes among the Digambaras, Śvetāmbaras and Sthānakavāsis where the gotra system is not prevalent. In such cases marriages are contracted outside one's own family. In many places the surnames are considered to denote families and as such marriages of persons bearing the same surname are not allowed. Further, there is no common rule regarding the degree of blood-relationship within which marriage is forbidden. While in the Karnāṭaka marriage with a sister's daughter is not only allowed but also preferred, in North India this custom is not followed at all.

The above rules of endogamy and exogamy are generally observed by the members of the Jaina community. No doubt in recent times some cases have been reported where the rules of endogamy have been broken but no punishment was meted out to the defaulters. At times members are allowed to bring girls from outside but in no circumstance they can give their daughters outside their group. Though these lapses in the rules of endogamy are ignored, still such marriages are not favoured and are looked down.

As a result of the observance of caste, sect and local endogamy, the field for choice of partners becomes very limited and the gulf between the castes is perpetuated. With a view to give more freedom in the selection of partners the question regarding inter-caste marriage was asked and from the replies it will be observed that, except ten persons, all the remaining are in favour

of inter-caste marriages. But they are not agreed on the extent of such inter-caste marriages. Some go to the limit of marrying with even non-Jainas but suggest that they should be invariably vegetarians. Those who do not go so far wish to point out that there should be no objection if Jainas marry with the Hindus of higher castes. A great majority of persons approves of marriages among all Jainas irrespective of caste or sect but only after taking into consideration the language, education, economic conditions, ways of living, customs, manners, etc. of the partners. This means that they suggest the marriages of Jainas living in a linguistic province and having the same economic and cultural status. In this some do wish to make distinction between the main sects and think that the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras should marry among themselves only. As a step in this direction it is suggested that in the first instance there should be marriages between the sub-castes and then between the castes found in a particular locality. In this light it is pointed out that as a first step the Bagheravāla, Bannore, Gangeravāla, Nevi, Dhakada and Paravāra castes of Digambara Jainas from Central India should combine for purposes of marriage.

Thus in general it appears that the Jainas seem to accept inter-caste marriages in the beginning among the various Digambara castes or among the various Śvetāmbara castes of a province and not between the Digambara and Śvetāmbara castes.

15. CASTES AND CHARITABLE INSTITUTIONS

It is evident that the Jaina community has been divided into a large number of castes and sub-castes and that the latter have been further sub-divided on the basis of sect or sub-sect and locality. As these divisions and sub-divisions are generally endogamous groups, there are very few chances left for the various castes and sub-castes to have closer relations among themselves. This has created a gulf between the castes or sub-castes and it is necessary to find out whether there are other agencies which perpetuate and, if possible, widen the distance between these castes or sub-castes. That is why the question number 16 was asked to get information regarding the several types of charitable institutions

which are exclusively reserved for the members of a particular caste or subcaste. From the replies it will be noticed that the Jainas are conducting charitable institutions for the benefit of members of a certain caste or sub-caste who follow a particular sect or sub-sect and who reside in or come from some fixed locality. Among such institutions the foremost place will have to be accorded to the Scholarship Funds, Funds for the relief of the poor and the destitutes and Housing Societies and a secondary place to the Students' Boarding Houses which are generally reserved for members of a particular sect or subsect rather than for those of a caste or sub-caste.

Though the institutions of reserved type had been started by both the Digambara and Śvetāmbara castes, like Cutchi Visā Osavāla, Cutchi Dasā Osavāla, Visā Śrimāli, Dasā Śrimāli Śvetāmbara, Dasā Śrimāli Sthānakavāsi, Lāda Śrimāli, Visā Poravāda, Visā Nemā, Dasā Narasiṅgapurā, Visā Mevādā, Bhāvasāra Bāvanagāma, Jaisavāla, Bannore, Dhākada, Bagheravāla, Saitavāla, etc., it is not that all have served their purpose of helping their caste-members. From the replies it appears that the institutions which are said to have served their purpose mostly belong to the wealthy sub-castes like Cutchi Visā Osavāla, Dasā Śrimāli Śvetāmbara, Dasā Śrimāli Sthānakavāsi and Visā Mevādā, while those which have hardly served their purpose seem invariably to have been managed by the small and comparatively very poor castes or sub-castes like Lāda Śrimāli, Dasā Narasiṅgapurā, Bhāvasāra Bāvanagāma, Bannore, Dhākada, Bagheravāla and Saitavāla. The same can be said about the question whether such institutions create separatist tendencies in the community or not. The relatively well-off castes assert that these institutions do not necessarily create separatist tendencies while the other castes state that they undoubtedly help to create separatism at least to some extent. In this connection it seems to be the general consensus of opinion that such institutions foster the already created separatist tendency in the Jaina community. This separatism has gone so deep that some persons wish to maintain that there is no harm if separatism is perpetuated between the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras.

Regarding the proposal of removing the reserved character of these institutions it appears from the replies that in general the persons approve the idea of throwing the institutions open to all Jainas if thereby its aims and objects are not lost sight of. Even though this is desirable, still it is vehemently argued that it is not a practical proposition for various reasons. In the first place, it is stated that the funds at the disposal of these institutions put together are not sufficient to meet the needs of all Jainas. Secondly, it is not practicable so long as the caste structure remains unchanged. In small endogamous castes people are related to one another in a distinct manner and there is a natural tendency to help one's relatives. That is why the rich people do not wish to give donations to members outside the caste. Thirdly, it is maintained that this can be done on the basis of reciprocity. The reciprocal relations are difficult to achieve because there are many castes which are not financially well. Fourthly, it is asserted that it is a matter for all Jainas to come together and to take a common decision. But it is a fact that sectarian distinctions are very deep rooted and there is no possibility of abolishing them as there is complete absence of religious toleration. Hence it is thought that there is no use in opening the institutions to all Jainas.

16. CHOICE OF OCCUPATIONS

The lack of choice of occupations is one of the important features of Hindu caste system. Therein the occupations are considered as hereditary and the members are not allowed to follow an occupation which is not their own. With a view to know whether the Jaina castes also are occupational in character the question number 17 was asked and from the replies it can be observed that in general in the past members of a Jaina caste were not compelled to follow a particular occupation or profession. As the freedom of choice of occupations was given to the members, the Jaina castes could not be considered as occupational in character. Thus the *Visā Śrīmālī* Jainas in the past were businessmen dealing in jewellery, precious stones, perfumery, cloth and other goods. Though some of them still continue their old trades

a good many of them have gone to new lines like speculation in cotton, bullion and shares and even in American futures. Similarly, agriculture and business were the occupations of *Vīśā Osavālas* but now they have ceased to follow agriculture and seem to concentrate on business of precious stones, especially diamonds. *Bāvanagāma Bhāvasāras* appear to have gradually discontinued their former profession of dyeing clothes and now they are found in business as well as in service. In many Jaina castes the profession of banking was practised on a large scale but now they hardly follow that profession. But still there are a few castes which are in a large measure continuing their former main occupations even to the present day. Agriculture was and is the main occupation of *Chaturtha*, *Vaiśya* and *Bogāra* castes. Along with agriculture the *Bogāras* are practising their former occupations of selling bangles and manufacturing and selling copper and bronze vessels. Thus at present there are no fixed occupations of particular castes and the Jainas, irrespective of the castes to which they belong, follow various types of occupations.

17. CASTE AND EDUCATION

The Jainas being mainly a commercial community it is natural that the standard of literacy, especially among males, is comparatively higher than that of other communities. But this cannot be said about the educational standard in general. Not only the educational standard is not advanced among the Jainas but also there is no common standard seen among the various Jaina castes. The disparity in educational standard among Jaina castes may perhaps be due to the fact that the number of Jaina castes is relatively very large and there is a noticeable tendency among several castes to help the members of their own caste only. With a view to ascertain the educational standard in regional and foreign languages attained by males or females of several Jaina castes the question number 18 was asked and from the replies it will be noted that the educational standard does not appear to be the same for all castes. In general it can be maintained that the Jaina castes from the Deccan and South India are educationally much more backward than the Jaina castes from the other parts

of India. The educational standard of all Jaina castes in the Deccan like Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pafichama and Bogāra is definitely low as compared with that of castes in the North like Śrimāla, Osavāla, Poravāda, Agravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Paravāra, Bannore, etc. While in Northern India the males go generally upto the Matriculation and the females complete the primary education, in the Deccan and South India the males reach only the fourth standard vernacular and the females are almost absolutely blank. Further, even among the Jaina castes of Northern (including Central and Western) India it will be noticed that the castes having a smaller population like Mesari Bhāvāsāra, Bāvanagāma, Bhāvāsāra, Dasā Narasiṅgapurā, Kaṭhanerā, Nevi, Dhākaḍa and Bagheravāla are not educationally advanced like the other populous castes. It is pertinent to note that the castes which state that the education is continuously increasing among their caste members are all comparatively rich castes like Dasā Śrimāli Śvetāmbara, Dasā Śrimāli Sthānakavāsi, Agravāla, Khaṇḍelavāla, Paravāra and Hummaḍa. This means that the existing disparity will be perpetuated, if not accentuated. To get an idea of existing disparity in the educational standard in both regional and foreign languages between the members of some castes the following approximate figures are given as stated by them.

Caste or sub-caste	Sex	Regional language	Some foreign language
Visā Osavāla	Males	90%	10%
	Females	33%	2%
Visā Śrimāli	Males	80%	20%
	Females	60%	5%
Chaturtha	Males	10%	2%
	Females	2%	nil
Vaiśya (Naināra)	Males	80%	5%
	Females	10%	nil

18. RELIGIOUS SANCTION TO CASTES

Caste system is a universal feature in the Jaina community. By this system the community has been divided and sub-divided

into small sections and efforts are made to perpetuate these divisions and sub-divisions. When caste is rooted so much in the social organisation of Jainas, it is likely to give impression that the caste system as it exists at present might have been ordained by religion and it might have descended from very ancient times. With a view to ascertain the correctness of this impression, the question number 19 was asked and it will be observed from the replies that with eight exceptions all the rest maintain that there is no religious sanction to these castes. It is considered that the castes are purely social bodies which have come into existence due to the exigencies of time and due to association with the Hindus. Jaina religion is essentially a religion for the individual's spiritual upliftment and as such it is argued that Jainism has nothing to do with social organisations like castes which are based on purely social rather than on spiritual or religious distinctions. As Jainism does not enjoin the caste system, naturally the latter did not exist in the ancient Jaina community. It has been very emphatically stated by eminent Jaina research scholars that the castes, which are found in the Jaina community at present, appear to have come into existence after the 10th century A. D. because the Jaina books prior to the 10th century A. D. do not at all refer to these castes. Thus in general it can be stated that these castes are not sanctioned by religion and they never existed in the ancient Jaina community in their present form. The few persons who do not agree with this general view do not quote authorities in support of their statements. Only three such authorities have been put forward and these are *Jñāti-Jayamālā*, *Jinasamhitā* and *Trivarpikāchāra*. In the first only the names of eighty-four Jaina castes have been mentioned and by no means it can be treated as an ancient Jaina book. The second book is known as *Indranandi Jinasamhitā* and it is written by Āchārya Vasunandi Indranandi. It appears that the book was composed sometime after the 10th century A. D. The third book, namely, *Trivarpikāchāra*, was composed by Bhāttāraka Somasena in 1611 A.D.¹ Both the *Indranandi Jinasamhitā* and *Trivarpikāchāra* are no doubt regarded as some of

1. Jain, C. R. : Jain Law, pp. 3-6.

the chief Jaina Law Books but it must be remembered that they discuss Jaina Law pertaining to the four classes of society, namely, Brāhmaṇa, Kshatriya, Vaiśya and Śūdra and not pertaining to the castes as they exist today. Hence all the three authorities which are supposed to accord religious sanction to the castes and to prove their prevalence in the ancient Jaina community do not really do so.

19. INSTITUTION OF BHATTĀRAKA

It has already been noted that the institution of *Bhāttāraka* was started by Digambara Jainas as a measure against their continuous religious and social disintegration during the medieval period. As the practice of asceticism, according to the Digambara code of asceticism, was declining, it was necessary that an intermediate authority between the ascetics and lay followers should be instituted to look after the religious and social needs of the people. Accordingly the system of *Bhāttārakas* was constituted for mainly the religious divisions of the society like *Sangha*, *Gana* or *Gachchha*. Thus at Kāraṇījā in Berar there were three *Bhāttārakas* each of *Kāshthā Sangha*, *Balātkāra Gana* and *Sena Gana*. Later on a *Bhāttāraka* came to be intimately associated with a particular caste and he was given an important position in the organisation of that caste. In this way with the attachment of a new personage vested with authority a new development took place in the Jaina caste system which was absent in the Hindu caste system. With a view to realise the present day position of *Bhāttārakas* within the caste organisation of Jainas, the question number 20 was asked. From the replies it will be observed that the institution of *Bhāttāraka* is a peculiar feature of the Digambara Jainas only. But it has been stated that like *Bhāttāraka*, there are *Munis* who are attached to various religious divisions of Sthānakavāsi Jainas known as *Saṅghādās* like Limādi *Saṅghādā*, Gondala *Saṅghādā*, Rajkot *Saṅghādā*, etc. The *Munis* are appointed and removed by the *Saṅghādās*. These *Munis* are not allowed to have any property and they do not exercise any control over the people or any authority over the Caste *Pāñchāyatas*. This means that the *Munis* do not wield powers in the social field like the *Bhāttārakas* and hence the *Munis* cannot, it appears, be regarded as

counterparts of the *Bhattārakas* among the Sthānakavāsi Jainas. Further, it is reported that among the Śvetāmbaras there are at different places the seats of *Yatis* instead of *Bhattārakas* and that the pomp displayed by these Śvetāmbara *Yatis* was practically like that displayed by Digambara *Bhattārakas*.

It seems that among the Digambara Jainas also all castes do not necessarily have *Bhattārakas* of their own. From the replies it will be observed that the Hummaḍa Mevāḍa, Narasiṅgapurā, Khaṇḍelavāla, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra, Upādhyāya, Vaiśya and Kshatriya castes have their separate *Bhattārakas* while the Kathānerā, Budhelā, Agravāla, Golāpūrva, Jaisavāla, Nevi and Hummaḍa (from Mahārāshṭra) castes have no *Bhattāraka* system at all. Besides in some castes like Paravāra, Bannore, Dhākāda and Bagheravāla the *Bhattāraka* system was prevalent formerly but now it is extinct.

The central places of residence of the existing *Bhattārakas* of the castes mentioned above are as follows:—

Name of the caste	Central places of residence of the <i>Bhattāraka</i> of that caste
(i) Hummaḍa Mevāḍa	Surat, Sojitrā, Kalol, Narasiṅhapura and Dungarapura.
(ii) Narasiṅgapurā	Surat, Sojitrā and Keśariyāji.
(iii) Khaṇḍelavāla	Gwalior, Sonagira, Nāgora, Ajmera and Mahāvirajī.
(iv) Saitavāla	Lātūra and Nāgapūra.
(v) Chaturtha	Nāndāṇi, Kolhapūra, Hosdāra, Teradāla.
(vi) Pañchama	-Kolhapūra, Rāyabāga, Hosdāra and Hūmacha.
(vii) Bogāra	Hūmacha, Mysore, Śravapabelāgoḷa, Narasiṁharājapura.
(viii) Upādhyāya	Muḍabidrī, Kārakala.
(ix) Vaiśya and	Muḍabidrī, Kārakala, Mela-Sittāmūtra, Śravapabelāgoḷa, Jinakāñchi and Narasiṁharājapura.
(x) Kshatriya	

From the above statement it is evident that the central places of residence of a *Bhāttāraka* are those where the caste people, to which he belongs, are concentrated most. Hence we find that at places, which were and are strongholds of Digambara Jainas, like Surat, Sojitrā, Kolhapūra, Hūmacha, Śravaṇabelagola, Mūḍabidri and Kārakala there remain at a time more than one *Bhāttāraka*.

The principal duty of a *Bhāttāraka* is *Dharmarakshā*, that is, protection of religion. The protection is to be achieved by repulsing the attacks of other religionists and by making his people more religious-minded by means of preaching and educating the people. This means that he is concerned with the spiritual welfare of his people and as such he controls the affairs of his caste so far as religious matters are concerned. Along with the religious duty he has to perform a social duty also. The social duty consists in looking after the interests of his caste members. He has to help them in social matters by giving them advice or by cementing their quarrels or by regulating social relations, institutions, customs and manners according to the rules of conduct prescribed by the Jaina books from time to time. Thus the nature of his duties is spiritual as well as temporal. It has been stated that even though the *Bhāttārakas* are saddled with responsible duties, they care more for their rights than for their duties.

In connection with the question of appointing a *Bhāttāraka* there seems to be no fixed rule. In general the procedure is that of *Śishya-paramparā* in which the existing *Bhāttāraka* always selects his successor from his disciples. When the predecessor nominates his successor, the latter has to be installed by the people of the caste concerned. This practice is observed by the Hummada Mevāḍa, Narasiṅgapurā and Khandelavāla castes. There is another way of appointing a *Bhāttāraka*. In this method the successor is chosen from among the disciples by the caste members through their representatives known as *Pañchas*. This is the common practice among the Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Upādhyāya, Bogāra, Vaiśya and Kshatriya castes. In the case of *Bhāttārakas* coming within the jurisdiction of the Mysore State, the consent of the Mysore Government in the matter has to be taken into account and it is reported that in fact the Mysore

Government exercises more right in selection than the people. Once a *Bhattāraka* is appointed, he cannot be removed from his position even though he fails in his duties or misuses his authority. The cases of removal of a *Bhattāraka* are unheard of. At present only the Hummaḍā Mevāḍā caste claims that it can remove its *Bhattāraka* while the other castes specifically mention that they cannot displace their *Bhattārakas*. This means that a *Bhattāraka* has to be tolerated by his followers.

A *Bhattāraka* is not required to lead the life of a strict ascetic. Though he has to remain celibate throughout his life and to live according to the religious principles, he has been allowed to possess property. Generally a *Bhattāraka* possesses both movable and imovable property and utilises it according to his own will. The property consists of contributions and gifts from his followers and sympathisers and grants from the State. It is gathered from the replies that the financial position of all *Bhattārakas* is sound. It has been stated that excepting the Saitavāla and Upādhyāya *Bhattārakas*, who possess very less amount of property, the remaining *Bhattārakas* individually hold property worth not less than rupees half a lac. It is mentioned that the approximate value of property with the Narasiṅgapurā *Bhattāraka* is upto two lacs, with the Khapdelavāla *Bhattāraka* more than one lac, with the Vaiśya *Bhattāraka* nearly three and a half lacs and the annual income of the Chaturtha *Bhattāraka* is estimated at rupees 20,000 per year. The Hummaḍā Mevāḍā, Pañchama and Bogāra *Bhattārakas* are said to possess much property.

As the *Bhattārakas* have been enjoined upon to look after the religious and social welfare of their people, they were endowed with powers to exercise some control over their members in certain matters like exacting contributions, enforcing decisions, etc. The position at present seems to be different with different *Bhattārakas*. The Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra, Vaiśya and Kshatriya *Bhattārakas* still exercise some definite control over their followers. The Narasiṅgapurā *Bhattāraka* has no strict control and the Hummaḍā Mevāḍā, Khapdelavāla and Upādhyāya *Bhattārakas* have ceased to wield any control at all over their members. Thus in general it appears that the controlling powers are not widely

used by the existing *Bhattārakas* and though they take contributions for their followers, they do not disturb the daily ordinary life of their members.

Whatever powers the *Bhattārakas* are said to possess in theory, they are hardly exercised in practice. This is so because the *Bhattārakas* have ceased to command, due to their incompetence in various matters, the respect from the majority of their members. That is why their present position is stated to be very weak so far as the Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Upādhyāya, Bogāra, Vaiśya and Kshatriya castes are concerned. In the remaining castes their position is quite ordinary and in fact they are considered to be a burden to the society as they live comfortably without attending properly to their duties. In general it can be maintained that at present excepting their few blind followers nobody even cares for them.

The position of a *Bhattāraka* has also dwindled in another sphere. Formerly as a part of his duties, a *Bhattāraka* could control the working of the caste *Pañchāyatas* coming in his jurisdiction. But now this is not the position. A *Bhattāraka* wields no such authority among the Hummada Mevāḍā, Narasiṅgapurā and Khaṇdelavāla castes. While in the remaining castes, namely, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Upādhyāya, Bogāra, Vaiśya and Kshatriya, the *Bhattāraka* is in theory considered as the supreme authority so far as the caste *Pañchāyatas* are concerned, yet in practice he is at present completely powerless. Thus it is clear that as a *Bhattāraka* has no control whatsoever either on individuals or on caste *Pañchāyatas*, his existing position is undoubtedly very precarious.

As regards the problem of reforming the institution of *Bhattāraka* there seem to be two different schools of thought. The first school maintains that the *Bhattāraka* system should be abolished altogether because in recent times practically all *Bhattārakas* have lamentably failed in the performance of even their ordinary duties. Some of the occupants were not sufficiently educated and moreover were devoid of character. Due to these reasons people have neither faith nor confidence in the institution. As a result the vast amount of property attached to the *Bhattārakas*

is either lying idle or is being misused by interested persons. It is, therefore, suggested that instead of wasting such a large amount of property, the *Bhattārakas* should be removed for good, their properties should be looked after by Committees of Management specially organised for the purpose and the money should be regularly utilised for social, religious, educational and economic activities of the people. On the other hand, the second school of thought does not wish to abolish the institution but proposes to reform it. It is thought that only right type of persons possessing *Vidyattā* and *Chāritrya*, that is, learning and character, should be selected for the posts and to ensure this people must have a right to elect a *Bhattāraka* as well as to remove him for misconduct and dereliction of duties. Further, all the powers should not be vested in a *Bhattāraka* alone. A council of elderly people known as Committee of Management should be constituted to guide a *Bhattāraka* and to look after his property. With these provisions it is hoped that the institution will be of a lasting benefit to the people. Between these schools of thought there seem to be more adherents for the second school of reform than for the first school of abolition. Some go even to the length of suggesting that there should be a *Bhattāraka* for all Jainas, irrespective of sect, in a locality instead of for a particular caste only.

20. ORIGIN OF CASTES

Even though Jaina castes came into existence after the 10th century A. D., consistent history is not available about any caste. As a result information regarding the origin of a caste is shrouded in obscurity. It is not definitely known how the various castes and sub-castes have originated. Whatever information could be secured from available books has already been utilised while giving a short account of some of the important Jaina castes.¹ With a view to find out whether additional information can be procured, the question number 21 was asked and from the replies it will be observed that a majority of persons do not know anything at all about the origin of their castes. Some maintain that the Jaina

1. Vide Chapter III.

castes might have been formed in pure imitation of the Hindu castes, while others state that the Jaina castes might have arisen due to internal quarrels and differences in customs and manners prevailing in different parts of the country. This seems to be correct because like Hindus the Jainas have come to possess a large number of castes and many of them are named after the names of places. No new information is available from the replies about the origin of big castes like Osavāla, Śrīmāla, Pora-vāda, Agravāla and Khaṇḍelavāla. However, a new interpretation is given regarding the origin of the Saitavāla caste. It has been mentioned that the Jainas who resided in Saurāshṭra, i. e., Kathiawar, were called Saurāshṭravālas who later came to be known as Sorathavāla and Saitavāla. This does not seem to be plausible because in the first place the Saitavālas appear to be the native residents of the Marāthī speaking Districts of the Bombay Province, the Central Provinces and Berar and the Hyderabad State, and secondly if at all they would have come from outside, they might have come from the North and especially from Rajaputana as still we occasionally find them keeping marital relations with the Jainas of Rājasthāna. Further, as regards the origin of some small castes we get the following information. It has been mentioned that the Bhāvasāra (Bāvanagāma) caste has been formed out of the persons outcasted by Osavāla and other Kshatriya castes. The Dhākāda Jainas are said to have come from the Dhāka-gāḍa State in Central India. About the Buḍhelā sub-caste it has been stated that the Buḍhelā sub-caste originated from Yadu Vāṁśa. The progeny of Jarat-kumāra lost the kingdom of Kaliṅga and came to Laṁba-Kāñchana Deśa in the South where they adopted Vastrājivikā, that is, maintenance by trade, etc. Thence they migrated to Central India and Rajaputana and came to be known as Laṁba-Kāñchuka or Lamechū. Buḍhelās, who were a class or sub-gotra of Lamechūs, effected social reform and formed a separate group with some members of other gotras.

21. JAINAS IN ASCETIC STAGE

The Jaina community in the ancient past was composed of

four parts, namely, Sādhus (i.e. male ascetics), Sādhvis (i.e. female ascetics), Śrāvakas (i.e. male laity), and Śrāvikās (i.e. female laity). Thus the ascetics and ordinary people formed two important divisions of the community and there has always been a close connection between these two divisions. The rules of ascetic life according to Jainism are very strict and gradually the number of people in the ascetic order of the community declined. The exact number of such people is not available and therefore to get a rough idea about it the question number 22 was asked. From the replies it appears that there are at present many ascetics, both male and female, in the Jaina community and that the number of ascetics among the Śvetāmbaras is far greater than that among the Digambaras. In the Śvetāmbara sect all the three subsects, namely, Mūrtipūjaka, Sthānakavāsi and Terāpanthī, possess a good number of ascetics. Among the Mūrtipūjaka Śvetāmbara castes it has been reported that among the castes like Visā Śrimālī, Dasā Śrimālī, Visā Osavāla and Dasā Poravāda the number of people in the ascetic order ranges from 500 to 2000 in each caste. The same is said about the Dasā Śrimālī and Visā Osavāla castes from the Sthānakavāsi sub-sect. In the Terāpanthī sub-sect it is stated that there are nearly 600 male and female ascetics. On the contrary among the Digambara castes only the Chaturtha and Pañchama castes claim, even according to their estimate, to have the number of ascetics up to one hundred. It has been mentioned that a few castes like Khapdelavāla, Paravāra, Hummaḍa, Saitavāla, Bogāra, Vaiśya and Kshatriya have at least 50 ascetics, while the other castes like Jaisavāla, Narasiṅgapurā, Kathanerā, Golāpūrva, Bannore, Dhākaḍa, Nevi, Bagheravāla and Budhelā hardly possess any ascetic at all. Further, it will be observed that among the Śvetāmbara ascetics the proportion of females seems to be greater than that of males. Thus it is reported that in the Sthānakavāsi Dasā Śrimālī caste there are 400 male ascetics and 1500 female ascetics. It must be remembered that the ascetics do not belong to one caste alone. A member of any caste can become an ascetic and the ascetics of a particular sub-sect are respected equally by all castes of that sub-sect.

22. RELIGIOUS DISABILITIES

The imposition of religious disabilities is one of the main characteristics of the Hindu caste system. By this restriction certain caste people are debarred from performing some religious rites, like worshipping the God from the innermost part of the temple or performing a ritual according to Vedic rites, etc. With a view to find out the position about this in the Jaina community at present the question number 23 was asked and from the replies it will be noted that no religious disabilities have been imposed on the castes as such. It is true that a particular type of people from some castes only are not given freedom to observe certain religious rites, but this does not mean that these castes, to which such people belong, are penalised as a whole. It appears that the religious disabilities of any kind are not found among the Śvetāmbara castes at all and among the Digambara castes they are traceable in some few castes. Among the Digambara castes of Northern India like Khaṇḍelavāla, Paravāra, Golāpurva, etc. the outcasted people known as Dasā (or Dassā) or Lohadasājana or Laharisena are prohibited from performing *Pūjā* or worship in the temples and giving meals to ascetics. Such people are allowed to be contented with only *Darśana*, that is, seeing the idol. Among the Digambara castes in the Deccan like the Saitavāla, Chaturtha and Bogāra only the remarried widows and their husbands are forbidden from giving meals to the ascetics. No other restrictions are put on such people. Some time back a few ascetics were reluctant to take meals from the Saitavālas but at present this is not observed at all by any ascetic.

23. WIDOW REMARRIAGE

The status of a caste in a society is broadly determined on the question whether the practice of widow remarriage is prevalent in that caste or not. Among the Hindus the castes which allow and practise widow remarriage are put on the lower rungs of the ladder of their hierarchical organisation of castes. It has been already noted that even though the Jainas do not arrange their castes in the hierarchical order of respectability, yet many of them look down upon the castes which follow the practice of

widow remarriage. With a view to know whether there are any Jaina castes which allow and practise widow remarriage the question number 24 was asked and from the replies it will be observed that the custom is in vogue in a few castes from the main sects and sub-sects of Jainas. Thus the Levā Pātidāra and Mesari Bhāvāsāra castes of Śvetāmbara Jainas, Bhāvāsāra Bāvanagāma and Visā Osavāla (from Punjab) castes of Sthānakavāsi Jainas and the Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra and Kshatriya castes of Digambara Jainas openly allow their members to practise widow remarriage. But the extent to which it is actually availed of differs from caste to caste. Among the Śvetāmbaras, it is reported that, the Levā Pātidāras practise it very freely while the Mesari Bhāvāsāras observe it not so freely. The Bāvanagāma Bhāvāsāras, irrespective of the fact whether they are Jainas or Hindus, not only regularly follow the custom of widow remarriage but also grant divorce. For the Sthānakavāsi Visā Osavālas from Punjab there is neither a ban on, nor a condemnation of, the observance of widow remarriage. So far as the Digambaras are concerned it appears that the proportion of widow remarriage is more among the Saitavālas than what it is among the Chaturthas, Pañchamas, Bogāras, and Kshatriyas. Though these Digambara castes tolerate widow remarriage, yet the persons who practise it are more or less looked down upon. In this connection it is interesting to note that the Śvetāmbara and Sthānakavāsi castes which allow widow remarriage are definitely not as populous as the Digambara castes of that category and that such Digambara castes invariably pertain to the Deccan and South India. It is not known how among the Digambaras the majority of castes from the Deccan and South India came to adopt the policy of widow remarriage while even a single Digambara caste from the North did not allow it at all.

Further, it may be observed that among the Jainas of all sects prejudice against the practice of widow remarriage is slowly on the decline. The tendency is more noticeable among the Śvetāmbaras and Sthānakavāsis. In their practically all important castes like Visā Śrimālī, Dasā Śrimālī, Visā Poravāda, Visā Osavāla, and Dasā Osavāla even though some instances of widow remarriage

have since recently occurred, still it is reported that no action is taken against the defaulters. On the contrary it is stated that such remarriages, especially among the Sthānakavāśis, are not looked down upon and specific efforts are being made to arrange and popularise such marriages through the establishment of the Jaina Widow Remarriage Association. Similarly in the Paravāra caste of Digambara Jainas the persons who have married the widows and have been outcasted for the purpose have formed a separate sub-caste of their own known as Laharisena and it is stated that as the Laharisenas are gaining in strength and prestige, prejudice against them is diminishing day by day.

24. POLYGYNY

The question number 25 is concerned with the practice of polygyny in the Jaina community. From the replies it will be seen that the custom of having more than one wife was approved by practically all castes and was practised in the past to a great extent by many people, especially those who were rich. But at present even though polygyny is allowed, yet it is hardly practised. When it is practised, it is generally done so for a specific purpose. A man is allowed to have a second wife only in certain defined conditions. Thus in the Sthānakavāśi Dasā Śrīmālī caste a second wife is allowed, if there is no male issue from the first wife, after ten years of marriage. In the Śvetāmbara Visā Poravāda caste a second wife is allowed after twelve years of marriage provided that there is no issue at all from the first wife. Among the Jaina and Hindu members of Bāvanagāma Bhāvashāras a person can have, with the consent of the caste, more than one wife provided he has no male issue from his previous wives. With the general awakening in the community the custom of having many wives is fast disappearing and in many parts of the country it is strictly prohibited by state regulation. For example, in the Bombay Province the Prevention of Hindu Bigamous Marriage Act has been applied to the Jainas also.

25. NUMBER OF CRIMINALS

It has already been remarked that the proper observance of

rules prescribed by Jaina Ethics moulds the personality and character of a person in such a way that usually he becomes free from criminal tendencies.¹ That is why we find ordinarily that a very small proportion of Jainas, as compared with the other communities, figures in criminal cases. With a view to ascertain whether this position is maintained by the Jainas upto now the question number 26 was asked and from the replies it will be observed that the habitual criminals are not found among the Jainas at all. It is true that ordinary criminals are there in many Jaina castes. But it is stated that every caste, whether Jaina or Hindu, has got some ordinary criminals and that they are less among the Jainas than among the Hindus. No doubt it is reported that we come across Jainas who are found guilty of grave criminal offences like forgery and murder but it is pointed out that such cases are very rare and the guilty persons are not habitual criminals.

26. CASTES AND SOCIAL REFORM

The Jaina community has been divided into an unusually large number of castes and sub-castes and these divisions serve as separate groups for various social relations. Since these groups are strictly endogamous they hardly come into intimate contact with one another. Further, these groups belong to various sects and sub-sects of Jainism and hence even for religious purposes they do not come together. It is a fact that the caste *Pañchāyatas* try to maintain their castes as separate entities by several means. In these circumstances the burden of eradicating anti-social customs from the society mainly falls on the caste *Pañchāyatas* and with a view to know whether this work is undertaken by the *Pañchāyatas* or not the question number 27 was asked. From the replies it will be noted that the number of caste *Pañchāyatas* who have not done anything in the matter appears to be far more than that of caste *Pañchāyatas* who have tried something in this connection. Only the *Visā Hummaḍā*, *Mevāḍā*, *Narasiṅgapurā*, *Budhelā*, *Golāpūrva*, *Jaisavāla*, *Paravāra* and *Agravāla* castes of

1. Vide page 229 ante.

Digambaras, and the Dasā Śrimālī and Mesari Bhāvasāra castes of Śvetāmbaras have made some attempts in this regard and it is reported that the efforts of the big castes like Paravāra and Agravāla were not successful. This means that broadly the *Pāñchāyatas* of small castes alone are active in this field. The names of castes of all sects which did not strive in this direction are as follows:

Viśā Śrimālī, Osavāla, Poravāda, Nemā, Levā Pāṭidāra, Khaḍdelavāla, Dasā Hummaḍa, Kaṭhanerā, Dhakaḍa, Nevi, Bannore, Bagheravāla, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama and Bogāra. Among the anti-social practices the most glaring one was that of child marriage and it is mentioned that in this regard only two castes, namely, Viśā Hummaḍa Mevāḍa and Sthānakavāsi Dasā Śrimālī, were successful. The other important anti-social custom of dowry still holds the ground in many castes and it is stated that it has recently entered into the Paravāra caste. Incidentally it may be noted that the Viśā and Dasā Śrimālī, Dasā Poravāda, Viśā Nemā and Mesari Bhāvasāra castes of Śvetāmbaras and the castes of Digambara Jainas in South India do not possess the system of giving dowry to the bridegroom. It has been mentioned that the work of social reform including the present one of removing the anti-social customs from the castes is being carried out with some success by the Jaina Associations of a provincial or all India nature like All India Śvetāmbara Jaina Conference, All India Sthānakavāsi Jaina Conference, Mahārāshtriya Jaina Sabhā, Dakshipā Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabhā and Mysore Jaina Association.

27. CASTES AND TEMPLES

The ancient Jaina community, being religious and comparatively wealthy, had, during the last so many centuries, constructed a large number of temples throughout the whole of India and the process of constructing new temples is being followed even to this day. The religious-minded, rich and philanthropic Jainas usually direct their donations to the construction and maintenance of temples or *Upāśrayas*. Naturally property of some kind is attached to these temples and ordinarily it is more than what is

required for its maintenance. Most of the temples are owned by various castes and sub-castes and are managed by their *Pāñchāyat*as. No doubt there are some temples which are owned and managed individually by wealthy persons. At certain places temples are not owned by castes but are a common property of the local Jaina residents irrespective of their castes and such temples are managed through the Trustees appointed locally. But the number of such temples is very small. For various social purposes money is required and property is found attached to the temples. That is why to ascertain the number of temples owned by various caste *Pāñchāyatas* and to know whether the property attached to them is utilised for social purposes, the question number 28 was asked. From the replies it may be observed that though the approximate number of temples cannot be gathered still it can be said that the castes possess an unusually large number of temples as compared with their population. The Kathānerā caste, the approximate population of which is estimated as only 300, possesses twelve temples. Further, the property attached to these temples varies widely from caste to caste. So far as the Digambaras are concerned it can be said in general that the temples belonging to many castes like Pallivāla, Narasinghapurā, Dhākāda, Nevi, Bannore, Kathānerā, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra, Vaisya, Kshatriya have practically no property as compared with the property attached to the temples owned by castes like Hummāda, Paravāra, Khapdelavāla and Agravāla. The same might be the situation in the Śvetāmbara castes. Whether the property attached to a temple is meagre or big, it is a fact that it cannot be used for social purposes. The temple property is known as *Devadravya* and it is meant only for the upkeep, betterment and establishment of temples. Hence the property attached to any Jaina temple is at present not utilised for social purposes.

28. THE FAMILY DEITY

The questions from numbers 29 to 33 are concerned with the family. Question number 29 relates to the names of family

deities. Theoretically the Jainas, unlike Hindus, do not possess the system of having a presiding deity for each family and worshipping it with the ulterior motive of avoiding evil influences and securing constant favours. This is so because the Jainas do not believe in the principle that the outside divine agency can help an individual in achieving his salvation, which is his ultimate aim in life. It has already been noted that the important theory of Karma in Jaina philosophy completely denies the existence of divine dispensation and lays full stress on individual action.¹ Even though the acceptance of a family deity is an irreligious practice according to Jainism still many Jainas have adopted it possibly through Hindus with whom they are associated for the last so many centuries. Not only the system of family deity has entered among the Jainas but also the Hindu gods and goddesses are considered by them as their family deities. At the same time it must be remembered that the orthodox Jainas never worship Hindu gods and goddesses as it is against the spirit of Jainism. Hence with a view to ascertain the present state of affairs in this regard the question number 29 was asked and from the replies it will be seen that nearly 25% of the persons who have sent their replies specifically declare that they have no system of family deity at all and such persons belong to all the main sects of Jainism. Among those who observe the system of family deity it may be noted that they have adopted both the Jaina and Hindu gods as their family deities. It can be stated that the practice of family deity appears to be more widespread among the Śvetāmbaras and Sthānakavāśis than among the Digambaras and that in their family deities the proportion of Hindu gods and goddesses appears to be preponderantly more among the Śvetāmbaras and Sthānakavāśis than among the Digambaras. The Jaina deities, which are commonly adopted as family deities by Jainas of all sects, are Ādinātha, Chandranātha, Vimalanātha, Śāntinātha, Pārvanātha, and Mahāvīra; and the Jaina deities like Bahubali, Padmavatī and Kshetrapāla, seem to be prevalent only among the Digambaras. The Hindu gods and goddesses who are regarded as family deities by the Jainas of different sects are as follows:—

1. Vide page 206 ante.

<i>Dīgambara Jainas:</i>	Bhairava, Khaṇḍobā, Brahmadeva and Kālikā Devī.
<i>Svetāmbara Jainas:</i>	Mahālakshmi, Chakresvari, Būtamātā, Aṁbikāmātā, Bherai Devī, Gotrijā, Chaṇḍikā and Nānamā.
<i>Sthānakavāsi Jainas:</i>	Surya, Ramapa Devī, Būtamātā, Diddhimātā, Bhañivalamātā, Kālikā Devī, Osiyāmātā and Bhavānimātā.

This shows that only a few deities like Kālikā Devī, Būtamātā and Aṁbikāmātā are common in more than one sect while the many remaining deities appear to be peculiar to one sect or the other.

29. MIGRATION OF FAMILIES

The Jainas being mainly a commercial community are scattered over the whole of India and as a consequence the Jaina families of different castes are situated at one place. With a view to understand the nature of migration of the Jaina families the question number 30 was asked and from the replies it will be seen that many Jaina families had migrated over long distances. It has already been noted that certain Jaina castes have been concentrated in particular localities only and therefore members of these castes found elsewhere must have migrated from their original places. Thus in Mahārāshtra only Saitavāla Jaina families seem to be the original residents and the remaining Jaina families seem to have settled in Mahārāshtra have migrated from other places or provinces. The Śrimālis, Poravādas and Hummaḍas have come from Gujarātha, the Osavālas from Marwar, the Agravālas and Khaṇdelavālas from the United Provinces, the Paravāras and Bagheravālas from the Central Provinces, the Chaturthas, Pañchamas and Bogāras from Karnāṭaka and the Upādhyāyas from Mysore and South India. Further, in this migration the Osavāla, Śrimāla and Poravāda Jaina families have taken a pre-eminently leading part and they are found in all important commercial centres throughout India and even in foreign countries. The significant feature about their migration is that even though they settle for generations in different parts of India, they still maintain their connections with

their native places. Generally they possess some property at their native places and mostly keep marital relations with the castemen of their native places. Many a time it is customary for them to celebrate their marriages at their native places even though they might be residing in different parts of India. Thus it is reported by the Cutchi Visā Osavālas in Bombay City that as their occupation of agriculture could not support large families, they had to migrate to Bombay City. But even now they have their relatives and property in Cutch to which they pay visits very often. The native place of many of the Sthānakavāsi Osavāla families residing in Poona City is reported as Jodhpur and it seems that they have not entirely severed their connections with Jodhpur.

30. DISTINGUISHED PERSONALITIES IN FAMILIES

The Jaina community is one of the ancient communities in India having a glorious past. Jainas, in their capacity as rulers and administrators of various states in different parts of India, proved their mettle and consequently enjoyed an influential position. In this work a large number of Jaina families must have contributed their quota in one form or another; but the information of their contributions is not available. With a view to know the account of some distinguished personalities, if any, from each family, the question number 31 was asked and from the replies it will be observed that a large majority of them do not state any information at all. It is most probably due to the fact that the persons do not know much of their family history. It has been specifically stated by few persons that they have not maintained family records and this might be the case with the rest. Naturally in the absence of family records it is not possible to get an idea of the role played by prominent Jainas in various spheres of activities. Nevertheless, from whatever little information is available it will be seen that there were and are at present persons of eminence in some Jaina families. They are mainly industrial and business magnates, Ministers or Diwans and High Court Judges of States and Provinces, Presidents of Local Self-Government Bodies like Corporations, Municipalities,

District Local Boards, etc. There are instances of Jaina persons who have showed proficiency on the battle fields. It has been reported that Mr. Dayāla Simha, the Prime Minister and Commander of Rāja-Simhajī, the Mahārāja of Mevāda, fought against the forces of Emperor Aurangazeb. Similarly, it has been mentioned that Mr. Kumāra Hegade of South Kanara District fought against Tippu Sultan. Again, from the replies it appears that certain families have continuously produced distinguished personalities. The most prominent among these are the Seth family of Ahmedabad and Doshi and Gandhi families of Sholapur. The Seth family is the Nagaraseth family of Ahmedabad at present. It has been reported that Seth Shantidas, one of their ancestors, was the Jeweller to the Mughal Emperor Akbar and received from the Emperor grants of several Jaina Tirthas or Places of Pilgrimage like Sammeda Śikhara, Pāliṭāpā, etc. Due to this act his name is well-known among the Śvetāmbara Jainas. Another person from that family, Seth Khushalachand, saved the city of Ahmedabad from the Marāthā raids and in recognition of his services the Ahmedabad public gave him the right to collect Octroi duties on all articles coming to the Ahmedabad City from outside. The title of Nagaraseth was conferred upon him which is enjoyed at present by the head of the family. The said right of collecting Octroi duties was transferred to the Ahmedabad Municipality about hundred years ago in consideration of a capital sum of Rs. 2500/- per annum which is still paid by the Municipality and the said sum is still divided among the various members of the Nagaraseth's family. Another person, Rao Bahadur Seth Premabhai Himabhai established the well-known institution of Seth Anandji Kallionji for managing the affairs of several Jaina Tirthas. The institution is still existing and commands great respect among Martipūjaka Śvetāmbara Jainas. Seth Kasturbhai Lalabhai is the present president of Seth Anandji Kallianji. He is one of the biggest business magnates of Ahmedabad and is wellknown all over India. Similarly, the Doshi family of Sholapur had given eminent persons like Hirachand Nemachand Doshi and Ravaji Sakharama Doshi, who were most respected for their social and philanthropic activites. The eldest

member of the family at present is Mr. Walchand Hirachand Doshi who is one of the front rank industrialists of India and is well known all over India. Like Seth family, Gandhi family is the Nagaraseth family of Sholapur City. Their firm known as Haribhai Devakarana was for a long time the leading business firm in Mahārāshtra from the days of Peshwas and their present head of the family, Mr. Jivaraj Walchand Gandhi, is traditionally known as Nagarseth of Sholapur.¹

31. FAMILY ORGANISATION

The joint family system was the prevalent form of family organisation in ancient and medieval India. But since the last few decades the joint family system is disintegrating and giving place to the separate family system. With a view to know whether this change has taken place in the Jaina community or not the question number 32 was asked. Out of 154 persons who have replied to the questionnaire, 81 are having separate family system and 73 are following joint family system. The number of persons per joint family varies from 3 to 69 and it seems, from available figures, that the average number of persons per joint family is more in South India than in other parts. The joint family is necessarily joint in property but not in residence. Out of the 73 joint families, there are only 32 whose members stay together. In such families, it is reported that there are, in some cases, as many as 25, 34, 40, 60 and 69 members living under one roof. There are also joint families the members of which do not reside at one place but are spread usually at two or four places. In general it can be stated that the members of joint families from Gujarātha are spread at different distant places. Thus the members of a joint family from Gujarātha are found at places like Bombay, Karachi, Kanpur and Rajkot; Patan and Rangoon; Okha, Dhoraji, Jamnagar and Mithapur; Dhangdhra, Jafarabad and Poona; and Bombay, Baroda and Kolhapur. In other provinces the members of a joint family are ordinarily found at near places like Jaipur and Agra; Yavatamal and Amraoti; Satara and

1. Vide Jain Bodhaka, dated the 4-9-1949.

Sangli; Sholapur and Bombay; Gadag and Belgaum; and Dharwar and Bailhongal. This is due to the fact that the Jainas from Gujarātha are adventurous so far as commercial activities are concerned and hence the members of one joint family reside at different places for commercial purposes. On the contrary it will be seen from the replies that the members of not even a single joint family from South India live at two places. Further, the Jaina joint family is not invariably joint in worship. When the parties to the marital union belong to the same sect or sub-sect, the family is necessarily joint in worship and the number of such families is greater. But there are cases where the religious affiliations of parties to the marital union are different. Especially among Osavālas, Śrīmālis and Poravādas we come across a Śvetāmbara Sthānakavāsi wife and a Vaishnavite or Śaivite or a Śvetāmbara Terāpanthi or a Śvetāmbara Mūrtipūjaka husband. In such cases it is reported that any one may follow the faith which appeals to him or her most, or which is desired by the husband. In these circumstances the family cannot remain joint in worship. But we have already noted that there is a growing tendency nowadays to observe religious endogamy and hence the feature of jointness in worship will in future appear in all joint families.

32. INTER-MARRIAGES

The rules of endogamy are very strict in Jaina community and they must be pressing very hard on the Jainas because the Jainas are scattered all over India and are divided and sub-divided into sects, sub-sects, castes and sub-castes. These rules perpetuate and increase the differences between the divisions and create segments in the society. One of the main ways of bringing the various segments close together is the practice of inter-marriage between them. With a view to know whether this practice is observed by some Jaina families at least—as the castes do not allow it—the question number 33 was asked. From the replies it will be noted that there are only 40 families whose members have contracted such marriages. The geographical distribution of these families is as follows—12 from Gujarātha, 7 from Bombay City, 5 from North India, 9 from Central India, 4 from Mahārāshtra and Karnātaka, and 3 from South India. This shows that

though the tendency of inter-marriage is noticeable in all parts of India, yet it is more evident in the parts of India other than Mahārāshtra, Karnātaka and South India. Regarding these inter-marriages it may be noted that inter-caste and inter-sub-caste marriages come first, then the inter-provincial marriages and lastly the inter-sect and inter-religious marriages. Further, if we correlate the families wherein such marriages have taken place with their main sects, it will be seen that both the main sects, the Digambara and Śvetāmbara, claim an equal number, that is 20, of the families on their side. It means that the tendency of inter-marriages is observed, though in a small measure, in both the sects and in varying degrees in all different parts of India.

33. JAINA FESTIVALS

The questions from number 34 onwards are concerned with miscellaneous customs and manners and personal views on certain matters. It has already been noted that the Jainas possess a large number of festivals of their own which are observed mainly as religious ceremonies.¹ Along with the observance of their own festivals, many Jainas celebrate some of the Hindu festivals also. With a view to know the present position in this regard the question number 34 was asked and from the replies it will be noted that the Jainas observe most of the Jaina festivals and participate in some of the main Hindu festivals. There are, however, nearly 25% of the Jaina persons who specifically stated that they do not observe any Hindu festival at all. The names of Jaina festivals mentioned in the replies are as follows:—Paryūshana, Śrutapañchami, Divalī or Dipāvalī, Akshayya Tṛtiyā, Mahāvīra-Jayanti seem to be more popular with the Jainas. The following Hindu festivals are mentioned in the replies:—Holi, Dipāvalī or Divalī, Pāḍavā or Varshapratipadā, Dasarā, Gapeśa-Chaturthī, Rakshā-bandhana, Makara Saṅkrānta, Śitalāsaptami, Durgā-shtami, Poṅgala, Kathikai, Yugādi, Gauri and Navarātri. Of these Hindu festivals only Dasarā, Dipāvalī and Holi are seen to be common with Jainas in different parts of India, whereas there are many Hindu festivals which appear to be celebrated by Jainas of

1. See Chapter V, Section (10).

some particular parts of the country only. Thus the Jainas in Gujerātha alone are said to follow Hindu festivals like Śītalā-saptami, Durgāśtāmi, and the Jainas of South India celebrate Hindu festivals like Poṅgala, Kathikai, Yugādi, Gaurī and Navarātri. This shows that Jainas have adopted customs which are most prevalent in particular parts of the country in which they reside. If we compare the names of Jaina and Hindu festivals given above, it will be seen that the two festivals, namely Dipāvali and Rakshā-bandhana, are common to both Jainas and Hindus. But it must be remembered that both the Dipāvali and Rakshābandhana are celebrated for different reasons by the Jainas and Hindus. Regarding the observance of Hindu festivals it has been specifically mentioned by many persons in their replies that it is customary for them to take part in some of the Hindu festivals only because they have to live in the midst of Hindus and moreover wherever they participate in any Hindu festival they do so without any religious motive whatsoever. Thus, it is reported that in North India among Hindu festivals local Jainas observe Holi to some extent. The Jainas do not go to worship it; but participate in group-meeting in which all embrace each other and offer Pāṇasupāri. The same is the case with other parts of India. No Hindu festival is observed with a religious rite. In fact the Jainas take part in a few Hindu festivals only and that too because of convention and long contact. It is stated by some Jaina persons that they do not observe a Hindu festival as such but on that day they eat some sweet things due to custom. Further, the practice of observing some Hindu festivals is confined to a few particular Jaina families only. Thus it is made clear in the replies by those who observe Hindu festivals of Śītalāsaptami and Durgāśtāmi that they do so because that custom is prevalent in their family only. It can therefore be said in general that some Jainas take part in a few Hindu festivals as social functions and not as Hindu festivals as such in their religious sense.

34. JAINA RITES

Jainism lays utmost stress on personal conduct. Every true Jaina is expected to strive to achieve the ultimate goal of life by

observing the ethical code prescribed for him. That code contains the rites which a Jaina should perform every day.¹ These rites are devised in such a manner that they try to maintain the interest of householders in religious practices. With a view to know whether the Jainas observe any rites or not the question number 35 was asked and from the replies it will be noted that with the exception of 25 persons the rest perform some rites at least. There are a few persons who are said to observe the six daily duties of a layman, namely, *Deva-pūjā* (i. e. worship of the God), *Gurupāsti* (i.e. worship of the preceptor), *Svādhyāya* (i.e. study of scriptures), *Samyama* (i. e. practice of self-control), *Tapa* (i.e. practice of austerities) and *Dāna* (i. e. giving of gifts). There are some who maintain that they observe *Ashtamūlaguṇa*, i.e., eight fundamental virtues of a householder. These virtues are the observances of the five *anuvratas*, namely, *Ahimsā* (i. e. to avoid injury), *Satya* (i.e. truthfulness), *Asteaya* (i. e. to be free from theft), *Brahmacharya* (i. e. chastity) and *Aparigraha* (i.e. to be free from worldly attachment), and refraining from the use of wine, flesh and honey. The other rites which are mentioned in the replies are *Darśana* (i.e. seeing and saluting the God in a temple or in one's house), *Sāmāyika* (i.e. meditation), *Pratikramanya* (i.e. repentance of all transgressions), *Pratyākhyāna* (i.e. taking of a vow from a teacher regarding the imposition of some kind of restriction for a day), *Prārthanā* (i.e. prayer), *Rasaparityāga* (i.e. abstinence from eating a particular kind of food on certain specific days, especially, on the 5th, 8th and 14th days of the bright and dark halves of a month)², *Jalagālana* (i.e. using filtered water), *Rātribhojanatyāga* (i.e. abstinence from eating after sunset), *Japa* (i.e. counting the beads after the chanting of the Namokāra Mantra) and *Sandhyāvandanā* (i. e. offering ceremonial prayers twice a day). It is interesting to note that the last rite, namely, *Sandhyāvandanā* is

1. Vide page 221 ante.

2. This is according to the Śvetāmbaras. The Digambaras, however, observe only the 8th and 14th days of bright and dark halves of a month.

mentioned only by the Jainas from South India. Apart from the observance of *Aṣṭamūlagunas*, which in fact includes *Jalagālana* and *Rātribhojanatyāga*, the most common rites seem to be *Deyadarśana*, *Devapūjā*, *Sāmāyika* and *Svādhyāya*.

35. JAINA SAMSKĀRAS

The Jaina Āchāryas or law givers have prescribed a number of ceremonies through which a layman should pass during his lifetime so that he can lead his life according to religious injunctions. These ceremonies which are supposed to have been approved by the religion are known as *Saṃskāras* or Sacraments. Every Jaina is required to go through them at proper age and time. While describing the Jaina *Saṃskāras* it has already been noted that the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras have their own *Saṃskāras*.¹ With a view to ascertain how many of these *Saṃskāras* are performed by the Jainas at present, the question number 36 was asked. From the replies it will be seen that many Jainas have not answered this question and some state that they do not perform any *Saṃskāra* at all. This shows that many Jainas are ignorant about the *Saṃskāras* because even though they perform marriage and other ceremonies which come under the category of *Saṃskāras*, they do not seem to know that these ceremonies in fact are the *Saṃskāras* prescribed by their religion. Among those who have answered the question, very few persons only state the specific names of *Saṃskaras* which they perform, while all others mention that they perform all Jaina *Saṃskāras*—Digambara or Śvetāmbara *Saṃskāras*, as the case may be—or only those which are current in the locality. Out of the sixteen Digambara and sixteen Śvetāmbara *Saṃskāras* the names of *Saṃskāras*, which are stated to be usually observed by both the sections in different parts of the country, are as follows—*Nāma-karana*, *Upanayana*, *Vivāha* and *Antya* or *Marana*.

The *Vivāha Saṃskāra* or marriage ceremony is one of the most important *Saṃskāras* performed by the Jainas. Taking into account the significance attached to this *Saṃskāra*, the Jaina

1. See Chapter V, Section (12).

Āchāryas or law givers have prescribed a detailed ceremony for the purpose.¹ With a view to know whether Jainas perform the marriage ceremony according to Jaina ritual—Digambara or Śvetāmbara, as the case may be—or not, the question number 37 was asked. Out of the 154 persons, who have answered the questionnaire, 149 are married, 3 are unmarried and two have not given any information. Of the 149 married persons, 73 are married according to the Hindu ritual while 76 are married in accordance with the Jaina ritual. It means that nearly 50% of the Jaina married persons have gone through the Hindu ritual at the time of their marriage ceremonies. It is not only that the Hindu marriage ritual is not foreign to Jainas but no discrimination is made between the Jaina and Hindu ritual. Thus it has been stated by one person that while his first marriage was performed according to the Jaina ritual, the second was performed in accordance with the Hindu ritual. But it must be remembered that the persons who have sent their replies are mostly aged persons and their marriages, it seems, were performed more than fifteen years ago. Therefore their replies reflect the conditions existing at that time. But recently the conditions have changed and it has been specifically mentioned that now the Jaina ritual is much more generally observed than the Hindu ritual. The main reason for abandoning the Hindu ritual and accepting, in its place, the Jaina ritual can be ascribed to the fact that during recent years there has been a general awakening in the Jaina community as a result of which there is a marked tendency to observe Jaina ritual wherever it is available. That is why we find some persons clearly stating that when they were married nearly thirty years ago there was nothing like Jaina ritual in the sense that the people were ignorant about the existence and practice of Jaina ritual at the time of their marriages.

Further, if we take into account the main sect of these married persons, it will be noted that the custom of performing marriage ceremony according to the Hindu ritual appears to be preponderantly more prevalent among the Śvetāmbaras than among the Digambaras. Thus out of the 73 persons who are

1. See page 165 ante.

married according to the Hindu ritual, as many as 62 belong to the Śvetāmbara sect and only 11 to the Digāmbara sect. Similarly, the number of Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras among the 76 persons, who are married in accordance with the Jaina ritual, is 69 and 7 respectively. In other words, out of the 80 Digambaras, 11 are married according to the Hindu ritual and 69 according to the Jaina ritual; and out of the 69 Śvetāmbaras, 62 are married in accordance with the Hindu ritual while 7 are married in accordance with the Jaina ritual. This marked tendency of Śvetāmbara Jainas to observe the Hindu ritual at the time of marriage ceremony and of Digambaras to observe the Jaina ritual for the same purpose is, it is interesting to note, found in different parts of India. From the replies it will be seen that among the Śvetāmbaras residing in South India, Mahārāshṭra, Karnātaka and Northern India, all are reported to have married according to the Hindu ritual and among the 16 and 27 Śvetāmbaras residing in the Bombay City and Gujarātha respectively, as many as 13 from Bombay City and 25 from Gujarātha are married according to the Hindu ritual. Similarly, among the Digambaras, all 13 from South India, 23 out of 25 from Mahārāshṭra and Karnātaka, 16 out of 17 from Central India, 9 out of 10 from Northern India, 3 out of 5 from Bombay City, and 5 out of 10 from Gujarātha are married according to the Jaina ritual. This obvious adherence of Śvetāmbaras to the Hindu ritual and of the Digambaras to the Jaina ritual all over India seems probably due to the fact that the proportion of keeping marital relations with the Hindus appears to be undoubtedly more among Śvetāmbaras than what it is among Digambaras because, as it has been already noted, many important Śvetāmbara castes, as compared with the Digambara castes, have their counterparts among the Hindus and marital relations were maintained formerly among the Jaina Śvetāmbara and Hindu members of a caste.¹

36. JAINA LANGUAGE

The minority communities in India like Muslim, Sikh, Parsee, Jew and others either individually have a separate language of

1. See pages 321-22 ante.

their own or a majority of members of each community can speak a common language. With a view to know whether the Jaina community, an ancient minority community in India, has got a language of its own which is used by a majority of its members even now, the question number 38 was asked and from the replies it will be seen that the Jaina community cannot claim any language as its own. The medium of expression of Jainas is the language of the locality where they reside and as the Jainas are spread all over India for the last so many centuries, they are found speaking the language of the province concerned. Thus the language of the Jainas in North India is Hindi, in Gujarātha it is Gujarāthī, in Mahārāshṭra it is Marāthī, in Karnātaka it is Kannāda, and in South India it is either Tuḷu, Telugu or Tāmīla. Further, the Jainas being mainly a commercial community know the languages of adjacent provinces in addition to the language of the province in which they reside. Thus the Jainas from Gujarātha know Gujarāthī and Hindi or Marāthī, from North India Hindi and Urdū, from Central Provinces Hindi and Gujarāthī or Marāthī, from Karnātaka Kannāda and Marāthī or Tāmīla, and from Mahārāshṭra Marāthī and Gujarāthī or Kannāda. From this it appears that the Jainas residing in North India, Gujarātha and Central Provinces know Hindi and a majority of Jainas is concentrated in these parts. It will be noted from the replies that many Jainas from Mahārāshṭra, Karnātaka and South India have stated that they know Hindi also. This means that, if constant efforts are made, Hindi can become a common language of the Jaina community. Moreover, most of the persons who have sent their replies are educated on modern lines and hence they know English also. Some of these persons are research scholars and naturally they, according to their own statements, can read, write and speak in six or seven languages out of the languages mentioned below:—English, Hindi, Gujarāthī, Marāthī, Kannāda, Baṅgālī, Puñjābī, Urdū, Tuḷu, Tāmīla, Sanskrit, Ardhamāgadī, Pāli, Persian, French and German.

37. SACRED THREAD

It has already been noted that the custom of wearing a sacred

thread is not prevalent among all Jainas in different parts of India and that wherever it is prevalent, there is a great diversity in the practice of wearing it.¹ With a view to ascertain the present position in the matter the question number 39 was asked. From the replies it will be observed that the custom appears to be prevalent only among the Digambara Jainas. Not even a single Śvetāmbara Jaina is said to be observing this custom. Further, the custom is no doubt peculiar to Digambara Jainas but even among the Digambara Jainas it is widely observed in certain parts of the country only—especially in Mahārāshtra, Karnātaka and South India. All the important native Digambara Jaina castes of these parts, namely, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra, Upādhyāya, Vaiśya and Kshatriya, invariably observe this custom and even many members of the Hummaḍa caste who have settled in these parts are also found observing the custom. The fact that the custom of wearing sacred thread among the Digambara Jainas is most prevalent in South India, Karnātaka and Mahārāshtra than in other parts of India will be evident from the number of Digambara Jainas observing the custom out of the total number of Digambara Jainas who have sent their replies. Thus 12 persons out of 12 Digambara Jainas, who have forwarded their replies, from South India, 21 out of 27 from Mahārāshtra and Karnātaka, 9 out of 18 from Central India, 5 out of 11 from North India, and 2 out of 11 from Gujarātha are reported to be observing the custom. In Central, Northern and Western India the custom of wearing sacred thread does not seem to be confined to members of a particular Digambara Jaina caste. The members of castes like Paravāra, Pallivāla, Agravāla, Khapdelavāla, Hummaḍa, Bannore, Dhākāda and Bagheravāla are reported to be following the custom. But the custom does not appear to be widespread in these castes as it is in the castes of South India, Karnātaka and Mahārāshtra, mentioned above. As regards the significance of this custom there is no uniform opinion about it. The majority of Digambara Jainas considers that there is a definite religious motive in wearing a sacred thread. They regard the sacred thread as a symbol of *Ratnatraya*, that is, the three jewels of Jainism,

1. See pages 268-69 ante.

namely, Right Faith, Right Knowledge and Right Conduct, and as a mark of *Śrāvaka*, that is, a Jaina layman. It means that one who wears it has to understand that one has to follow the right path of salvation by observing the six daily duties of a Jaina layman. It is also regarded as '27 *Tattvarūpa*', that is, an embodiment of 27 *Tattvas* which are made of 7 *Tattvas*, 6 *Dravyas*, 9 *Padarthas* and 5 *Astikāyas*. Some consider it as *Dvijātīchinha*, that is, an indication of the twice-born. On the contrary, there are some Digambara Jainas who consider that the wearing of sacred thread has no connection with the Jaina religion at all and a few go to the extent of declaring to the effect that they do not wear sacred thread because the custom is a part of Hindu culture.

38. JAINA PRIESTS

The question number 40 is concerned with the custom of using by the Jainas the services of a Brahmin priest at the time of performance of ceremonies like birth, initiation, marriage, etc. in their homes and at the time of doing daily '*Pūjā*' or worship and '*Abhisheka*' or anointing the idol of God in their temples. From the replies it will be observed that the custom of employing non-Jainas for the above purposes appears to be pre-ponderantly more prevalent among the Śvetāmbaras than among the Digambaras. So far as the performance of ceremonies is concerned the Śvetāmbara, including the Sthānakavāsi, Jainas all over India invariably use the services of a Brahmin priest and in many cases the Brahmin priest is a hereditary family priest. However, the Śvetāmbara Jainas do not seem to approve this custom as many of them have stated that they are compelled to employ Brahmin priests because the Jaina priests are not available. It has been mentioned by some that recently a start has been made to employ Jainas for this purpose. In this regard the Digambara Jainas from South India, Karnāṭaka, Mahārāshtra and Central India clearly stated that they employ Jaina priests only, while those from North India and Gujarātha state that they generally employ Jaina priests and if they are not available, then alone Brahmin priests are called for the purpose. As regards the custom of em-

ploying Brahmins or other Hindus in the Jaina temples for performing duties like *Pūjā* and *Abhisheka*, it can be stated that the custom is found only among the Śvetāmbara Jainas all over India. In no part of India non-Jainas are employed for this purpose in the Digambara Jaina temples. It has been specifically mentioned by the Digambara Jainas from North India that if Jaina priest is not available, the Brahmin is employed for marriage purpose only and in temples only Jainas look after *Pūjā* and *Abhisheka*. The Sthānakavāsi Jainas have no temples and therefore the question of performing *Pūjā* or *Abhisheka* does not arise at all. It is reported by Śvetāmbara Jainas from different parts of India that they do employ Hindu persons in their temples for doing duties like *Pūjā* and *Abhisheka*.

39. JAINA FASTS

Jainism lays great stress on the practice of austerities and the common method of practising austerities is the observance of fast. The important feature of the rules of conduct prescribed by Jaina Ethics consists in the fact that one is expected to observe them after taking into account one's own status and capacity.¹ That is why it is likely that there might be a great diversity in the observance of fast. With a view to know whether fasts are observed by Jainas and if so, how many, the question number 41 was asked and from the replies it will be seen that there are various gradations of persons observing the fast. Out of 154 persons who have sent their replies as many as 65 persons clearly state that they do not observe any fast at all. Among the 82 persons who are observing fast, 54 persons observe one fast in a year, 10 persons two to six fasts in *Paryuṣhanā*, 6 persons two or four fasts per month in *Chāturmāsa* or the four months of rainy season, and 12 persons two or four fasts per month throughout the year. This means that nearly 2/3 of the persons observing fast do so only once in a year and that day is the last day of *Paryuṣhanā*, known as *Saṃvatsari* (which falls on the fifth day of the bright half of the month of *Bhādrapada*) among the Śvetāmbaras and *Anantachaturdaśī* (which falls on the 14th day of the bright half of the

1. See page 232 ante.

month of *Bhādrapada*) among the Digambaras. Either *Sarvavatsari* or *Ananta-chaturdasi* is so commonly observed because it is considered as the most sacred day of the year. The whole *Paryūshana* festival is given more importance than other festivals and hence some perform two or more fasts during this festival. Usually the first day and the last day of the *Paryūshana* are observed as fasts. The four months of rainy season, known as *Chāturmāsa*, are selected for the special observance of religious practices and that is why it is advised that those who cannot perform religious practices for the whole year should at least perform them during *Chāturmāsa*. Hence we find that some persons observe fast only in the months of rainy season. The regular fasts per month are observed on two days (i. e. the two fourteenth days of the bright and dark halves of a month) or on four days (i. e. the two eighth and the two fourteenth days of the bright and dark halves of a month). The fast, according to Jaina rules of conduct, is a full fast which means that even a drop of water is not to be taken in the mouth during that day. As this is very difficult to practise, some of the persons, who perform regular fasts per month, observe *Ekdāvana* (or half-fast), that is, they take food and water only once during the day. Of course the full fast is more valued than the half fast and therefore when fast is performed, generally full fast is observed.¹

40. DEATH CEREMONIES

The birth, marriage and death are the three important events, in one's life and hence elaborate ceremonies are generally prescribed by various religions for the guidance of their followers. The Jainas have no doubt included *Antyakarma* or Death Ceremony in their *Saṃskāras* or Sacraments but, as it has been already noted,² there is a great diversity in their performance of death ceremony. With a view to ascertain the present position regard-

1. It is reported that in Gujarat the fast observed is of two types, viz. *Chovihāra Upavīsa* and *Tisihāra Upavīsa*. In the former even taking of water is not allowed, while in the latter it is permitted to take water only.

2. See page 269 ante.

ding the observance of funeral rites in the Jaina community questions number 42 and number 43 were asked and from the replies it will be noted that the Jainas do not appear to give much importance to the observance of funeral rites. It has been stated that there is nothing particular about the death ceremony and no special rites are observed. In general it can be maintained that the Jaina funeral rites appear to resemble Hindu funeral rites so far as matters like taking the dead body in procession to the cremation ground and cremating the dead are concerned, but like Hindus, Jainas neither perform the *Śrāddha* ceremony nor give *Dāna* or gifts to Brabmins. Apart from the cremation of the dead the Jainas are stated to observe rites like *Sutaka*, *Pūjā* and *Maranabhoja* but in these things the customs differ from province to province. A period of 10 to 13 days from the day of the death of a person is known as *Sutaka* and in this period the near relatives of the deceased are considered to be in the state of ' uncleanness '. It is reported that on the 13th day *Śuddhi* or Purification is performed by shaving, bathing and putting on usual clothes. On that day all Jainas assemble to sympathise, and go to the temple and thence to the house of the deceased. In the observance of *Pūjā* or worship there is a diversity between the Śvetāmbaras and the Digambaras. Among the Śvetāmbaras immediately after the cremation of the dead, *Pūjā* is presented, that is, articles of worship are given in temples. But among the Digambaras the *Pūjā* or worship including *Abhisheka* (or anointing of the idol of God) is not performed on the day of the death but on the 11th or 12th or 15th or 16th or 21st day after the death. *Maranabhoja* or death-dinner is the practice of giving feast to the caste members on the 12th or 13th day after the death and it is observed by many Śvetāmbara and Digambara Jaina castes like Śrimāla, Osavāla, Poravāda, Bhāvāra, Agravāla, Khanḍelavāla, Paravāra, Golāpūrva, Bannore, Hummaḍa, Dhākaḍa, Saitavāla, Chaturtha, Pañchama, Bogāra and Vaiśya. In this connection it has been already noted that the custom of giving death feasts is denounced for religious reasons as a result of which the death feasts are steadily going out of practice.¹ Like *Maranabhoja*, *Pindadāna*, i. e.

1. See page 321 ante.

the custom of offering rice balls to the dead, is not prescribed by Jaina religion. However, it is reported by one Jaina person from Tanjore in South India that like Hindus Jainas from that place offer *Pindas* or rice balls to the dead on the cremation ground on the 16th day after the death. As this custom of *Pindadāna* is not reported at all from any other place, it can safely be said that the custom is found in one locality and in any case it is not wide-spread as the custom of *Maraṇabhoja*. As regards the custom of observing monthly or yearly day in memory of the dead it can be stated that even though the custom is against the tenets of Jainism, it is practised by Jainas all over India. But it must be remembered that the proportion of persons observing the custom is less than those who do not observe it. Thus out of 154 persons who have sent their replies, 93 persons do not observe the custom while 56 are found observing it. Among the 56 persons, 26 are Digambaras and 30 are Śvetāmbaras and hence the practice of custom is not confined to one sect only. Generally the annual day is observed by doing some religious act like *Pūjā* or worship in the temples and *Dāna* or donations to religious and social institutions. Only one person from Udaipur in Rajputana reports that on the annual day the *Sānti* of the deceased is performed by offering food to children, to five Brahmins and to caste-fellows. It is also reported from Borsad in Gujarātha that on the annual day bread is given to the dogs. These two instances seem to reveal local practices only. It is mentioned that in the Bundelakhāṇḍa the day in memory of the dead is observed in the *Pitrpaksha*, that is, in the second fort-night of the month of *Bhādrapada*.

41. RELIGIOUS EDUCATION

Jainism is a distinct religion having its own philosophy and the elaborate rules of conduct both for the laity and the ascetics. For putting the ethical code prescribed by Jainism into actual practice a firm faith in the teachings of Jainism is essential and easy method of clearly grasping the fundamental principles of Jainism and its various implications lies in taking regular religious

education. The Jainas possess a vast amount of religious literature of their own in Sanskrit, Prakrit and various provincial languages. With a view to know whether the study of Jaina literature is done or not and to consider what should be done in the matter in future, the question number 44 was asked. From the replies it will be seen that out of 154 persons, who have sent in their replies, 22 persons have not received any religious education at all, while 29 persons have taken sufficient religious education. The remaining persons have secured only an elementary understanding of the religious principles. This means that only a few persons are well versed in religious education. In this connection it may be noted that those who have a firm grounding in religious education are generally seen to be scrupulously practising things which are sanctioned by religion. Thus such persons are found celebrating all Jaina festivals and no Hindu festival, observing Jaina rites, Jaina *Samskaras* and regular and special Jaina fasts, consecrating marriage according to Jaina ritual, worshipping Jaina Gods and not Hindu Gods, and avoiding irreligious practices like performing *Śraddha* or keeping days in memory of the dead. As the observance of Jaina practices is accelerated by receiving more religious education, it is suggested, regarding the question of imparting religious education in future, by practically all persons that the religious education should be made compulsory to Jaina children. They think that it is essential to teach the fundamental principles of Jainism to children in their mother tongue without employing any force on them. It is advocated that the method of cramming religious books written in classical languages without a proper understanding of them should be entirely avoided. Any way it is considered desirable that every Jaina should at least know the basic principles of his religion so that he will try to translate them into practice as far as possible.

42. WORSHIP OF HINDU DEITIES

As a result of a close contact between the Hindus and Jainas for the last so many centuries, the former did influence the latter in several ways. Even in the religious field some Jainas imitated

the Hindus and began to worship Hindu Gods and Goddesses even though such a worship was definitely denounced by Jaina religion. The Gazetteers have given a detailed information about the reverence shown by Jainas towards Hindu Gods and Goddesses.¹ With a view to ascertain the present position in this regard the question number 45 was asked and from the replies it will be seen that out of 154 persons from all over India 139 persons clearly state that they do not worship Hindu deities. Only 9 persons are reported to be observing the custom of worshipping Hindu deities. The Hindu influence seems to be more among the Śvetāmbaras because of these 9 persons while 3 belong to the Digambara sect, six come from the Śvetāmbara sect. The names of Hindu deities mentioned in this connection are Śaṅkara, Viṣṇu, Sūrya, Gaṇapati, Hanumāna, Mahāśakti, Mātā, Aṁbādevī, Lakṣmi, Chāmuṇḍā, Durgā and Śitalā. It is stated by some that the Hindu deities are respected but not worshipped like Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras. Similarly, it is mentioned by two businessmen that as traders according to custom they have to worship Gaṇeśa and Lakṣmi on the day of Diwali but this does not mean that they worship them in true sense of the term all the year round. In the same way one person asserts that he has Śraddhā or faith in Hindu deities like Rāma-chandra and Kṛiṣṇa but he does not worship them. From these statements it is clear that there is not much of religious devotion in showing veneration to Hindu deities. If religious sentiments would have been attached to Hindu deities, worshipping them would not have been specifically pointed out by some that they were formerly worshipping the Hindu deities but now they have stopped that custom.

43. PROBLEM OF WIDOWS

It has already been noted² that according to the Census of India, 1931, of all communities in India the Jaina community possesses the highest proportion of widowed persons and this is more evident in the case of females. Out of five Jaina females

1. See page 237 ante.

2. See page 18 ante.

one is necessarily a widow. This condition did prevail in the Jaina community during the last fifty years as will be seen from, the Census Reports of 1901 and onwards. Thus how to improve the lot of an unusually large number of widows is a difficult problem clamouring for solution before the Jaina community at present and with a view to ascertain the attitude of Jainas in this matter the question number 46 was asked. From the replies it will be observed that the opinion of Jainas on this question is sharply divided. Out of 154 persons as many as 105 persons categorically assert that remarriage of widows is the only effective solution. They think that prejudice against remarriage should be driven out. For this purpose it is suggested that remarriage should not be looked down upon, remarried ladies should not be outcasted, and if possible, remarriage should be supported by law and moral force as it is done among Bohras. Remarriage, it is advocated, must be made compulsory by state legislation for young and childless widows and for others it may be left for them to decide. Generally it is thought that widows upto the age of 30 may be allowed to remarry if they so desire and to facilitate such marriages widowers must be asked to marry widows only. As the permission to remarry is likely to induce ladies to contract many such marriages, it is considered that a woman should be allowed to remarry only once. Even though remarriage is accepted as a desirable solution, it must be remembered in this connection that among the persons in favour of remarriage there is a section which regards remarriage as the second best solution. This section thinks that the best thing for a widow is to lead a social and religious life and if this is utterly impossible, then alone she may be allowed to remarry. That is why it is contended by them that system of remarriage should not be unnecessarily encouraged and there should be no direct propaganda in favour of it.

On the contrary, there are 34 persons who strongly and faithfully oppose to the very proposal of remarriage of widows. They sincerely feel that remarriage is not the only solution and think that the good treatment would solve the problem of widows. As a part of genial treatment they suggest that *Āśramas* should be opened to house the widows, general, moral, and religious educa-

tion should be imparted to them and efforts should be made to make them as far as possible economically independent. They maintain that to lead a life strictly according to religious injunctions is the best course open for widows and it is thought that sufficient financial help in widow-hood will, it is ardently hoped, enable them to lead a life of that type. They also suggest that if child-marriages and old-marriages are completely stopped, the number of widows would be consequently reduced and the question of widow remarriage will not assume serious proportion at all.

44. JAINA CULTURE

It is an established fact that the Jaina community is one of the very ancient communities of India. The Jainas possess a distinct religion, a separate philosophy, a different ethical code, a set of peculiar beliefs, practices, customs and manners and a vast literature of their own. Though Jainas form a small minority at present, yet in the past they were not only numerous but also enjoyed royal patronage for a long time in various parts of the country. Consequently the Jaina rules of conduct are in observance throughout the last so many centuries. But as the Jainas were and are living in close contact with the Hindus, both influenced each other in several ways to such an extent that the Jainas, being in minority, came to be regarded as a part of Hindus. Accordingly it was thought that the Jainas do not possess a way of life different from others, and especially from Hindus. Therefore with a view to know whether the Jainas think that there is anything like Jaina culture as distinct from other cultures in India, the question number 47 was asked. From the replies it will be seen that out of 154 persons while only 15 persons think that the Jaina culture is not separate from other cultures of India, there are 120 persons who forcefully assert that the Jaina culture is a separate entity altogether. The few persons belonging to the first school of thought consider that Jaina culture is a part of Hindu culture or they go a step further and say that Jaina culture is a part of Aryan culture which is built up by the Jainas, Buddhists and Hindus. But in saying so the persons of this category do admit that the

Jaina culture is distinct to a certain extent, if not entirely distinct, from other cultures in India. On the contrary, the overwhelming majority of Jainas seem to side the second school of thought which categorically maintains that the finer thinking of Jaina philosophy of life differs greatly from others and therefore a truly Jaina conduct presents a different culture distinct in its outlook and far-reaching in its range. It cannot be denied, it is argued, that the features of Jaina culture are quite distinct from other cultures especially in matters like outlook towards life and world, insistence on spiritual progress, and observance of *Ahimsā* or creed of non-violence in all possible ways. The basic difference, it is stated, lies in the religious philosophy of Jainas and as religion moulds the entire way of life, the Jaina way of life automatically becomes separate from other ways of life.

45. GENERAL

The small Jaina community which is spread all over India has been split up into several divisions based on sect, sub-sect, caste, sub-caste, language and locality. As efforts are made to perpetuate these divisions by establishing a large number of associations or institutions for the benefit of their members only, it is no wonder that these associations have created separatist tendencies in the community. The effective way to combat the separatist tendencies and to create the feeling of oneness among all members of the community is to conduct associations or institutions which are kept open to all Jainas irrespective of sect, sub-sect, caste, sub-caste, language and locality. With a view to know whether there are any associations or institutions of this type in the Jaina community at present the question number 48 was asked. From the replies we get the names of following associations or institutions which are striving for the benefit of Jainas as a whole:—

I. *Those of an All-India Character:*

- (1) All India Jaina Association which is known as Bhārata Jaina Mahāmapdala, Wardha.
- (2) Jaina Association of India, Bombay.

- (3) Jaina Young Men's Association, Bombay.
- (4) Akhila Bhāratiya Jaina Svayamsevaka Parishada, Bombay.

II. Those of a Provincial Character:

- (1) Gwalior State Jaina Sabhā, Gwalior.
- (2) Mahārāshṭriya Jaina Sabhā, Nasik.
- (3) Dakshīṇa Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabhā, Sangli.
- (4) Tāmilanāḍa Jaina Association, Madras.
- (5) Mysore Jaina Association, Mysore.

III. Those of a Local Character:

- (1) Jaina Yuvaka Saṅgha, Baroda.
- (2) Jaina Yuvaka Saṅgha, Bhadala.
- (3) Jaina Yuvaka Saṅgha, Bombay.
- (4) Bombay and Mangrol Jaina Sabhā, Bombay.
- (5) Jaina Sevā Samāja, Nathadvara.
- (6) Jaina Sevā Mapdala, Nagpur..
- (7) Mahāvīra Saṅgha, Bangalore.
- (8) Mahāvīra Jaina Association, Tanjore.
- (9) Karakal Jaina Saṅgha, Karakal.

IV. Those devoted to Research and Literary Activities:

- (1) Jaina Cultural Research Society, Benares.
- (2) Central Provinces and Berar Jaina Research Institute, Yeotmal.
- (3) Mahāvīra Jaina Research Institute, Madras.
- (4) Jaina Dharma-Prasāraka Sabhā, Bhavanagar.
- (5) Atmānanda Jaina Sabhā, Bhavanagar.

V. Those started for specific purposes:

- (1) Pārvīvanātha Vidyāśrama, Benares.
- (2) S. A. Jaina College Society, Punjab.
- (3) Jaina Āśrama, Mahaviranagara.
- (4) Jaina Vidyārthī Āśrama, Baroda.
- (5) The Baroda Jaina Industrial Home for Ladies, Baroda.
- (6) Jaina Co-operative Bank Limited, Bombay.
- (7) D. N. Jaina Boarding, Jubbulipore.
- (8) Jaina Vidyāvardhaka Saṅgha, Mudabidri.

VI. Those open to Jainas and Non-Jainas also:

- (1) Chaturvidha Dānaśala, Sholapur.
- (2) Sakhārāma Nemachanda Jaina Aushadhalaya, Sholapur.
- (3) Jaina Eye-Hospital, Sholapur.
- (4) Jaina Sevā Samāja Dispensary, Palitana.

The names of associations given above are those which are mentioned in the replies. It is likely that many such associations might be in existence. In the sixth category of such associations or institutions may be included Rest Houses, Dispensaries, Colleges, Secondary and Primary Schools, Libraries and Reading Rooms. Even though the names of many such institutions have been given, it is doubtful how many of them might be functioning well. It is stated by some that they are eager to become the members of associations open to all Jainas but they are not aware of any such association. Such institutions, it is mentioned, remain in names and do not go ahead due to orthodox nature of Jainas. In any case, it is expressed that such institutions do not carry an intense propaganda and therefore their work lies unnoticed. Of the institutions mentioned above the following appear to be going on well with their activities:—Bhārata Jaina Mahāmapḍala, Wardha; Dakshīṇa Mahārāshṭra Jaina Sabhā, Sangli; Jaina Yuvaka Sangha, Bombay; Jaina Cultural Research Society, Benares; Jaina Dharma-Prasāraka Sabhā, Bhavnagar; Jaina Co-operative Bank Limited, Bombay and Jaina Eye-Hospital, Sholapur.

The question number 49 is concerned with the personal information regarding their educational and other qualifications and the distinctions obtained by them and by the members of their families in various fields. The information was necessary to know whether there are individuals and families of outstanding merit. From the replies it will be seen that among the Jainas at present there are many persons who have distinguished themselves as scholars, research workers, writers, dramatists, poets, literary critics, śāstris, editors, orators, engineers and social workers. A few examples of individual and family achievements are given below. In the Parikh family of Ahmedabad, Dr. K. M. Parikh is L.M. & S.,

and his first son is M. A. (Cantab), second son F. R. C. S. (London), fourth son is at Cambridge for B. A., one daughter is G. A. of Women's University and another daughter is B. A. of Bombay University. In the Sheth family of Bombay we find that Mr. C. L. Sheth is a B. A., LL. B., Solicitor, his brother Mr. K. L. Sheth is B. E. (Bombay), B. Sc. (London), and A. M. I. C. E. (England), and his another brother Mr. G. L. Sheth is B. Sc. (Econ.) (London) and I. C. S. In the Badami family of Surat Mr. Surchandra Badami is a retired Judge of Small Causes Court, his one son Mr. P. S. Badami, is B. A., B. Sc., Bar-at-law having a throughout first class career and his another son, Dr. J. S. Badami, B. Sc. (Bombay), Ph. D. (London), D. I. C. (London) stood first in the Bombay University in his Inter Science and B. Sc. examinations and was a Bombay University Scholar in England for his Ph. D., In the Kasliwala family of Jaipur, Mr. N. C. Kasliwala is M. A., LL. B., M. L. C., his one brother is an M. A. and another is a Doctor having degrees of M. D. and M. R. C. P. (London). At Jubbulpore Prof. K. C. Jain and his son were the recipients of gold medals at their respective university examinations. In the field of literary activities there are several persons of outstanding merit. Two of them, namely, Mr. Kamta Prasada Jain and Pandita Nathurama Premi, may be mentioned here. Mr. K. P. Jain from Aliganj (U. P.) has written about 50 books in Hindi and English on Jaina History and Comparative Religion and has contributed dozens of articles to English and Hindi Journals of repute like Indian Antiquary, New Indian Antiquary, Indian Culture, Indian Historical Quarterly, etc. He is the editor of Jaina Antiquary, Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara, the important research journal, and of Vīra, the Jaina Hindi Weekly. Pandita Nathurama Premi is a great research scholar who is respected for his learning and writings by all sections of the Jaina community. Through his efforts as an editor and a publisher many Jaina works in Sanskrit and Prakrit saw the light of the day and in the social field he has rendered a yeoman's service as the editor of ' Jaina Hitaishi ', the magazine which probably, for the first time, strongly advocated revolutionary reforms in the Jaina community. Among the living

Jaina research scholars who have rendered distinguished services to Jaina studies mention may be made of Prof. Dr. A. N. Upadhye, M. A., D. Litt., Kolhapur, Prof. Dr. Hiralal Jain, M. A., LL. B., D. Litt., Nagpur, Pandit Jugal Kishora Mukhtyar, Sarsawa, Pandit Sukhalalji Sanghavi, Ahmedabad, and Muni Jinavijayaji, Bombay.

The Jainas being mainly a business community are likely to be engrossed in commercial activities. In the ancient and medieval period when the Jainas wielded political power, either as rulers or as ministers, they did contribute according to their mite to the progress of their country in various fields. With a view to ascertain whether there are active political and social workers in the Jaina community at present and whether according to Jainas their community has contributed in recent years towards the political, social and economic progress of India, the question number 50 was asked. From the replies it will be seen that out of 154 persons there are 38 persons who take active part in political activities and 46 persons in social activities. The 12 persons are reported to be taking active part in improving the conditions of their respective professions especially legal, medical and teaching professions. The 27 persons specifically state that they are not taking part in any public activity at present and in this category there are many Government servants and the persons who had done active public work formerly. This shows that the Jaina community seems to possess a good number of active public workers in various fields.

As regards the contribution of the Jaina community towards the political, social and economic progress of India it is maintained in general that the Jainas have contributed much above their number, that is, more than can be expected from a minority community which is mainly of a commercial character. As compared with the contribution of other communities it is clearly stated that the Jaina contribution is proportionally larger than that of any other community except perhaps Parsees and in any case it is not less than that of Hindus generally. It is firmly believed that if the proportion of sacrifices and contribution is taken, then the incidence would be highest in the Jaina community. In the political field it is proudly claimed by the Jainas

that the principles of *Ahiṁsā* or non-violence and *Sahishṇutā* or tolerance by the use of which as political weapons in Non-co-operation and Satyāgraha Movements under the superb leadership of Mahatma Gandhi the Indians achieved their long cherished aim of political independence from the yoke of the mighty British Empire are the well known gifts by the Jaina community. Apart from this, in the long drawn out struggle for political freedom of the country, the Jainas liberally contributed, not as a community but in their individual capacities, man-power, financial resources and silent support and good wishes. It is reported that in the Non-co-operation Movement of 1919 many Jainas left the Government service or abandoned the legal practice and in the 1942 struggle the places where Jaina students lived together became the nerve-centres of revolution. In supplying finance to national movements the contribution of Jainas, it is clearly mentioned, was greater as compared to their number in the country. Those who could not participate directly did contribute in an indirect manner. The Jainas are intensely national and they whole-heartedly supported the Indian National Congress. It must be remembered that even though they form a small minority community they never demanded for them specific rights like separate electorates or reservation of seats in Assemblies. In the social field also the Jainas have contributed both in direct and indirect ways. They were mainly responsible in establishing and conducting a large number of social and charitable institutes like rest houses, pāñjarāpolas, dispensaries, maternity homes, hospitals, colleges, secondary and primary schools, libraries and reading rooms. Such institutes are open alike to all Jainas and non-Jainas. Where the Jainas could not run such institutes they give substantial monetary help to them. It is a fact that many such institutes live on the money supplied by the Jaina community. Besides, among the eminent social workers in fields like spread of education or removal of untouchability the Jainas occupy an important place. To quote only one instance, the name of Mr. Bhaurao Patil, the founder of Rayata Šikshaṇa Samsthā, Satara may be mentioned. He conducts 565 primary schools, 20 High Schools, 4 primary training colleges and one arts college. Many of these are of a

residential nature where students of all castes and creeds live and work together. The contribution of Jaina community is considered to be most prominent in the economic field. In modern industrialisation, the place of Jainas is second only to that of Parsees in India. The names of leading business and industrial magnates of India like Sheth Kasturbhai Lalabhai and Sheth Ambalal Sarabhai of Ahmedabad, Sheth Walchand Hirachand, Sir Chunilal B. Metha, Sir Shantidas Ashukaran, Sheth Kantilal Ishwardas, and Sheth Punamachand Ghasilal of Bombay, Sir Sheth Hukumchand of Indore, Sir Bhagachandji Soni of Ajmer and Sheth Shanti Prasad Jain of Dalmia—Jain concerns of Calcutta, are, it is stated, sufficient to prove the Jaina contribution to Indian commercial and industrial advancement. Further the Jainas are for the last so many decades the prominent indigenous bankers having branches all over India and even abroad and in this capacity they have catered to the enormous financial needs and transactions of all people. Thus it can be said that the Jainas in their individual and collective capacities did make substantial and noteworthy contributions to political, social and especially to economic progress of India.

CHAPTER SEVEN

RETROSPECT

1. THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND

Jainism is a neglected branch of Indology. Eminent research scholars in different branches of Indology have paid very little attention to Jainism. This was due to the fact that the original Jaina texts were not readily available to the research workers. As a result the opinion of early European scholars regarding the origin and growth of Jainism was divided. While one group consisting of E. Thomas, Stevenson, Colebrook and others thought that Jainism is older than Buddhism, yet the other group of orientalists like H. H. Wilson, Lassen and others held that Jainism was an offshoot of Buddhism because outwardly certain points were common to both and their land of origin and early activities was the same. The question whether Jainism was a precursor to Buddhism or not was settled for good in a scholarly manner by the researches of two great German Orientalists, namely, Bühler and Jacobi. It is now an established fact that Jainism is not a branch of Buddhism but is an independent religion and that it was flourishing in India when Lord Gautama Buddha founded his new religion.¹

Though the question of origin of Jainism has been finally settled, still the question regarding its antiquity has not as yet been completely solved. Till recently Lord Mahāvīra (599-527 B.C.), the 24th Tīrthaṅkara of Jainas, was regarded as the founder of Jainism. But taking into account recent researches in the field it has now been acknowledged by all that Lord Mahāvīra's predecessor, viz., Lord Pārvanātha, the 23rd Tīrthaṅkara of Jainas, was a historical personage belonging to the 8th century B.C. and that he is the real founder of Jaina religion.² Thus the Jaina History is thought to commence from the 8th century B.C. But it

1. C. H. I., Vol. I, pp. 152-153.

2. C. H. I., Vol. I, p. 153.

is pertinent to note that this opinion is not shared by the Jainas. They hold that Lord Pārśvanātha and Lord Mahāvira are mere prophets of Jaina religion and that the real founder of Jainism is Lord R̥shabha, their first Tīrthaṅkara. Various reasons are vehemently put forward by the Jainas to prove the antiquity of the religion and to show that Lord R̥shabha did found the Jaina religion in this age. In the first place the Jaina tradition firmly believes that the Jaina religion is eternal and in every age¹ it is propounded by twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras for the benefit of all beings. In the present age the twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras did preach Jainism and as in these twenty-four Tīrthaṅkaras Lord R̥shabha was the first one, he is considered as the founder of Jainism. All ancient Jaina scriptures and Jainas of all sects accept this as a well established fact.² Secondly, what is really remarkable about the Jaina tradition is the confirmation of it from non-Jaina sources, especially Hindu and Buddhist sources. The Hindus, indeed, never disputed the fact that Jainism was founded by Lord R̥shabha in this half-cycle and placed his time almost at what they conceived to be the commencement of the world. They acknowledged him as a divine person and counted him amongst their *Avatāras*, i. e., various incarnations of Lord Vishnu. They give the same parentage of Lord R̥shabha as the Jainas do and they even agree that after the name of his son Bharata this country is known as Bhārata-Varsha.³ In the R̥g-Veda we have clear references to R̥shabha and Arishtanemi, two of the Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras,⁴ and the Yajur-Veda mentions the names of three Tīrthaṅkaras—R̥shabha, Ajitanātha and Arishtanemi.⁵

1. According to Jainas the cycle of time has been divided into two parts which go on rotating one after another like the spokes of a wheel. The two half cycles are known as *Utsarpīti-kāla*, i. e., age of progress and *Avasarpīti-kāla*, i.e., age of sorrow. The present half cycle of time is *Avasarpīti-kāla*.

2. Kailashchandraji : Jainadharma, pp. 4-5.

3. Jain, C. R. : R̥shabha Deva, the Founder of Jainism P. 66.

4. A. Chakravarti : "Jainism", Cul. H. I., Vol. I, P. 185.

5. S. Radhakrishnan : Indian Philosophy, Vol. I, P. 287.

The sect of Vrātyas mentioned in the Atharva-Veda is said to signify the Jainas on the ground that the terms Vrātya means the observer of vows or vratas as distinguished from the performer of sacrifices, which applied to the Hindus at the time. Similarly in the same Veda it is supposed that the word Mahā Vrātya refers to Lord Rshabha.¹ The story of Rshabha also occurs in the Vishṇupurāṇa and Bhāgavatapurāṇa, where he figures as an *Avatāra*, i. e., incarnation of Nārāyaṇa in an age prior to that of the ten *avatāras* of Vishnu. The story is exactly identical with the life history of Rshabha as given in the Jaina sacred literature.² From the fact that Hindu tradition regards Lord Rshabha—and not Lord Mahāvīra—along with Lord Gautama Buddha as an incarnation of God, it is argued that the Hindu tradition also from ancient times accepts Lord Rshabha as the founder of Jainism. Like Hindus, Buddhists also are said to believe in Lord Rshabha as the founder of Jainism on the grounds that in the Buddhist literature (i) Jainism is not shown as a new religion, (ii) Lord Mahāvīra, the senior contemporary of Lord Gautama Buddha is described always as Nigganṭha Nātaputta and not as the founder of Jainism and (iii) the name of Lord Rshabha is mentioned along with that of Lord Mahāvīra as an Āpta or a Tīrthaṅkara.³ Thirdly, from some historical references it is supposed that Lord Rshabha must be real founder of Jainism. In this connection Dr. Jacobi writes thus: "There is nothing to prove that Pārśva was the founder of Jainism. Jaina tradition is unanimous in making Rshabha the first Tīrthaṅkara as its founder and there may be some thing historical in the tradition which makes him the first Tīrthaṅkara".⁴ There is evidence to show that so far back as the first century B. C. there were people who were worshipping Rshabha Deva.⁵ It has been recorded that

1. Jain, C. R.: op. cit., p. 69.

2. A. Chakravarti: op. cit., p. 185.

3. Kailashchandralji: op. cit., p. 10.

4. Jacobi, H: "On Mahāvīra and his Predecessors," I. A., Vol. IX, P. 163.

5. S. Radhakrishnan: Indian Philosophy, Vol. I, P. 237.

King Khāravela of Kaliṅga in his second invasion of Magadha in 161 B. C. brought back treasures from Magadha and in these treasures there was the statue of the first Jina (R̥shabha Deva) which had been carried away from Kaliṅga three centuries earlier by king Nanda I.¹ This means that in the 5th century B. C. Lord R̥shabha was worshipped and his statue was highly valued by his followers. From this it is argued that if Lord Mahāvīra or Lord Pārvanātha were the founders of Jainism, then their statues would have been worshipped by their followers in the 5th century B. C., i.e., immediately after their time. But as we get in ancient inscriptions authentic historical references to the statues of Lord R̥shabha it is thought that he must have been the founder of Jainism.² Thus from these points of view the Jainas firmly assert that Lord R̥shabha alone was responsible for preaching Jainism for the first time in the present half cycle of time.³

As the question of the antiquity of Jaina religion is connected with that of its founder, it is clear from the above that a hoary antiquity is assigned to the Jaina religion. It is supposed to be the oldest religion in India and in support of it, it is stated that the human statuettes found in the recent excavations at Mohenjo-Daro and Harappa in Indus Valley region are Jaina relics and the figures carved on seals dug out from these places seem to resemble the Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras,⁴ and especially the first Tīrthaṅkara Lord R̥shabha.⁵ In this connection Major J. G. R. Forlong writes that from unknown times there existed in India a highly organised Jaina religion from which later on developed Brahmanism and Buddhism and that Jainism was preached by twenty-two

1. Smith, V. A. : Early History of India, P. 200.

2. Kailashchandraji : op. cit., P. 11.

3. For the discussion regarding the historicity of R̥shabhadeva, Nemi-nātha and Pārvanātha, vide, Jain, K. P.: "The Predecessors of Tīrthaṅkara Mahāvīra", I. C., Vol. III, pp. 202-206.

4. (i) Jain, C. R. : op. cit. P. 72.

(ii) A. Chakravarti : op. cit. P. 188.

5. Mookerji, R. K. : Hindu Civilisation, P. 21.

Tirthankaras before the Aryans reached the Ganges.¹ In any case it is accepted by the Jainas that Jainism, the religion of Ahimsa, is as old as the Vedic religion, if not older. It is pointed out that throughout vedic literature consisting of the Samhitas, the Brahmapas and the Upanishadas, we find two currents of thought opposed to each other running parallel, sometimes the one becoming dominant, sometimes the other, one enjoining animal sacrifice in the *Yajñas* or sacrifices, and the other condemning it and the latter thought was always held and propagated for the first time by the Jainas.² Thus, according to Jainas, their history must begin at least from the Vedic times primarily in the eastern part of India. As the Jainas are spread all over India from ancient times they possess a long and continuous history of their own. Let us see, in brief, the state patronage received by Jainism and the important Jaina rulers in different parts of the country during the ancient and medieval times.

I. Jainism in East India

In the political history of India in ancient times East India figured more prominently than any other part of India and from the middle of the 7th century B. C. the kingdom of Magadha, the modern South Bihar, became the recognised political centre of India. As Lord Mahavira happened to belong to this part of the country, we find that many kings and people gave their support to Jainism. King Chetaka, the most eminent amongst the Lichchhavi princes and the ruler of Vaisali, the capital of Videha, was a great patron of Jainism and he gave his sister, princess Trisalā, in marriage to Siddhartha, to whom Lord Mahavira was born.³ As king Chetaka was related to Lord Mahavira and as the Lichchhavis

1. Major J. G. R. Forlong: "Short Studies in the Sciences of Comparative Religion"—pp. 243-244. (quoted by Jain, C. R. in his book: *Rishabha Deva, the Founder of Jainism*).

2. A. Chakravarti; op. cit., pp. 185-188.

3. C. H. I., Vol. I, P. 157. According to Digambara Jaina tradition Trisalā is the daughter and not the sister of King Chetaka. Vide Ajñāta : *Mahaviracharitra*, P. 58 and Jain, K. P.: *Bhagvāna Mahavira*, pp. 70 and 139.

are often mentioned in the Jaina literature, it is supposed that practically all Lichchhavīs were the followers of Jaina religion.¹ In the Śaiśunāga dynasty (642-413 B. C.) Bimbisāra or Śrenika (582-554 B. C.) and Ajātaśatru or Kuṇika (554-527 B. C.) were the two important kings who extended their support to the Jaina religion.² Both Bimbisāra and his son Ajātaśatru were the near relatives of Lord Mahāvīra, in whose contact they frequently came, and hence the Jainas believe that they did belong to the Jaina religion for a considerable period in their life time. The Nandas (413-322 B. C.) who were successors of Śaiśunāgas in Magadha were, according to the inscriptions of Khāravela, the followers of the Jaina faith because the inscriptions speak of a King Nanda I who led a conquering expedition into Kaliṅga and carried off an image of Ādi-Jina.³ Vincent Smith also asserts that the Nandas were Jainas.⁴ The Jaina tradition, which is ancient in origin and referred to in subsequent ages down to the present as well known, states that Chandragupta Maurya was a Jaina and that he abdicated the throne, joined the Jaina migration led by Bhadrabāhu to the South, became the chief disciple of Bhadrabāhu and died in a Jaina way (i. e. by *Sallekhanā*) at Śravanabelgoḷa after leading a life of a Jaina ascetic for 12 years. This tradition is nowadays accepted as true by famous historians like Rice⁵ and Smith.⁶ Regarding the early faith of Aśoka some scholars are of opinion that he professed Jainism before his conversion. The famous edicts of Aśoka are said to reveal this fact.⁷ According to Ain-i-Akbari Aśoka was responsible for introducing Jainism into Kashmir and this is confirmed by the Rājatarāṅgiṇī, the Brahmanical history of Kashmir. Other reasons are also given in support of

1. Ajātaśatru : op. cit. P. 48.

2. C. H. I., Vol. I, pp. 160 and 163.

3. Rao, B. S. : Studies in South Indian Jainism, part II, Āndhra-Karnāṭaka Jainism, pp. 3-4.

4. Smith, V. A. : Early History of India, P. 44.

5. Rice B. L. : Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, pp. 4, 5 and 8.

6. Smith V. A. : Early History of India, P. 154.

7. L. A., Vol. V, P. 275.

this belief.¹ Samprati, the grand-son and successor of Aśoka is regarded as a Jaina Aśoka for his eminent patronage and efforts in spreading Jaina religion.²

Like Magadha, Kaliṅga or Orissa had been a Jaina strong-hold from the very beginning. It is asserted that Jainism made its way to the South through Kaliṅga only. Lord Mahāvīra visited Kaliṅga and preached Jainism to the people, who already belonged to the Jaina Saṅgha as organised by Lord Pārśvanātha. In the second century B. C. Kaliṅga was the centre of a powerful empire ruled over by Khāravela, who was one of the greatest royal patrons of the Jaina faith.³ Even after Jainism lost the royal patronage it continued for a long time as a dominant religion and this is testified by Hiuen Tsiang (629 A.D.) when he says that in Kaliṅga "among the unbelievers the most numerous are the Nirgranthas."⁴

Jainism had its influence in Bengal also. Hiuen Tsiang states that in Puṇḍravardhana and Samataṭa, i. e., in Western and Eastern Bengal the naked ascetics called Nirgranthas are most numerous.⁵ Even now Jaina relics like inscriptions, idols, etc. are found in different parts of Bengal. It has been pointed out that the indigenous people of Western Bengal known as Sarāks are the Hinduised remnants of the early Jaina people.⁶ In some parts of Bengal Jaina idols are worshipped by Hindus as the idols of Bhairava. In short, in religion, customs and manners of Bengal the influence of Jaina religion is quite visible even at present.⁷

II. Jainism in South India

It is now an undisputed fact that Jainism entered into

1. Rice B. L. : Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, pp. 12-18.
2. Smith, V. A. : Early History of India. pp. 202 & 458.
3. Bool Chand : "Jainism in Kaliṅga-Deśa", Āchārya Dhruva Smāraka Grantha, pp 87-100.
4. Beal, S. : Buddhist Records of the Western World, Vol. II, P. 208.
5. Beal, S. : op. cit., Vol. II., pp. 195 and 199.
6. Census of India, 1901, Vol. I, part II, P. 523.
7. (i) Kailashchandraji : Jaina dharma, pp. 38-39.
 (ii) Paul, P. L. : "Jainism in Bengal" I. C., Vol. III, pp. 524-530.

Karnātaka and South India during the days of Emperor Chandragupta Maurya when Bhadrabāhu, the distinguished leader of Jainas and the last of the Jaina saints known, as Śrutakevalis, after predicting a twelve years famine and drought in the North, led the migration of the Jaina Saṅgha to the South. Thus the Jaina history in the South commences from the 3rd Century B. C. as according to all Jaina authors the death of Bhadrabāhu took place at Śravaṇabelagola in 297 B. C.¹ But in this connection it may be noted that some scholars consider this Bhadrabāhu tradition as the starting point of a revival and not commencement of Jaina activity in South India and hence regard him as the rejuvenator of the South Indian Jainism.² It is argued that if South India would have been void of Jainas before Bhadrabāhu reached there, it is least conceivable that an Āchārya of Bhadrabāhu's status would have led the Jaina Saṅgha to such a country and for the mere sake of *Dharma-rakshā* (i. e. protection of religion). Again, various evidences are brought forward to prove the antiquity of the Jainas in the South and it is asserted that Jainism reached South India long before Śrutakevali Bhadrabāhu.³ In any case Jainism prevailed in South India from 3rd century B. C. and it continued as a popular faith during more than a thousand years of the Christian era and it is significant to note that up to the fourteenth century A. D. it played an important role in the history of Southern India. The Gaṅga Kingdom was a virtual creation of the famous Jaina saint Simhanandi and naturally practically all Gaṅga monarchs championed the cause of Jainism.⁴ The Kadamba rulers were essentially Brahmanical in religion. Yet the royal Kadamba family gave a few monarchs who were devout Jainas, and who were responsible for the gradual progress of that religion in Karnātaka. Eventually Jainism

1. Jacob: S. B. E., Vol. 22, Intro. P. 13.

2. Rao, B. S.: Studies in South Indian Jainism, Part II, Āndhra-Karnātaka Jainism, pp. 3 and 7.

3. (i) Jain, K. P. : "The Antiquity of Jainism in South India", I. C. Vol. IV, pp. 512-516.

(ii) Chakravarti, A : Jaina Literature in Tamil, pp. 6-7.

4. Krishna Rao: Gaṅgas of Talakāḍa, pp. 5-7.

became a popular religion in the Kadamba Empire.¹ During the reigns of early Chālukya princes, the Jaina religion was more prominent and many Jaina Āchāryas were patronised by Chālukya Kings including Pulakesī II.² Many of the Rāshtrakūṭas Emperors and their feudatories and officers were staunch Jainas and hence the period of Rāshtrakūṭas (i.e. from 750 to 1000 A.D.) is considered as the most flourishing period in the history of Jainism in the Deccan.³ The Western Chālukyas, who regained their ascendancy after the fall of Rāshtrakūṭas, preferred to show the same liberal attitude to Jainism which the Gaṅgas, the Kadambas and the Rāshtrakūṭas had shown.⁴ Like the Gaṅga Kingdom in the 1st or 2nd century A.D, the Hoysāla kingdom in 11th century A. D. owed its creation to a Jaina saint Sudatta and many of the Hoysāla monarchs and generals extended their patronage to Jainism and carefully looked after the interests of the Jainas.⁵ The Kalachūris of Kalyāṇa were Jainas and naturally in their time Jainism was the state creed.⁶ The Alupa Kings of Tuḷuva showed leanings towards Jainism and the inscriptions reveal that Jainism was patronised by these Kings.⁷ Thus from early ages various royal families came forward as champions of Jainism and it is no wonder if their example was followed by their feudatories. Jainism was the state religion of the minor states of Punnāta, of the Sāntaras, the early Chaṅgālvās and the Kongālvās, as testified by

1. (i) Moraoe, G. M.: *The Kadamba Kula*, pp. 35 and 240-250.

(ii) Saletore, B.A.: *Medieval Jainism*, P. 30.

(iii) I. A., Vol. VI, P. 22 & Vol. VII, P. 34.

2. Bhandarkar, R.G.: *Early History of the Deccan* (collected works of Sir R. G. Bhandarkar, vol. III), pp. 81-82.

3. (i) Altekar, A. S.: *Rāshtrakūṭas & their Times*, pp. 310-313.

(ii) Bhandarkar, R. G.: op. cit., P. 105.

4. Saletore, B.A.: *Medieval Jainism*, P. 41.

5. (i) Saletore, B. A.: op. cit., pp. 59-86.

(ii) Mugali R. S.: *Heritage of Karnāṭaka*, P. 126.

6. Fleet, J. F.: *The Dynasties of the Kanarese Districts of Bombay Presidency*, P. 60.

7. Saletore, B. A.: *Ancient Karnāṭaka*, Vol., I, *History of Tuḷuva*, pp. 413-414.

their inscriptions.¹ Similarly the Rāṭṭas of Saundatti and Belgaum and Śilāhāras of Kolhapur were Jainas by religion.²

In the far South, the Madras Presidency discloses traces of Jaina dominion almost everywhere and on many a roadside, a stone Tīrthaṅkara may be seen either standing or sitting cross-legged.³ From the Saṅgama literature and other sources it is evident that Jainism flourished in the Tamil country from the earliest times reachable with our present means.⁴ Jaina epigraphs have been discovered in Anantpur, Bellary, Cuddapah, Guntur, Krishna, Kurnool, Nellore, North Arcot, South Kanara and Vizagapattam Districts of Madras Province. These Jaina epigraphs and other Jaina relics clearly indicate the large vogue that Jainism once had in that part of the country.⁵ Thus the whole of South India comprising the Deccan, Karnātaka, Āndhra and Tāmilnāḍa was a great stronghold of Jainas, especially Digambara Jainas, for more than one thousand years. Apart from the provincial capitals, Śravaṇabelagola in Mysore State was the centre of their activities and it occupies the same position even up to the present day. Jainism, however, began to decline in the South from the 12th century due to the growing importance of Śrīvaishṇavism and Viraśaivism.⁶

III. Jainism in West India

It has already been noted that at present the Jainas are concentrated most in the Western India, i. e., in Gujarātha and Kathiawar, and Jainism had very close relations with this part of

1. Rice, B. L. : Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, P. 203.
2. Fleet, J. F. : op. cit., pp. 79 and 103.
3. L. K. A. Iyer : M. T. C., Vol. III, P. 402.
4. (i) Aiyangar, S. K. : Some contributions of South India to Indian Culture, P. 234.
(ii) K. A. Nilakanta Sastri : The Pāṇḍyan Kingdom, P. 94.
5. Rao B. S. : Studies in South Indian Jainism, Part II, Āndhra-Karnāṭa Jainism, P. 34.
6. (i) S. Srikantha Sastri : Sources of Karnāṭaka History, Vol. I, Introduction, P. xxiii.
(ii) Bhandarkar, R. G. : op. cit., P. 133.

India. Here on the Mount Giranāra Lord Neminātha, the 22nd Tīrthāṅkara of the Jainas, attained salvation. Here, in the Council of Jaina Ascetics held at Valabhi in the year 993 after Lord Mahāvīra, the Jaina canon was, for the first time, reduced to writing. Just as South India is the stronghold of Digambara Jainas, similarly, West India is the centre of activities of Śvetāmbara Jainas.

Regarding the migration of Jainas to these parts of India it is thought that the migration must have taken place by 300 B.C. from Eastern India. From the facts that the Jainas tell us something about the reigns of Chandragupta Maurya and his son Bindusāra but at the same time they have practically nothing to tell about the reigns of Aśoka and his successors in the East and that the division of the Jaina Church into two great sects of the Digambaras and Śvetāmbaras had probably begun after the reign of Chandragupta Maurya it is concluded that the Jainas were probably already at this time, i.e., 300 B.C., gradually losing their position in the kingdom of Magadha, and that they had begun their migration towards the Western part of India, where they settled and where they have retained their settlements to the present day.¹

Jainism flourished in Gujerātha during the days of Rāshtrakūṭa monarchs, many of whom were devout Jainas, and it received a further fillip at the hands of that veteran Jaina ruler Vanarāja of Chāvaḍā family. About 1100 A. D., Jainism gained a great ascendancy when the Chālukya Kings Siddharāja and his successor Kumārapāla² openly professed Jainism and encouraged the literary and temple-building activities of the Jainas. During the days of Baghelas in the 13th century A.D. Jainism received patronage through the hands of Vastupāla and Tejapāla, the two famous Jaina ministers of the time. They were responsible for constructing the beautiful temple-cities at Śatruñjaya, Giranāra and Abu. Afterwards even though Jainism did not receive the royal patronage as before, still it continued to hold its position

1. Cambridge History of India, Vol. I, pp. 166-167.

2. Smith, V. A.: Early History of India, P. 190.

and the numerical and financial strength of Jainas gave their religion a place of honour which is acknowledged even to this day.

IV *Jainism in North India*

When by 300 B. C. the migration of Jainas began from Eastern India to different parts of the country one branch of them was firmly established in the North India from the middle of the second century B. C. What Śravaṇabelagola was to the Jainas of South, Mathurā, in the old kingdom of the Śurasenās, was to the Jainas of North. The numerous inscriptions excavated in this city tell us about a wide-spread and firmly established Jaina community, strongly supported by pious lay devotees and very zealous in the consecration and worship of images and shrines dedicated to Mahāvīra and his predecessors.¹ As these inscriptions range from the 2nd century B. C. to the 5th century A. D. it is clear that Mathurā was a stronghold of Jainas for nearly a thousand years. Another centre of Jaina activities in the North was Ujjain. It was the capital of Maurya Emperor Samprati who was known to Jainas as Jaina Aśoka. Since we find several references to Ujjain in the Jaina literature, it seems that Ujjain might have played an important role in the history of Jainism.² The archaeological and other evidences brought to light from different parts of North and Central India establish the close relations of various rulers with Jainism.³ During the Mohammedan period Jainism could not get the royal and popular support as it used to receive before but it succeeded in holding its own without much trouble. The Jainas even could secure some concessions for their holy places from the liberal minded Mughal Emperor Akbar the Great.⁴ During the Mohammedan period, however, the Jainas particularly increased in the native states of

1. C. H. I., Vol I, P. 167.

2. (i) C. H. I., Vol. I, P. 166.

(ii) Smith, V. A.: op. cit., P. 202.

3. Kailashchandraji: Jainadharma; pp. 51-52.

4. Jain, K. P. "Jainism under the Muslim Rule" N. I. A., Vol. I, No. 8, pp. 516-521.

Rajaputana, where they came to occupy many important offices of the state including generalships and ministerships.¹ As Col. Tod remarks, "The officers of the state and revenue are chiefly of the Jaina laity. The Chief Magistrate and assessors of justice in Udaipur and most of the towns of Rajasthan, are of this sect.... The many ancient cities where this religion was fostered, have inscriptions which evince their prosperity in these countries, with whose history their own is interwoven. In fine, the necrological records of the Jainas bear witness to their having occupied a distinguished place in Rajput society; and the privileges they still enjoy, prove that they are not overlooked."²

Thus the Jainas continued to flourish in different parts of India during the ancient and medieval times. But afterwards the Jainas began to decline. Before finding out the causes responsible for the downfall of Jainas, let us try to see the achievements of the Jainas in various fields of activities during the many centuries of their existence.

2. ACHIEVEMENTS OF JAINAS.

Perhaps the most creditable achievement of Jainas is in the field of literature. It has been already noticed that right from the Vedic period two different currents of thought and ways of life known as Brâhmaṇa culture and Śramana culture are prevalent in India. The Śramana culture is mainly represented by Jainas and Buddhists and of them Jainas were the first to propagate that culture. That is why from ancient times we have the Śramana literature besides the Brahmanic literature. The characteristic features of the Śramana literature are given as follows: It disregards the system of castes and Āśramas; its heroes are, as a rule, not gods and Rshis, but kings or merchants or even Śûdras. The subjects of poetry taken up by it are not Brahmanic myths and legends, but popular tales, fairy stories, fables and

-
1. Jain Hiralal: "Jainism: Its History, Philosophy and Religion", Cul. H. I., Vol. I, P. 222
 2. Col. Tod. J.: Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II, pp. 603-605.

parables. It likes to insist on the misery and sufferings of *Samsara* and it teaches a morality of compassion and *Ahimsa*, quite distinct from the ethics of Brahmanism with its ideals of the great sacrificer and generous supporter of the priests, and its strict adherence to the caste system.¹ The authors of this *Shramana* literature have contributed their full share to the religious, ethical, poetical, and scientific literature of ancient India. A close examination of the vast religious literature of the Jainas has been made by M. Winternitz in his "A History of Indian Literature".² The Jainas were foremost in composing various kinds of narrative literature like *Puranas*, *Charitras*, *Kathas*, *Prabandhas*, etc. Besides a very extensive body of poetical narrative, the non-canonical literature of the Jainas consists partly of an immense number of commentaries and partly of independent works on dogma, ethics, and monastic discipline. They also compiled legends of saints and composed works on ecclesiastical history.³ Always fond of storytelling, the Jainas were good story-tellers themselves, and have preserved to us numerous Indian tales that otherwise would have been lost. *Kavyas* and *Mahakavyas*, too, of renowned merit have been composed by Jaina poets. Lyrical and didactic poetry also are well represented in the literature of the Jainas. Apart from these, most valuable contributions have been made by the Jainas to Indian scientific and technical literature on various subjects like logic, philosophy, poetics, grammar, lexicography, astronomy, astrology, geography, mathematics and medicine. The Jainas have also paid special attention to the *Arthashastra* (or Politics) which is considered to be "a worldly science" par excellence. Thus there is hardly any branch of science that has not been ably treated by Jainas.⁴

The literature of the Jainas is also very important from the

1. Winternitz, M.: *Jains in the History of Indian Literature*. P. 5.
2. Also vide Weber: "Sacred Literature of the Jainas" J. A., Vols. XVII to XXI.
3. Macdonell, A. A.: *India's Past*, P. 72.
4. For a detailed description see Winternitz, M.: *Jains in the History of Indian Literature*, pp. 9-52.

point of view of the history of the Indian languages; for the Jainas always took care that their writings were accessible to considerable masses of the people. Hence the canonical writings and the earliest commentaries are written in Prakrit dialects and at a later period Sanskrit and various modern Indian languages were used by the Jainas.¹ It is not an exaggeration when Wilson says that every province of Hindusthan can produce Jaina compositions, either in Sanskrit or its vernacular idiom.² It has already been observed how the Jainas have enriched various provincial languages and especially Hindi, Gujarāthī, Kannada, Tamil and Telugu.³ Regarding the Jaina contribution to Kannada literature the great Kannada scholar R. Narasimhāchārya has remarked that "The earliest cultivators of the language were Jainas. The oldest works of any extent and value that have come down to us are all from the pen of the Jainas. The period of Jaina predominance in the literary field may justly be called the Augustan Age of Kannada literature. Jaina authors in Kannada are far more numerous than in Tamil. To name only a few, we have Pampa, Ponna, Ranna, Gupavarma, Nāgachandra, Nayasena, Nāgavarmā, Aggala, Nemichandra, Janna, Aḍdayya, Bandhuvarmā, and Madhura, authors whose works are admired as excellent specimens of poetic composition. It is only in Kannada that we have a Rāmāyaṇa and a Bhārata based on the Jaina tradition in addition to the same works based on Brahmanical tradition. Besides Kāvyas written by Jaina authors we have numerous works by them dealing with subjects such as grammar, rhetoric, prosody, mathematics, astrology, medicine, veterinary science, cookery and so forth. Altogether the number of Jaina authors in Kannada is nearly two hundred".⁴ As the Jainas have produced their vast

1. Winternitz, M. : History of Indian Literature, Vol. II., pp. 427-428.

2. Wilson, H. H. : Works by H. H. Wilson, Vol. I, P. 280.

3. See pp. 283-86 ante. For a detailed account of the contributions of Jainas to the development of Tamil language and literature see Chakravarti, A : Jaina Literature in Tamil.

4. Narasimhacharya, R. : History of Kannada Literature, pp. 63-66. In this connection also see Mugali, R.S. : The Heritage of Karnāṭaka, pp. 170-180.

literature in these languages from very ancient times, the Jainas have certainly played a very important part in the development of the different languages of India. The medium of sacred writings and preachings of the Brahmins has all along been Sanskrit and of the Bauddhas Pāli. But the Jainas alone utilised the prevailing languages of the different places, besides Sanskrit, Prakrit and Apabhramśa, for their religious propaganda as well as for the preservation of knowledge.¹ The Jainas thus occupy an important position in the history of the literature and civilisation of India.²

Along with literature the Jainas have always taken their due share in the development of the arts in the country. The Jainas have contributed their mite to enhance the glory of India in several branches of art and architecture. Compared with their number their contribution appears to be imposing. It must be remembered that Jainism did not create a special architecture of its own, for wherever the Jainas went they adopted the local building tradition. While in Northern India they followed the Vaishnava cult in building, in Southern India they adhered to the 'Dravidian' type.³ The Stūpas of the Jainas are indistinguishable in form from those of the Buddhists and a Jaina curvilinear steeple is identical in outline with that of a Brahmanical temple.⁴ Even though the Jainas have not evolved a distinct Jaina style of architecture, yet it must be said to their credit that they have produced numerous and finest specimens of architecture in different parts of the country. More than any other sect in India the Jainas have displayed their intense love of the picturesque while selecting the sites for the construction of their sacred buildings like temples, temple-cities, cave temples, Stūpas, pillars and towers. They have erected their temples either on

1. Jain, Hiralal : "Jainism: Its History, Philosophy and Religion", Cul. H. L., Vol. I, P. 222.

2. Macdonell, A. A. : India's Past, P. 75.

3. Havell, E. B. : The Ancient and Medieval Architecture of India; A study of Indo-Aryan Civilisation, P. 173.

4. Smith, V. A. : History of Fine Art in India and Ceylon, P. 9.

lovely hill-tops or in deep and secluded valleys.¹ It has already been noted that as the Jaina religion considers construction of temples as a meritorious act, the Jainas have constructed an unusually large number of temples throughout India.² Nearly 90 per cent of Jaina temples are the gifts of single wealthy individuals and as such the Jaina temples are distinguished for elaborate detail and exquisite finish.³

Of these innumerable Jaina temples, the two marble temples at Mount Abu in Rajaputana are considered as the most notable achievements of the Jainas in the domain of Art. The two temples are famous as unsurpassed models of Western or Gujrati style of architecture which is characterised by a free use of columns carved with all imaginable richness, strut brackets, and exquisite marble ceilings with cusped pendants. The temples are known for the beauty and delicacy of the carving and for the richness of the design.⁴ Again the Jaina temple at Rānapur in Mewar (which was built in 1440 A. D.) is the most complicated and extensive Jaina temple in India and the most complete for the ritual of the sect. The temple covers altogether about 48,000 sq. ft. of ground and on the merits of its design Fergusson remarks that "The immense number of parts in the building, and their general smallness, prevents its laying claim to anything like architectural grandeur; but their variety, their beauty of detail—no two pillars in the whole building being exactly alike—the grace with which they are arranged, the tasteful admixture of domes of different heights with flat ceilings, and the mode in which the light is introduced, combine to produce an excellent effect. Indeed I know of no other building in India, of the same class that leaves so pleasing an impression, or affords so many hints for the graceful arrangement of columns in an interior."⁵ The other temples of

1. Fergusson, J.: *History of Indian and Eastern Architecture*, Vol. II, P. 45.

2. See p. 243 ante.

3. Fergusson, J.: *op. cit.*, pp. 26-27.

4. Smith, V. A.: *op. cit.* p. 32.

5. Fergusson, J.: *op. cit.*, pp. 47-48.

such superb character are the temple of Pārvanātha at Khajurāho in Bundelakhaṇḍa,¹ the temple at Lakkundi in Karnāṭaka,² the Jinanāthapura Bastī (i. e. temple) near Śravaṇabelagola in Mysore,³ Seth Hāthisingh's temple at Ahmedabad,⁴ and the Hosa Bastī at Muḍabidri in South Kanara.⁵ It may be noted that the number of beautiful Jaina temples was considerably reduced during the Muslim period because the structure of Jaina temple was such that it could be easily converted into a mosque. The light columner style of the Jaina temples not only supplied materials more easily adopted to the purposes of Muslims, but furnished hints of which the Muslim architects were not slow to avail themselves. A mosque obtained in this way was, for convenience and beauty, unsurpassed by anything the Muslims afterwards erected from their own original designs.⁶ Thus the great mosques of Ajmer, Delhi, Kanauj, Dhar, and Ahmedabad are merely reconstructed temples of Hindus and Jainas. Further, the grouping together of their temples into what may be called "Cities of temples" is a peculiarity which the Jainas have practised to a greater extent than the followers of any other religion in India.⁷ Such notable temple-cities are found among other places at Śatruñjaya or Palitāṇa and Giranāra in Gujerāṭha, at Sammeda Śikhara in Bihar, at Sonāgiri in Bundelkhaṇḍa, at Muktagiri in Berar, at Kunthalagiri in the Deccan, at Śravaṇabelagola in Mysore and at Muḍabidri in South Kanara. Again the Jainas also, like the Buddhists, built several cave temples cut in rocks from the early times. But in dimensions the Jaina cave temples were smaller than those of Buddhist ones because the Jaina religion prescribed individualistic and not congregational ritual. The most numerous cave temples are in the

1. Fergusson, J.: op. cit. P. 50.

2. ibid, pp. 23-24.

3. Smith, V. A.: op. cit., P. 270.

4. Fergusson, J.: op. cit., P. 64.

5. ibid, pp. 76.

6. ibid, pp. 7 and 69.

7. ibid, P. 24.

Udayagiri and Khapdagiri Hills in Orissa. The picturesqueness of their forms, the character of their sculptures and architectural details combined with their great antiquity render them one of the most important groups of caves in India. These and those of Junagadh in Gujarat belong to the second century B.C. while the others are of a later date of which the important ones are found at Aihole and Badami in Bijapur District, at Ankai and Patana in Khandesh District, at Ellora and Osmanabad in the Hyderabad State, at Chamara Lenä near Nasik and at Kalugumalai in Tinnevelly District.¹ Like the Buddhists Jainas also erected Stūpas, in honour of their saints with their accessories of stone railings, decorated gateways, stone umbrellas, elaborate carved pillars and abundant statues. Early examples of these have been discovered in the Kānkali mound near Mathurā and they are supposed to belong to the first century B.C.²

Another remarkable contribution of the Jainas in the field of architecture is the creation of many pillars or stambhas of pleasing design and singular grace which are found attached to many of their temples. Fergusson thinks that it may be owing to the styloclastic propensities of the Muslims that these pillars are not found so frequently where they have held sway, as in the remoter parts of India; but, whether from this cause or not, they seem to be more frequent in Kanara and among the Southern Jainas than in any other part of India. Fergusson further suggests that there may be some connection between these Jaina stambhas and the obelisks of the Egyptians.³ Regarding these Jaina pillars in Kanara Mr. Walhouse has remarked that "The whole capital and canopy are a wonder of light, elegant, highly decorated stone work, and nothing can surpass the stately grace of these beautiful pillars whose proportions and adaptation to surrounding scenery are always perfect, and whose richness of decoration

1. Fergusson, J.: op. cit., Vol. II, Book V, Chap II.

2. (i) Jain Hirale, : " Jainism ; Its History, Philosophy and Religion " Cul. H. I., Vol. I, P. 223.

(ii) Smith, V. A.: op. cit., pp. 82 and 144.

3. Fergusson, J.: op. cit., P. 82.

never offends."¹ According to Smith, in the whole range of Indian Art there is nothing perhaps equal to these Kanara pillars for good taste.²

There is evidence to show that apart from pillars the Jainas, especially from Northern India, might have constructed a great number of towers dedicated to their Tirthankaras. There is such a tower which is still adorning Chitor in Mewar and it is considered as one of the best preserved monuments in India. This Jaina Tower at Chitor is a singularly elegant specimen of its class, about 75 feet in height and adorned with sculpture and mouldings from the base to the summit. The tower was constructed in the 12th century and was dedicated to Ādinātha, the first of the Jaina Tirthankaras, and nude figures of them are repeated some hundreds of time on the face of the tower.³

The innumerable specimens of Jaina sculpture found in practically all parts of India show that the Jainas enlisted the services of sculptors from very ancient times. Their most common form of sculpture up to this day is modelling of images or statues of their Tirthankaras.⁴ But in giving shape to these figures no scope at all was given for the freeplay of imagination of individual sculptors as regular rules regarding the form and pose of statues of Tirthankaras had been prescribed by the Jaina religion from the very beginning.⁵ Consequently practically all Jaina images pertain to one class and therefore Jaina images from any parts of the country cannot be distinguished from their style even though they belong to different ages altogether. It is significant to note that the Jaina images have been made of all substances and sizes and are almost always invariable in attitude, whether that be seated

1. I. A., Vol. V., P. 39.

2. Smith, V. A.: op. cit., P. 22.

3. (i) Fergusson, J.: op. cit., pp. 57-59.

(ii) Col. Tod: Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II,
pp. 604-608.

4. In 1889 the number of separate Jaina images in the several temples at Pālitānā was 6,449 exclusive of small ones on slabs. Vide Fergusson, J. op. cit., P. 26.

5. Bhattacharya, B. C.: Jaina Iconography, pp. 27-29.

or standing. Small images are made of crystal, alabaster, soapstone, bloodstone, and various other precious and semi-precious materials; while the larger ones are carved from whatever kind of stone happens to be locally available.¹ Undoubtedly the most remarkable of the Jaina statues are the celebrated colossi of Southern India, the largest free standing statues in Asia, which are three in number, situated respectively at Śravanabelagola in Mysore (constructed in 983 A. D. and 56½ feet in height), at Kārakala in South Kanara (constructed in 1432 A. D. and about 41 feet in height) and at Yēṣṭra or Veṣṭra in South Kanara (constructed in 1604 A. D. and 35 feet in height). All three, being set on the top of eminences, are visible for miles around, and inspite of their formalism command respectful attention by their enormous mass and expression of dignified serenity. By all means these statues are among the most remarkable works of native art in the South of India.²

Regarding the unrivalled progress of the Jainas in decorative sculpture, as distinguished from individual statuary, Smith remarks that "The Jainas encouraged the work of a high order of excellence and beauty, employed to adorn with the utmost possible magnificence the pillared chambers which were their favourite form of architecture. Nothing in the world can surpass for richness and delicacy of detail the marble columns and ceilings of the Mount Abu temples and it would be easy to fill a large volume with illustrations of more or less similar exquisite work in many localities".³

As Jainism is an original system, quite distinct and independent from all others, the Jainas have developed a separate philosophy which is regarded as a valuable contribution to the Indian philosophy. In philosophy the Jainas occupy a distinct position between the Brahmanic and Buddhist philosophical systems. This has been shown very clearly by H. Jacobi in his

1. I. A., Vol. V, P. 38.

2. (i) Smith V. A.: op. cit., P. 268.

(ii) Fergusson, J.: op. cit., pp. 72-73.

3. Smith, V. A.: op. cit., P. 270.

paper on "The Metaphysics and Ethics of the Jainas".¹ Regarding the problem of Being the three hold different opinions. The Vedāntins consider that underlying and upholding from within all things there is one absolute permanent Being, without change and with none other like it. On the contrary the Buddhists hold that all things are transitory. The Jainas, however, contend that Being is joined to production, continuation, destruction and they call their theory the theory of multiple view points (*anekāntavāda*), in contradistinction to the theory of permanency (*nityavāda*) of the Vedāntins, and to the theory of transitoriness (*vināśavāda*) of the Buddhists. The Jainas think that the existing things are permanent only as regards their substance, but their accidents or qualities originate and perish. The significance of this Jaina theory of Being comes out more clearly when it is regarded in relation to the doctrines of *Syādvāda* and of the *Nayas*. According to the doctrine of *Syādvāda* any proposition about an existing thing must, somehow, reflect the manysidedness of Being, i.e., any metaphysical proposition is right from one point of view, and the contrary proposition is also right from another. The *Nayas* are ways of expressing the nature of things; all these ways of judgment are, according to the Jainas, one-sided, and they contain out a part of truth. The doctrine of the *Nayas* is, thus, the logical complement to the *Syādvāda* which is an outcome of the theory of the manysidedness of Being. From this Jacobi affirms that the Jaina theory of Being is an indication of the commonsense view.

As the Jainas have evolved a philosophy of their own, they follow a distinct ethical code based on their philosophy. The Jaina ethics stands as a class by itself in the sense that it is the only system which is founded on the main principle of *Ahimsā*. It has already been noted how the principle of *Ahimsā* forms the basis of various rules of conduct prescribed for both the Jaina laymen and ascetics.² Thus one of the significant contributions of the Jainas is the *Ahimsā* culture. If the Jainas are known for anything it is for the evolution of *Ahimsā* culture and it must be said

1. Vide H. Jacobi.: Studies in Jainism, (edited by Jina Vijaya Muni), pp. 48-60.

2. See pages 230-231 ante.

to the credit of the Jainas that they practised and propagated that culture from ancient times. The antiquity and continuity of *Ahimsā* culture is mainly due to the incessant efforts of the Jaina Āchāryas. Naturally wherever the Jainas were in great numbers and wielded some influence they tried to spread *Ahimsā* culture among the masses. That is why we find that the provinces of Karnātaka and Gujārātha, which are the strongholds of Jainas from the beginning, are mainly vegetarian. In fact it is admitted that as a result of the activities of the Jainas for the last so many centuries *Ahimsā* still forms the substratum of Indian character as a whole.¹

Apart from the development of language and literature, art and architecture, and philosophy and ethics, the Jainas distinguished themselves in giving their unstinted support for the improvement of political and economic life in the country. The Jainas, especially in Southern and Western India, produced a large number of eminent and efficient monarchs, ministers and generals and thereby contributed to maintain and improve the political conditions of the people. Not only the ordinary Jainas but their saints or Āchāryas also aided materially to create the proper political environment necessary for the resuscitation of the life in the country. It is considered that due to the keen interest taken by the Jaina *gurus*, i. e., preceptors in political affairs of the country, Jainism occupies an important place in the history of India.² The Jaina ascetics were never indifferent towards the secular affairs in general. We know from the account of Megasthenes that, in the 4th century B. C., the Sarmanes or Jaina ascetics who lived in the woods were frequently consulted by the kings through their messengers regarding the cause of things.³ So far as Karnātaka was concerned Jainism throughout its course of more than one thousand years was an example of a religion which showed that religious tenets were practised without sacrificing the

1. (i) Sharma, S. R.: Jainism and Karnātaka Culture, P. 150.

(ii) Mugali, R. S.: Heritage of Karnātaka, P. 140.

2. Saletoe, B. A.: Medieval Jainism, P. 60.

3. McCrindle, J. W.: Ancient India as described by Magasthenes and Arrian, P. 192.

political exigencies when the question of rejuvenating life in the country was at stake. That is why in Karnātaka we find that the Jaina Āchāryas ceased to be merely exponents of dogmas and turned themselves into creators of kingdoms.¹ It has already been noted that the Jaina Saints were virtually responsible for the founding of the Gaṅga Kingdom in the 2nd century A. D. and the Hoyasala kingdom in the 11th century A. D.²

In fact the most creditable achievement of Jainas is their survival from ancient times up to the present day. The Jainas and the Buddhists were the main representatives of Śramana culture in India and it is pertinent to note that while Buddhism disappeared from the land of its birth, though it survives in other parts of the world, Jainism is still a living faith in India though it never spread outside India with the exception perhaps of Ceylon. Let us see, in brief, the reasons responsible for the continuous survival of Jainas in India.

3. REASONS FOR SURVIVAL OF JAINAS

Perhaps the most important reason which contributed to the continued existence of the Jaina community to the present day is the excellent organisation of the community. The significant part of the Jaina organisation is the fact that the laity has been made an integral part of the community. The community has been traditionally divided into four groups, viz., *Sādhus* or male ascetics, *Sādhvīs* or female ascetics, *Śrāvakas* or male laity and *Śrāvikās* or female laity, and these groups have been bound together by very close relations. The same *Vratas* or religious vows are prescribed for ascetics and laity with only difference that the ascetics have to observe them more scrupulously while the laity is allowed to follow them in a less severe manner. The laity is made completely responsible for the livelihood of the ascetics and to that extent the latter are dependent on the former. From the beginning ascetics have controlled the religious life of the lay disciples and the lay disciples have kept a strict control over the

1. Saltetore, B. A. Medieval Jainism, P. 7.

2. Vide Section 1 (II) of this chapter

character of the ascetics. That is why the ascetics are required to keep themselves entirely aloof from worldly matters and to rigorously maintain their high standard of ascetic life. If they fall short of their requirements they are likely to be removed from their positions.¹ Instances of excommunication of Jaina Sādhus for the breach of the rules of conduct are still common in Gujarrātha and Rajputana.² As an ascetic is generally attached to a *Gāṇa* or section and *Gachchha* or sub-section of Jainas and naturally persons belonging to a particular *Gāṇa* or *Gachchha* can control the ascetics of their *Gāṇa* or *Gachchha*. Thus, for example, the *Tapā Gachchha* ascetics are controlled by the *Tapā Gachchha* people. Recently many of these *Gachchhas* have written constitutions of their sections and in that they assert this right also. In the rules and regulations framed in 1941 of the *Lokā Gachchha* of Bombay City it has been specifically mentioned that, "If any of the ascetics or *Śripūjya* (i. e. the head of a group of ascetics) behaves against the tenets and customs of the *Lokā Gachchha Saṅgha*, the general body of members of the saṅgha shall have power to remove such ascetics or *Śripūjya* from his office ".³ In this connection H. Jacobi rightly remarks as follows. "It is evident that the lay part of the community were not regarded as outsiders, or only as friends and patrons of the Order, as seems to have been the case in early Buddhism; their position was, from the beginning, well defined by religious duties and privileges; the bond which united them to the Order of monks was an effective one..... It cannot be doubted that this close union between laymen and monks brought about by the similarity of their religious duties, differing not in kind, but in degree, had enabled Jainism to avoid fundamental changes within, and to resist dangers from without for more than two thousand years, while Buddhism, being less exacting as regards the laymen, underwent the most extraordinary evolutions and finally disappeared in the country of its origin."⁴

1. Glasenapp, R. V.: Jainism, pp. 338-340.

2. Stevenson, S.: Heart of Jainism, pp. 211-212.

3. "Shree Bombay Lokāgutchha Jain Saṅgha" (Established 1885), Rules and regulations, Bombay, 1941, P. 25.

4. Jacobi, H. "Jainism", E. R. E., Vol. 7, P. 470.

Another important reason for the survival of the Jaina community is its inflexible conservatism in holding fast to its original institutions and doctrines for the last so many centuries. The most important doctrines of the Jaina religion have remained practically unaltered up to this day and, although a number of the less vital rules concerning the life and practices of monks and laymen may have fallen into disuse or oblivion, there is no reason to doubt that the religious life of the Jaina community is now substantially the same as it was two thousand years ago. This strict adherence to religious prescriptions will also be evident from Jaina architecture and especially from Jaina sculpture, for the style of Jaina images has remained the same to such an extent that the Jaina images differing in age by a thousand years are almost indistinguishable in style. Thus an absolute refusal to admit changes has been considered as the strongest safeguard of the Jainas.¹

The royal patronage which Jainism had received during the ancient and medieval periods in different parts of the country has undoubtedly helped the struggle of the Jaina community for its survival. The Karnātaka and Gujerātha continued to remain as strongholds of Jainas from the ancient times because many rulers, ministers and generals of renowned merit from Karnātaka and Gujerātha were of Jaina religion. Apart from Jaina rulers many non-Jaina rulers also showed sympathetic attitude towards the Jaina religion. From the edicts of Rajputana it will be seen that in compliance with the doctrines of Jainism orders were issued in some towns to stop the slaying of animals throughout the year and to suspend the revolutions of oil-mill and potter's wheel during the four months of the rainy season every year.² Several inscriptions from the South reveal the keen interest taken by non-Jaina rulers in facilitating the Jainas to observe their religion. Among these the most outstanding is the stone inscription dated

1. (i) Cambridge History of India, Vol. I, P. 169.

(ii) Smith, V. A.: History of Fine Art in India and Ceylon, P. 267.

2. Col. Tod, J.: Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II, pp. 606, 646 and 647.

1368 A. D. of the Vijayanagara monarch Bukka Rāya I. When the Jainas of all districts appealed in a body for protection against their persecution by the Vaishnavas, the king after summoning the leaders of both sects before him declared that no difference could be made between them and ordained that they should each pursue their own religious practices with equal freedom.¹

The varied activities of a large number of eminent Jaina saints contributed to the continuation of Jaina community for a long period because these activities produced a deep impression upon the general public regarding the sterling qualities of Jaina saints. They were mainly responsible for the spread of Jainism all over India. The chronicles of Ceylon attest that Jainism also spread in Ceylon.² As regards the South India it can be maintained that the whole of it in ancient times was strewn with small groups of learned Jaina ascetics who were slowly but surely spreading their morals through the medium of their sacred literature composed in the various vernaculars of the country.³ These literary and missionary activities of the Jaina saints ultimately helped the Jainas in South India to strengthen their position for a long time in the face of Hindu revival. The important Jaina saints and writers from the South were Kunda Kunda, Umāsvāti, Samantabhadra, Pūjyapāda, Akalaṅka, Vidyānandin, Māṇikyanandin, Prabhāchandra, Jināsena I., Gupabhadra, Somadeva, Pampa and Ranna.⁴ Of these illustrious persons Āchārya Samantabhadra and Āchārya Akalaṅka were the foremost in their zeal of spread of Jainism. Samantabhadra in the 2nd century A.D. toured all over India and defeated his opponents in the public disputations. Similarly Akalaṅka defeated the Buddhists in public disputation at Kāñchi in the 7th or 8th century A.D. in

1. Heras, Rev. H.: *The Aravidu Dynasty of Vijayanagara*, Vol. I, pp. 538-539.

2. Law, B. C.: *Mahāvīra: His Life and Teachings*, P. 57.

3. M. S. R. Ayyangar: *Studies in South Indian Jainism*. Pt. I, P. 105.

4. (i) Altekar, A. S.: *Rāshtrakūṭas and their Times*, P. 272.

(ii) S. Śrīkaṇṭha Śāstria: *Sources of Karnāṭaka History*, Vol. I, Introduction, P. xxi.

consequence of which they were banished to Ceylon.¹ Even in political matters the Jaina saints were taking keen interest and guiding the people whenever required. It has already been noted that the Gaṅgas and the Hoyasalas were inspired to establish new kingdoms by the Jaina Āchāryas. Along with the carrying of these scholastic, missionary and political activities, the Jaina Āchāryas tried to excel in their personal accomplishments also. In a work called *Pūjyapādacharita* the names of 37 arts and sciences mastered by Āchārya Pūjyapāda are given.² In the 7th century A. D. the famous Chinese pilgrim Hiuen Tsiang had heard of old time that the Nirgranthas (i.e. the Jaina ascetics) were skilled in divination.³ Naturally princes and people alike had a great regard for the Jaina saints in different parts of the country. Even the muslim rulers of Delhi honoured and showed reverence to the learned Jaina teachers of South India.⁴ Regarding the influence of Jaina saints in Rajputana Col. Tod remarks that " To show the respect in which the high priests of the Jainas are held, the princes of Rajputana invariably advance outside the walls of their capital to receive and conduct them to it— a mark of respect paid only to princes. On the occasion of the high priest of the *Khaḍataras*⁵ passing through Udaipur, the Rāpā received him with every distinction."⁶ It is no wonder that the character and activities of such influential Jaina saints created an atmosphere which helped to lengthen the life of Jaina community.

A minority community for its continued existence has always to depend on the goodwill of the other people and that goodwill could be persistently secured by performing some benevolent acti-

1. Rice, B. L. : Mysore and Coorg from the Inscriptions, pp. 196-197 and 203.

Akalaṇka, according to Akalaṇkacharita, is assigned to 542 A. D. vide S. Śrikāṇṭha Śāstri : Sources of Karnāṭaka History, Vol. I, P. 54.

2. B. S. Rao : Studies in South Indian Jainism, Part II, P. 86.

3. Beal, S. : The Life of Hiuen-Tsiang, P. 166.

4. Vide Saletoye, B. A. : " Delhi Sultans as patrons of Jaina Gurus of Karnāṭaka ", Karnāṭaka Historical Review, Vol. IV, pp. 77-86.

5. i. e. people belonging to the *Khaḍatara Gachchha* of Jainas.

6. Col. Tod. : Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthan, Vol. II, P. 603.

vities. The Jainas did follow and are still following this path of attaining the goodwill of all people by various means like educating the masses and alleviating the pain and misery of people by conducting several types of charitable institutions. From the beginning the Jainas made it one of their cardinal principles to give the four gifts of food, protection, medicine and learning to the needy (*āhāra-abhaya—bhaishajya-sāstra-dāna*)—irrespective of caste and creed. According to some this was by far the most potent factor in the propagation of the Jaina religion.¹ For this they established alm-houses, rest-houses, dispensaries and schools wherever they were concentrated in good numbers. It must be noted to the credit of the Jainas that they took a leading part in the education of the masses. Various relics show that formerly Jaina ascetics took a great share in teaching children in the Southern countries, viz., Āndhra, Tamil, Karnātaka and Mahārāshṭra.² In this connection Dr. Altekar rightly observes that before the beginning of the alphabet proper the children should be required to pay homage to Gapeśa, by reciting the formula “*Śri Gaṇeśaya Namaḥ*”, is natural in Hindu society, but that in the Deccan even today it should be followed by the Jaina formula “*Om Namaḥ Siddham*” shows that the Jaina teachers of mediæval age had so completely controlled the mass education that the Hindus continued to teach their children this originally Jaina formula even after the decline of Jainism.³ Even now the Jainas have rigorously maintained the tradition by giving freely these four types of gifts in all parts of India. In fact the Jainas never lag behind in liberally contributing to any national or philanthropic cause.

Another important factor which helped the continuation of the Jaina community is the cordial and intimate relations maintained by the Jainas with the Hindus. Formerly it was thought that Jainism was a branch either of Buddhism or of Hinduism. But now it is generally accepted that Jainism is a distinct religion and that it is as old as, if not older than, the Vedic religion of the

1. Saletoye, B.A.: Medieval Jainism, P. 269.

2. Vaidya, C. V.: History of Medieval Hindu India, Vol. III, P. 407.

3. Altekar, A. S.: Rāshṭrakūṭas and their Times, P. 310.

Hindus. As Jainism, Hinduism and Buddhism, the three important ancient religions of India, are living side by side for the last so many centuries, it is natural that they have influenced one another in many respects. In matters like theories of rebirth and salvation, descriptions of heaven, earth and hell, and belief in the fact that the prophets of religion take birth according to prescribed rule, we find similarities in the three religions. Since the disappearance of Buddhism from India the Jainas and Hindus came more close to each other and that is why in social and religious life the Jainas on the whole do not appear to be much different from the Hindus. It has already been noted that in matters like superstitious beliefs and practices, religious festivals and fasts, occupations and professions, dress and ornaments, *Sāṃskāras* or sacraments and language and general outlook on life, there are various common things between the Jainas and Hindus, and especially the vegetarian Hindus. There are certain castes whose members are found in both the communities and to some extent marital relations are still maintained between the Jaina and Hindu sections of the same caste. From these things it should not be considered that the Jainas are a part of the Hindus or Jainism is a branch of Hinduism. In fact if we compare Jainism and Hinduism, we find that the differences between them are very great and their agreement is in respect of a few particulars only concerning the ordinary mode of living. Even the ceremonies which appear to be similar are in reality different in respect of their purport if carefully studied. The sacred books of the Hindus like Vedas, *Smṛtis*, *Purāṇas*, etc. are not accepted by the Jainas and the Hindus also do not recognise even a single scripture of the Jainas. While the Jainas regard the world as eternal, the Hindus hold it to have been made by a creator. In Jainism worship is not offered to an eternal and eternally pure God, but to those Great Ones who have realised their high ideal and attained to Godhood themselves; in Hinduism worship is performed of many forms of one God who is the creator and the ruler of the world. The significance of worship in Hinduism is also not the same as that in Jainism. In Jainism there is no offering of food and the like, nor is a prayer made to the deity for boons. In Hinduism the attainment of the

object is by the will of certain divine beings who are to be propitiated.¹ The animal sacrifices practised by the Hindus have no place in Jainism. The Hindus believe that Gods alone can attain salvation, while the Jainas consider that it is the right of human beings only. The Hindus regard Karma as an invisible power but the Jainas think it as a form of matter which can stick to the soul. In Jainism there are various principles like *Dharma*, *Adharma*, *Leśhyā*, *Gunasthāna*, etc. which are not found in Hindu spiritual ideology.² The Jaina Gods, temples, places of pilgrimage, holy days, fasts, festivals and rituals are quite different from those of the Hindus.³ While the Hindus consider marriage as a religious sacrament, the Jainas regard it as a civil contract. The begetting of male children is prescribed by Hinduism for the spiritual welfare of the people; but in Jainism the presence or absence of a son does not make any difference in the spiritual progress of a person. The peculiarly Hindu practices like Niyoga and Sati are not approved by the Jainas.⁴ Further a large number of Hindu religious practices, which are repugnant to Jainism, have been termed as *Mūḍha* or stupid customs and beliefs and the true Jainas are required to be absolutely free from them. They are sun-worship, bath during eclipses, giving away money on Saṅkrānti days, the morning and evening ablutions, fire-worship, the worship of edifices, ceremonial bathing in rivers and the ocean, adoration of trees, stūpas, and sacred offerings of boiled rice, religious suicide by falling from a precipice, bowing at the tail of a cow and taking cow's urine, and the worship of jewels, conveyances, weapons, the earth and the mountains.⁵

From the facts mentioned above it is evident that there are several items of social and religious practices on which there are basic differences between the Jainas and the Hindus. It is pertinent to note that these differences are persisting even up to the present day. At the same time it will have to be admitted that

1. Jain, C. R.: *Jain Law*, pp. 14-22.

2. Glasenapp, H.: *Jainism*, pp. 453-456.

3. Vide Chapter V ante.

4. Vide Chapter V ante.

Handiqui, K. K.: *Yājñastīlaka and Indian Culture*, pp. 253-254.

there had been an infiltration of non-Jaina elements into Jaina social and religious usages. It is not that the Jainas blindly accepted these non-Jaina elements. Perhaps the Jainas had to allow the infiltration of non-Jaina element as an adjustment to changed circumstances. Various reasons can be given as to why the Jainas knowingly permitted some of their members to follow obviously non-Jaina customs and manners. In the first place, new converts to Jainism could not be expected to discard their previous practices in toto and to observe all the Jaina practices at once. Some concession will have to be shown to them if the proselytising activities are to continue and the number of Jainas is to increase. In this way we find that the observance of some of the Hindu religious practices referred to above was connived at by the Jainas even though it was repugnant to Jainism. In fact it was prescribed by Jaina Āchāryas that "if a convert to Jainism cannot altogether renounce all his false beliefs, he ought to be given a mixed reception, but it is not advisable to discard him altogether."¹ Secondly, in times of calamity changes are sometimes effected in the religious practices to preserve religion and life and the Jainas had to follow the same course. In the past the Hindus committed many acts of oppression against the Jaina saints and householders. Under these circumstances the Jainas took the shelter of Brahmanical greed and began to employ the Brahmins for the performance of their social ceremonies, so as to preserve themselves in that way. The practice has continued and even in day Brahmins are employed by some Jainas to assist in the performance of marriage and other ceremonies at various stages in certain parts of the country. In some Jaina temples Hindus are employed to perform daily *Pūjā* or worship. To soften and appease Brahmanical hatred interpolations embodying Brahmanical ritual appear to have been made in some of the Jaina books. Probably this was the only means left under the circumstances of preserving the Jaina religion and the Jaina community. Some of the Hindu gods

1. तथापि यदि मृदत्वं न रपेत् कोऽपि सर्वथा !
मिथ्येनानुमान्योऽसौ सर्वनाशो न चन्द्रः ॥

were also given minor seats in the Jaina temples with a similar motive. They are termed Kshetrapāla i.e. the Protectors of the place. Even at present the worship of non-Jaina gods and goddesses is indulged into by some Jainas.¹ Thirdly, it was impossible for Jainism to remain unaffected by influences of local customs, beliefs and cults. As a small number of Jainas had to live amidst the non-Jainas, and especially among the Hindus, it is but natural for them to adopt the Hindu practices. That is why we find some Jainas observing the customs like wearing the sacred thread, participating in Hindu festivals, keeping days in memory of the dead, offering of rice-balls to the crows on the 10th day after the death, asking boons from the gods, believing in ghosts and spirits worshipping non-Jaina deities, etc. Thus the Jainas, as a policy for survival, willingly accepted the infiltration of non-Jaina element in Jaina practices. But in doing so they made every attempt to maintain the purity of religious practices as far as possible. The Jaina Āchāryas, mainly with a view to maintain the continuity of the Jaina community in troubled times, did not oppose but on the contrary gave tacit sanction to the observance of local customs and manners by the Jainas. In this connection Somadeva, the most learned Jaina Āchārya of medieval age in the South, observes in his Yaśastilaka-Champu that

द्वौ हि धर्मौ गृहस्थानां लौकिकः पारलौकिकः ।
लोकाश्रयो भवेदाद्यः परः स्थादागमाश्रयः ॥
सर्वे एव हि जैनानां प्रमाणं लौकिको विधिः ।
यत्र सम्यक्त्वहानिन् यत्र न ब्रतदूषणम् ॥

the religion of Jaina householders is of two varieties, *Laukika*, i.e., this worldly, and *Pāralaukika*, i.e. the other-worldly; the former is based upon popular usage and the latter on the scriptures. Further, it is legitimate for the Jainas to follow any custom or practice sanctioned by popular usage so long as it does not come into conflict with the fundamental principles of the Jaina faith or the

1. (i) Jain, C. R.: *Jain Law*, pp. 14-22.

(ii) Jain, C. R.: *Rishabha Deva, the Founder of Jainism*, Introduction, P. 8.

moral and disciplinary vows enjoined by the religion. It thus means that by showing the leniency to the Jainas in observing the well established local practices, provided they do not harm the highest principles of Jainism, a conscious effort was made by the Jainas to adjust to the adverse circumstances. This wise adjustment ultimately created cordial and intimate relations with Hindus and it appears that due to this policy the Jainas were saved from complete extinction at the hands of persecutionists and they could keep their existence for the last so many centuries. In fact the Jainas had made determined efforts to maintain good relations not only with the Hindus but with the members of other communities also. Even though the Jainas were in power for a long time they hardly indulged in the persecution of non-Jainas, whereas we find innumerable instances where Jainas were severely persecuted by non-Jainas.¹

4. CAUSES OF DECLINE OF JAINISM

It is true that the Jainas have managed to maintain their existence as a separate community for the last so many centuries and that in this long period they have made noteworthy contributions to the cultural progress of India. But the achievements of Jainas in various fields of activities pertain to the ancient and medieval period. Since the middle ages the Jainas are declining day by day in number and their influence is continuously waning. If the same process continues it is likely that the Jaina community will have to face total extinction within a period of few centuries. Before making any proposal as to how this position of continuous decline should be remedied, it is necessary to find out the causes mainly responsible for the downfall of the Jaina community.

The spread of a religion to a large extent depends on the amount of royal patronage it receives and the conviction with which it is propounded by its monks and followers. In the ancient and medieval period the numerical strength of the Jaina community was quite good because Jainism was actively supported by the ruling chiefs in different parts of the country and it was propagated

¹ Sharma, S. R.: Jainism and Karnāṭaka Culture, P. 150.

by some of the intellectual gems of the time. It is estimated that during the Rāshtrakūṭa period (i.e. from 750 to 1000 A.D.) at least one third of the total population of the Deccan was following the gospel of Mahāvīra.¹ That the Jaina religion was one of the popular religions of India in the past could be seen from the large number of Jaina relics found all over India. But with the advent of Muslims in North India and the fall of the Vijayanagara Empire in South India Jainism completely lost the royal support. When the days of royal patronage were gone, never to return, the ascetic order of the community not only fell in number but became very slack in its duties. The ascetics in the later period never showed any enthusiasm in their ordinary activities like preaching and proselytising. There were no intellectual giants, unselfish workers and renowned saints like Bhadrabāhu, Kundakunda, Samantabhadra, Akalaṅka Haribhadra, Jinasena, Umāsvāti, Hemachandra and Siddhasena Divākara. Naturally they could not influence the people by their actions and bring them into the Jaina community. Thus with the lapse of royal support and stoppage of converting people to Jainism due to slackness of its teachers, there was no hope for the Jaina religion to increase the number of its followers.

When the Jaina community was in such a position that it could not augment the number of its members, it was faced with a calamity of severe persecution of its members by the other religionists—especially Brahmins, Liṅgāyatas or Viraśaivas and Muslims. After gaining the ascendancy the Brahmins reduced the Jainas to the lowest depths of subjection. They threw out the idols in Jaina temples and converted them into Brahmanic ones,² destroyed the objects of the cult, deprived the Jainas of all freedom, both religious and civil, banished them from public employment and all positions of trust; in fact, they persecuted them to such an extent that they succeeded in removing nearly all traces of these Jainas in several provinces where formerly they

1. Altekar, A. S.: *Rāshtrakūṭas and their Times*, P. 313.

2. Bhandarkar, R. G.: *The Early History of the Deccan*, P. 133.

had been most flourishing.¹ Traces of this old hostility between Jainas and Hindus survive in the Hindu saying that

हस्तिना ताङ्गमनोऽपि न गच्छेज्जैनमंदिरम्।

One should not take refuge in a Jaina Temple, even to escape from mad elephant and in the rule that a Jaina beggar will not take alms from a Hindu unless he can perform some service in return, though it may not equal the value of the alms.² The position of the Jaina religion in the South was much shaken through persecution. King Sundara of the Pāṇḍya dynasty, in the middle of the seventh century, at the instigation of the famous saint Tirujñānasambandara, the arch-enemy of Jainism, persecuted the Jainas with the most savage cruelty and inflicted on no less than eight thousand innocent persons a horrible death by impalement. The memory of this bloody episode is constantly kept alive in the series of frescoes recorded on the wall of the Mantapam of the Golden Lotus Tank of the famous Minākshi temple at Madura. As though it was not sufficient to humiliate the Jainas, the whole tragedy is gone through at five of the twelve annual festivals at the Madura temple, on which occasion an image representing a Jaina impaled on a stake is carried in procession.³ In the Vijayanagara Empire the Jaina people known as Pāptchurhis were destroyed by the Brāhmaṇas in the times of Adondai, and some embraced the Brahmanical system.⁴ Such persecutions were largely responsible for the final overthrow of Jainism in south India. In Karnātaka the Jainas were persecuted by the Vīraśaivas and in Gujerātha and Māravāda they were persecuted by the Brahmins. A tradition at Pattan says that Śankarāchārya

1. Dubois, A. J. A. : Hindu Manners, Customs and Ceremonies, pp. 694-695.
2. Russel, R. V. : T. C. C. P., Vol. I, pp. 225-226.
3. (i) Smith, V. A. : Early History of India, pp. 474-475.
 (ii) Ayyangar, M.S.R. : Studies in South Indian Jainism, Part I, pp. 79-80.
 (iii) Thurston, E. : T.C.S.I. Vol. II, pp. 437-438.
 (iv) Nilakanta Sastry, N.K. : Pāṇḍyan Kingdom, pp. 96-97.
4. Saletore, B.A. : Social and Political Life in Vijayanagara Empire, Vol. II, P. 54.

effected the destruction of a number of Jaina priests in that city, and the spot in which they are supposed to have met their fate is to this day called the Lāchochāra.¹ It is reported that the Brahmins were actively aggressive against the Jainas even in the 19th century and were used to take forcible possession of their temples and convert them into Hindu temples.² In the Central Provinces the best Jaina temples are found in very remote spots and it is suggested that they were built at times when the Jainas had to hide in such places to avoid Hindu persecution.³ In North India from time to time fanatic kings indulged in savage outbursts of cruelty and committed genuine acts of persecution directed against Jainas or Buddhists as such.⁴ Thus the persecution of the Jainas in different parts of India hastened their decline which had already gained some momentum due to the loss of royal patronage and slackness of the monastic order.

The strength of the Jaina community was further weakened when various religious and social divisions arose in the community. It has already been noted that the Jaina Church was one and undivided upto 81 A. D. but from that year it was divided into two major divisions, viz., the Digambara and the Śvetāmbara. These sects were further divided into small sub-sects and groups like Gapa and Gachchha and strangely enough these groups came into existence solely due to the trivial differences between the ascetics. Some of the divisions were no doubt revolutionary in the sense that they completely renounced idol-worship and took to the worship of the scripture only. As the underlying philosophy is common to all sects and sub-sects, really speaking there is no reason why animosity should arise among them. But actually the sectarian feelings have gained such an upper hand that the various sects and sub-sects not only hate one another but try to grab

1. Lt. Col. William Miles: "On the Jains of Gujarat and Marwar," Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. III, 1835, pp. 344-345.

2. Journal of Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland, Vol. 9, 1877, pp. 172-173.

3. Russel, R. V.: T. C. C. P., Vol. I, P. 227.

4. Smith, V. A.: Early History of India, P. 213.

what the others have got. Naturally the Jainas think always of their sub-sect or sect and never of Jainism as a whole. In these circumstances it is obvious that there is no powerful common religious bond which can bring all Jainas together. What is true of religious divisions is equally true of social divisions. The Jaina system of social organisation was, in the beginning, based on the distinction of function. Birth was not considered as a criterion for determining the status of a person in society. But later on a large number of castes and sub-castes arose in the small Jaina community and today the Jainas are as caste-ridden as the Hindus are. Naturally the castes have fostered separatist tendencies, have created cultural gulfs between the castes, and have stood in the way of social unity in the Jaina community.

5. PRESENT PROBLEMS AND THE WAY OUT

At present the Jaina community is faced with various problems which are clamouring for solution. Of these some are of recent origin. The problems like whether the Harijans should be allowed to enter the Jaina temples or not, whether the Jaina ascetics should be excluded from the application of Beggars' Act or not, whether the properties attached to the Jaina temples and Mathas or monasteries and religious endowments should be controlled by the Government or not, whether the term 'Hindu' includes the Jainas or not, etc. are the outcome of the past few years and have arisen mainly due to the excessive legislative zeal shown by various Provincial Governments after the introduction of Provincial Autonomy in India in 1937. But these problems need not detain us here. We are more concerned with the problems of a fundamental nature which are existing in the Jaina community for the last so many years. We have already discussed some of these problems in detail. It now remains to recapitulate them in brief and to suggest the ways of solving them so that the Jaina community can hope to lead a more vigorous and prosperous life in the future.

(A) *The Problem of Declining Population:*

The most important, serious and urgent problem confronting the Jaina community is the gradual decline of its number. The

Jaina community is one of the most ancient communities in India and up to the Middle Ages it claimed a sufficiently large following throughout the different parts of India. But afterwards the numerical strength of the Jainas rapidly began to decline day by day, and the process is being continued up to the present day. The tendency is quite noticeable from the census figures. The proportion of Jainas in the total population of India was 0·48 per cent in 1881, while the same proportion according to 1941 census was 0·37 per cent.¹ Taking into account the incorrect enumeration and other factors it can safely be said that the growth of Jaina population is not keeping pace with the growth in the total population of India and if this persistent tendency is allowed to continue, the Jaina community will possibly have to face total extinction in the near future. It is therefore necessary to find out the causes of this continuous downfall in the number of Jaina population.

In the first place it may be noted that the sex composition of the Jainas is not even. According to 1941 census there are only 930 Jaina females per 1000 Jaina males and this proportion is less than that among Parsis, Scheduled caste and other Hindus, Christians and Jews. The deficiency of Jaina females seems to be continuous as in 1901 also the proportion of females to males was 929 to 1000.² This deficiency is further heightened if we take into account the sex composition of Jaina castes because the marriages as a rule have to be contracted within the members of a particular caste only. Thus in 1917 among the 'Budhelā' caste of North India there were in all only 100 females of marriageable age to 204 males of that age.³ This means that many males have compulsorily to remain bachelors throughout their life. Coupled with the dearth of females there is another reason which requires the males to remain unmarried and that is the permission given to males either to practise polygyny or to marry again after the dissolution of the first marriage. That is why we find that according to the latest figures of 1931 census the proportion of

1. See page 2 ante.

2. See page 9 ante.

3. Jain, K. P.: *Jaina Jātikā Rhāsa aura Unnati ke Upāya*, P. 50.

unmarried males among the Jainas was greater than that among the Hindus or Muslims or all people together.¹ Again, not only there is continuous deficiency of females which undoubtedly comes in the way of growth of population, there are, about Jaina women, certain other significant factors which hinder the effective increase in the Jaina population. Even though the fertility of Jaina women is showing some signs of improvement, it is a fact that it is less than that of Tribal, Christian, Sikh and Muslim women and it may take many decades for the Jaina women to reach the fertility rate of Tribal, Christian or Sikh women.² Further, compared with the others, the Jaina girls are married at an early age. In the Bombay Presidency, according to the 1931 census, the highest number of infant girls married was that of Jainas and the Jainas, along with the Hindus, showed very high figures for marriages of girls under the age of fifteen.³

As the conditions among Jainas are practically the same all over India, the custom of child-marriage was found everywhere among the Jainas and now, though the age of marriage among the Jainas is increasing, the Jainas, in comparison with the others, seem to be an early marrying community. Since the Jaina females are married early, they are required to bear the incidence of child-birth at a comparatively early age and this has considerably told upon their health and has finally resulted in high rate of female mortality.⁴ The child-marriage thus makes the problem worse by increasing the deficiency of females. In still another way the child-marriage affects the growth of population. The highest proportion of widowed females in the Jaina community can possibly be attributed to its widespread practice of child-marriage. With the exception of a few widows belonging to some particular castes, all widows in general are effectively debarred from remarrying. Naturally the existence of an unusually large number of widows in the reproductive period and the prevalence of ban on widow-remarriage, render nearly 20% of the already deficient

1. See page 17 ante.

2. See page 14 ante.

3. See page 20 ante.

4. See page 17 ante.

female population worthless from the point of view of growth of population.¹ Thus the factors like the deficiency of females, practice of early marriage, low fertility of women, high rate of female mortality, large number of unmarried males and great proportion of young widowed females effectively debarred from remarriage, have all combined together to lower the growth of Jaina population. In a way these factors have helped to increase the clandestine sexual relations in the Jaina community. The presence of young widows and young wives of old people on the one hand and compulsorily unmarried males on the other is bound to give impetus to immoral and extra-marital relations. To conceal the extra-marital relations sometimes infanticide is resorted to and the persons addicted to adultery and their children, if at all they get them, become short lived as they fall an easy prey to various diseases.² Hence it is clear that the results of such relations tell upon both the quantity and quality of population.

Apart from these internal causes which are largely responsible for the decline of Jaina population, there is an effective external cause also which is continuously reducing the number of Jaina population and that is the complete absence of proselytizing activities in the Jaina community. In the past many non-Jainas were regularly converted to Jainism and the learned Jaina Āchāryas used to take a leading part in these conversion activities. It is said that the Jaina Āchāryas were not taking their daily meals unless they converted a previously determined number of non-Jainas to Jainism.³ It has already been noted that the populous Jaina castes like Agaravāla, Osavāla, Śrimāla, and Khaṇḍelavāla were formed by the Jaina Āchāryas after converting the people to Jainism.⁴ But since the Middle Ages these activities are not undertaken at all and there are practically no new converts to Jainism. Not only that the non-Jainas are not brought into the fold of Jainas but every year thousands of Jainas

1. See Chapter I, Section (6).

2. Jain, K. P.: *Jaina Jāti-kā Rhāsa aura Unnatikā Upāya*, pp. 37-38.

3. Jain, Hiralal : *Jaina Itihāsakī Pūrvā Piṭhikā aura Hamārā Abhyuttāthāna*, Part II, P. 9.

4. Vide Chapter III, Section 5 (i), (ii), (iii) and (v).

become non-Jainas.¹ In these circumstances it is but natural that, as compared with the other communities like that of Hindus or Muslims where conversion activities are carried on with a religious fervour, the population of Jaina community should decline more rapidly.

Another contributory cause to the decline of Jaina population is the concentration of Jainas in the urban areas. It has been observed that as the Jainas are mainly a commercial community, they show a marked tendency to live in cities, at least where they are not numerous, and that this tendency is progressively increasing.² Due to insanitary and unhygienic conditions prevailing in urban localities, generally the death rate is more in cities and the standard of health is less than that in rural areas. The committee appointed by the Śvetāmbara Jaina Conference to investigate into the death rate among the Jainas of Bomby City, reported that the death rate among the Jainas was more than the general death rate in the City and that the main reason for this was that more than half the Jaina population in Bombay City was living in small rooms in unhealthy localities. The committee had suggested to open health resorts in the countryside for the benefit of the Bombay Jainas.³ The Jainas are found in almost all cities and they are under the same handicap as the Bombay Jainas. Thus the quality, along with the quantity, of Jaina population has suffered by staying in cities.⁴

With a view to stop the gradual decline of the Jaina population and to increase its number, it is evident that various measures will have to be adopted without delay. The practice of early marriage must be stopped in the first instance so that the incidence of child birth at an early age will be avoided, the rate of female mortality will fall down, the number of young widows will be lessened and the health of females will be improved. Along with the stoppage of child-marriage the ban on widow-

1. Jain, Hiralal. : *Jaina Itihāsa-kī Pūrvā Pīthikā 'ura Hamārā Abhyutthāna*. Part II, P. 12.

2. See page 5 ante.

3. J. H., Vol. 12, pp. 280-281.

4. Jain, K. P. : *Jaina Jāti-Kā Rhāsa 'ura Unnati-ke Upāya*, pp. 54-55.

remarriage must be removed and the males must be debarred from practising polygyny and from marrying very young girls. This will make the full use of human resources. The deficiency of females will not so much be felt and the number of males who have to remain compulsorily unmarried will be reduced. Naturally it will have a good effect on curbing the extra marital and other immoral relations. To further lessen the number of males, who have to go without marriage against their wish, permission should be given to marry females not only from all castes of Jainas but from non-Jainas also. This will result in increasing the field for marriage, in widening the scope regarding choice of partners to the marriage, in avoiding marriages between near relatives and in improving, in the long run, the quality of the population. Moreover, persistent efforts will have to be made to reduce the death rate and to improve the physique of the people. For that purpose village life, as far as possible, be encouraged, people and especially women should be taught how to lead a healthy life in towns and cities, the provision of medical and hospital facilities and especially of maternity homes should be augmented and health resorts should be opened at different places so that the urban people can take recourse to them whenever required. Again, proper and regular religious instruction should be imparted to the people from an early age and this will, to a great extent, stop the exodus of people from the Jaina community. Along with this the proselytizing activity will have to be undertaken in right earnest and the new entrants to the community must be accorded a good reception and given a proper treatment in religious, social and other walks of life. It means that the Jainas will have to adopt the same intense missionary zeal displayed by the illustrious Jaina Achāryas throughout the ancient and medieval period in India and possibly outside.

(B) *The Problem of Religious Divisions:*

Another important problem, which is undermining the strength of the Jaina community for the last so many centuries, is the existence of various religious divisions in the community. Up to the days of Lord Mahāvīra and even for some centuries

later the Jaina Church remained one and undivided though some minor schisms had taken place during and after the time of Lord Mahāvīra. About the end of the first century A. D. the Jaina Church was finally split up into two rival sects which have vigorously maintained the rivalry to the present day. The two main sects, viz., the Digambara and the Śvetāmbara, were later on split up into major and minor sub-sects some of which were revolutionary in the sense that they opposed the established practice of idol worship. Apart from the division of the Jaina Church into sects and sub-sects, the Jainas were further divided, on a religious basis, into several sections and sub-sections like Saṅgha, Gaṇa, Gachchha and Śākhā. The Jainas did not stop only with the creation of a large number of sects, sub-sects, sections and sub-sections in the community but persistently made and are still making by various good and bad means to perpetuate these divisions. Only a few sacred places are common to both the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras, while each sect possesses its own numerous sacred places. Even those few common sacred places have, for all these years, become a constant bone of contention between the two sects as each sect tries to establish its claim of ownership over them by both fair and foul means. Crores of rupees have been spent by both the parties on litigation on these cases. Generally the members of each sub-sect or sub-section build their own temples or places of worship. Thus among the Digambaras the Terāpanthis and the Bisapanthis have their separate temples and the Tārapapanthis their own *Chaityālayas*. The Mūrtipūjaka Śvetāmbaras have their temples, while the Svetāmbara Sthānakavāsis visit their *Upāśrayas* only. In big cities practically every important Gachchha possesses its temple where all the members of that Gachchha assemble on festival and other ceremonial days. At Kāraṇjā in Berar the members of Sena Gaṇa and Balātkāra Gaṇa have their own temples. Further, in many places the members of some important castes have their different temples. Again, the main sects have their own types of idols, methods of worship, places of pilgrimage, sacred books, *Saṃskāras* or sacraments, religious teachers and fasts and festivals. These differences have so much been magnified by both

the main sects that every sect considers itself as a true follower of Jainism while it regards the other sect as fallen from the real path of Jainism. The differences have penetrated into the social field also. Formerly, marriages used to take place between the members belonging to different sects and sub-sects; but now there is a marked tendency to restrict the marital relations within the members of a particular sect or even a sub-sect. Each sect or sub-sect provides for its students facilities like boarding houses, scholarship funds, research grants, etc. There is hardly any association which caters to the needs of students irrespective of sect or sub-sect. Even their religious educational institutions like *Gurukulas* and *Pāṭhaśālās* are separate for each sect or sub-sect. The members of practically every sect or sub-sect are being organised on an all-India basis. The Digambaras have three organisations of an all-India character, viz., All India Digambara Jaina Parishada, Delhi; All India Digambara Jaina Mahāsabha, Delhi; and All India Digambara Jaina Saṅgha, Mathura; and among the Śvetāmbaras each sub-sect has an all-India organisation, viz., All India Śvetāmbara (Murtipūjaka) Jaina Conference Bombay; -All India Śvetāmbara Sthānakavāsi Jaina Conference, Bombay; and Sri Jaina Śvetāmbara Terāpanthi Mahāsabha, Calcutta. These organisations have their provincial branches and official news-paper organs through which they try to stabilise their respective positions. It is true that there are some organisations of national and local and provincial character like Bhārata Jaina Mahāmaṇḍala, Wardha, and Bombay Jaina Yuvaka Saṅgha, Bombay, which are meant for all Jainas, but it is a fact that they are not popular as other sectarian organisations are. Sometimes it is reported that even the religious pontiffs of different sects and sub-sects try to accentuate the religious differences and to sever the social relations, if any, existing between them.

Thus it is quite evident that the Jainas have been segregated into different hostile camps on religious grounds. As a consequence we find that there is nothing like religious unity among the followers of Jainism and this undoubtedly hinders the progress of the Jaina community. Since the Jainas have been spread throughout the length and breadth of India, there is a great

divergence in their observance of various social customs and manners. In the circumstances the only bond that brings all Jainas together is the bond of religion, i. e., they are the followers of the same religion. It is therefore the paramount duty of the Jainas to see that the feeling of oneness is inculcated in the minds of the Jainas by several means. In fact, Jainism is one and undivided so far as its philosophy, fundamental principles and doctrines are concerned. The Jaina Church was united for a long time and its sects—and especially the sub-sects—arose at a comparatively late stage in its history. There are not basic differences of a serious nature, from the point of view of the present age, between the sects and the sub-sects. According to the Jaina theory itself nobody, either male or female, can attain salvation in the current age. It is therefore quite futile to quarrel on points like '*Savastramukti*', i. e., whether one can achieve Moksha while one wears the clothes; '*Strimukti*', i. e., whether a woman can attain salvation; and '*Kevalī-Kavalāhāra*', i. e., whether an omniscient needs food or not. These three are the major points of differences between the Digambaras and the Śvetāmbaras¹ and when they are not applicable in the present age there is no reason why the sects should give more importance to the minor differences and estrange their relations. The same can be said about the relations between the Terāpanthis and the Bisapanthis among the Digambaras and between the Sthānakavāsīs and the Terāpanthis among the Śvetāmbaras as there are not much differences between them.² The non-idolatrous sub-sects among both the sects may be allowed to worship in their own way but they should, in no case, be considered as aliens to Jainism. Thus more emphasis, in the first place, should invariably be given on these points of common nature so that the feeling of hostility may be completely banished from the minds of Jainas belonging to different sects and sub-sects. With a view to foster this feeling several practical means will have to be adopted by both the sects. They should celebrate together the birth and

1. See pp. 52-53 ante.

2. Vide pp. 54-58 ante.

death anniversary days of Lords Rshabha and Mahāvīra together instead of observing them separately. They should make it a point to visit the temples and places of worship of all sects and sub-sects and should join in the religious festivals of other sects. The temples or places of worship should not belong to one sect or sub-sect, section or sub-section, or caste or sub-caste, but should be in the possession and under the management of the local Jainas irrespective of any distinction. All sectarian organisations will have to be abolished forthwith and their place should be taken by the organisations of all Jainas formed on local and provincial and national bases. Naturally all other facilities and institutions must be kept free to all Jainas. The field of social relations must also be widened. They should not be kept restricted within the members of a particular sect or sub-sect. Efforts should be made to publish the literature stressing the essential unity in the Jaina Church. The religious pontiffs should be made to concentrate their energies on cementing the differences and establishing the cordial relations between the sects and sub-sects. If possible, common *Saṃskāras*, fasts and festivals should be evolved so that many opportunities will be created for bringing all people together and maintaining closer relations between them. When concentrated and sincere efforts are made on above lines it is hoped that the common religious bond will become firm and will foster the sense of unity among the Jainas, which is so essential for organising the Jaina community to continue its existence and to increase its prosperity.

(C) *The Problems of Social Divisions and Marriage:*

The third fundamental problem of a vital importance, with which the Jaina community is confronted, is regarding the social organisation of the community. In this respect the position of the Jaina religion is quite distinct. Jainism is not at all concerned with the division of society into classes or other groups. But for the facility of living the Jainas divided the people into four classes, viz., Brāhmaṇas, Kshatriyas, Vaiśyas and Śūdras. In dividing the society into four classes the Jaina Āchāryas made it abundantly clear that the classes are based on the differences in professions and that complete freedom is given to persons to follow any profession they

like. The classes were neither considered as hereditary nor were they arranged in the order of respectability. Thus all classes were placed on the same level and full mobility was assured between the classes. This was the social organisation of the Jainas at the time of Lord Mahāvīra and it prevailed for more than one thousand years after the death of Lord Mahāvīra. But afterwards slowly these four classes disappeared and their place was taken by many castes and sub-castes. The caste system of Jainas was practically modelled from the Hindu caste system. As a consequence the Jaina community has been divided into a large number of castes and sub-castes which through their councils controlled the social relations of their members. Contacts are not maintained between various castes. Inter-marriages are strictly prohibited. Even though inter-dining is not banned, still it is not availed of freely at all. Caste organisations run the boarding houses, distribute the scholarships, hold annual conferences, conduct their papers, provide residential accommodation at cheap rents and do other things all for the benefit of their caste members only. At many places castes have built their own temples where members assemble for performing religious services and festivals. Naturally by these means, at the expense of community feeling, caste loyalty is fostered in the minds of the Jainas. The caste system has created separatist tendencies in the Jaina community. Thus on the social grounds, just as on the religious ground, the Jainas have been divided and sub-divided into small sections which care more for themselves than for the Jainas as a whole. The strength of the small community has been very much weakened by the existence of these innumerable self-centred groups.

Apart from considerably reducing the vitality of the community, these social and religious divisions have very adversely affected the marriage relations of the people. One of the prominent features of the caste system is its endogamous nature. Accordingly a member of a particular caste or sub-caste, as the case may be, is required to marry a person who belongs to that caste or sub-caste. The exact number of castes and sub-castes prevailing in the Jaina community at present is not known but it is sure that the number is definitely more than one hundred. When

a small community is divided into so many sections it is obvious that the numerical strength of these sections must be meagre. That is why more than half the castes in the Jaina community possess the members who number less than five hundred.¹ Naturally the field for choice of partners becomes very limited. Along with caste endogamy, religious endogamy is also to be observed. This means that the caste members belonging to the same sect or sub-sect should have marital relations among themselves only. The members of a sub-caste, but not of the same sub-sect, are not allowed to contract matrimonial alliances among themselves. Further, with these factors territorial considerations have also to be taken into account. Accordingly the partners to the marriage must not only belong to the same caste or sub-caste and the same sect or sub-sect but also must be the residents of a particular locality. Thus there is practically no scope given to the Jainas in the important matter of the choice of their life partners. It is evident that in these circumstances the married life cannot be conducive to happiness and many a time marriages have necessarily to be contracted between not too distant relatives. Moreover, due to these three-fold restrictions the already existing deficiency of females is further heightened and comparatively many males are required compulsorily to remain unmarried against their wish throughout their life. All these things tell upon the growth of the population and create discontent among the people. It will therefore be seen that the caste solidarity is tried to be maintained through restriction on marital relations even though they definitely go against the interests of the community as a whole.

In these circumstances it is quite obvious that the social organisation of the Jainas should not be based on the caste system if the Jainas have to put a stop to their gradual decline. The Jainas must unhesitatingly discard the caste system forthwith. In doing so they are, undoubtedly, not going against their religion because Jainism never sanctioned the caste system. It must be remembered that in the past castes were not found in the Jaina community at all. There is not even a slight evidence in the doctrines of

1. See pp. 75-76 ante.

Jainism, in the ancient history of the Jaina society or in the ancient Jaina literature regarding the existence of caste-distinctions in Jaina community. Even the names of present Jaina castes are nowhere mentioned in the Jaina literature of one thousand years after the death of Lord Mahāvīra.¹ Historically viewed the castes are thus of a relatively recent origin and can therefore be easily removed. The earlier it is done the better it will be for the growth and prosperity of the community. It is obvious that for uprooting the caste system all things, mentioned above, which foster caste consciousness, will have to be set aside for ever as a common policy by all members of the Jaina community.

1. Jain Hiralal : *Jaina Itihāsa-ki Pūrva Piṭhikā aura Hamārā Abhyutthāna*, Part II, P. 42.

CHAPTER EIGHT

EPILOGUE

In the preceding pages the social conditions prevailing at present in the Jaina community have been depicted. We surveyed in detail some of the important social institutions and customs and manners of the Jainas. We noted the salient aspects of Jaina philosophy and the ethical rules based upon it. We saw the working model of the Jaina community and got a glimpse of the views of the Jainas on their various social problems. We traversed hurriedly through the long course of the history of the Jainas in different parts of India and tried to have, in short, an estimate of the achievements of Jainas in several fields of activity and of their contributions to Indian civilisation. Further, we discussed the reasons for the survival of the Jaina community and the causes for its gradual decline. Lastly, we observed the important problems of a fundamental character with which the Jaina community is confronted at present and suggested various means by which they could be effectively solved.

From this social survey of the Jaina community we find that certain facts about it stand out very clearly. In the minority communities of India the Jaina community, which is composed of the followers of the Jaina religion, occupies a peculiar position. Unlike the other minority communities like Muslim, Parsi, etc., the Jaina community is not foreign to this land. Jainism originated in this country and was mostly confined to this country. About the antiquity of Jainism there is no unity of opinion among the scholars. It is believed, on reliable grounds, that Jainism is at least as old as the Vedic religion, if not older than the Vedic religion. In any case it is now an established fact that Jainism was flourishing in the eighth century B.C. during the days of Lord Pārśvanātha, the 23rd Tīrthaṅkara or Prophet of the Jainas. From that time upto the present day Jainism is well represented in this country. This means that the Jaina community, which from its

very inception belongs to this land, is one of the most ancient communities of India. Further, the Jainas are a religious community, which is quite distinct from other communities in India. The independence of Jaina religion is now acknowledged on all hands. It is established beyond doubt that Jainism is a distinct religion of India and not an offshoot of either Buddhism or Brahmanism. We find that from ancient times two different types of culture, viz., the Brāhmaṇa culture and the Śramaṇa culture, have been existing side by side and of these two the Jainas still represent the Śramaṇa culture. The Jaina religion, philosophy, ethics, gods, temples, sacred places, object, manner and places of worship, sacred books, cosmology, mythology, ideology, teachers, ascetics, vows, holy days, rites, fasts, festivals, outlook on life and culture with its emphasis on *Ahimsā*, i. e., non-injury to living beings, are not only distinct from their Hindu counterparts but also not accepted and followed by the Hindus. Even in the observance of certain common customs and manners the Jaina way of looking at them is quite different from that of the Hindus. The Hindus regard the marriage as a religious sacrament, while the Jainas consider it as a civil contract. Among the Hindus adoption is a religious ceremony; this is not so among the Jainas. According to Jaina Law a widow inherits the property of her deceased husband, but this position is not accepted by the Hindus. In the death ceremonies the Jainas do not observe the days in memory of the dead. In the matters of food and drink, dress and ornaments and occupations and professions the Jainas are strictly required to observe the main precept of Jainism, viz., non-injury to living beings; but this restriction is not there for the Hindus. The Jainas participate in the Hindu religious festivals but not with a religious motive. The Hindu gods are worshiped and the Hindu Brahmins are employed for ceremonial purposes by some Jainas for one reason or another. As the observance of such avowedly non-Jaina practices is against the tenets of Jainism, with the spread of religious education these irreligious practices are slowly but surely dwindling in the Jaina community. In fact any distinctly religious Hindu practice is nowadays openly resented by the leading Jainas, if it is observed

by their fellow members. The Jainas no longer regard themselves as Hindus and ardently wish themselves to be known as Jainas and not as Hindus for any purposes. Recently by the Bombay Government the Jainas were included among the Hindus for the purpose of their Harijan Temple Entry Act and this was taken by the Jainas as an indication of the Government opinion that the Jainas form a part of the Hindus. When the Jainas strongly protested against the Government policy, the Bombay Government declared that Jainism is in no way connected with Hinduism and as such Jainas cannot be considered as Hindus. The Jainas sincerely feel that they are a separate religious community and now try to eradicate the non-Jaina religious practices which have crept into the community due to the ignorance of Jainas and the overwhelming external pressure. Thus it is clear that the ancient Jaina community is a distinct religious community of India and recently this position has been accepted by Pandit Jawaharlal Nehru, the Prime Minister of India, who has declared that

"It is true that Jainas are in some ways closely allied to Hindus and have many customs in common, but there can be no doubt that they are a distinct religious community and constitution does not in any way affect this well recognised position."¹

So far as religious life is concerned, it is true that the Jainas could be easily distinguished as a separate group of people. Their religious practices are not only distinct from those of other people but also they are practically the same all over India. But in social matters, it is obvious that, the Jainas do not form a separate entity. From our survey of social conditions prevailing in the Jaina community it is evident that there is no uniformity in social practices among the Jainas of different parts of the country, and that the social customs and manners of Jainas in a particular region resemble those of Hindus from that region. Thus the caste system among Jainas differs very little from its Hindu

1. Vide the Prime Minister's letter No. 33/94/50 P. M. S., dated the 31-1-50 addressed to Mr. S. G. Patil representative of Jaina Deputation, New Delhi. (The letter is published in 'Pragati āni Jinavijaya,' dated the 11-2-50.). Also see The Times of India, dated the 3-2-50.

counterpart. Like Hindus, the Jainas have different castes in different parts of the country. In many cases members of one caste are found in both the communities and generally marital relations are maintained between the Jaina and Hindu members of a caste. The ceremonies like birth, initiation, marriage, death, etc. are performed in the like manner by both Jainas and Hindus. In matters like food and drink, dress and ornaments, occupations and professions, superstitious beliefs and practices, types of houses and household articles, use of language and conventional ways of greetings and behaviour, styles of architecture and sculpture, etc. there are various common features between the Jainas and Hindus. The Jainas have completely identified themselves with the general interests of the regions concerned and they have made varied and substantial contributions to the development of languages and literature, arts and architecture, logic and philosophy, education and learning, charitable and public institutions and material and spiritual welfare of the people of those regions. In this way the Jainas have maintained very close relations with the Hindus and we have already noted that this is one of the main reasons which contributed to the continued existence of the Jaina community. Even the attitude of Hindus was, in general, more cordial and sympathetic towards Jainas than towards Buddhists. The Hindus in their Brahma-Sūtras tried to refute Jainism as a separate philosophy, but they never rigorously attacked and finally supplanted Jainism as they did in the case of Buddhism.¹ In the sacred Vedas of the Hindus we find references to Jaina Tīrthaṅkaras or Prophets. Some Hindu Purāṇas give the story of Rshabha, the first Tīrthaṅkara of Jainas, and consider him as an incarnation of Nārāyaṇa in an age prior to that of the ten *avatāras* or incarnations of Vishṇu. Thus in social matters there is virtually no difference between Jainas and Hindus. This was the position for the last so many centuries.

But we have already noticed that the position has changed during the last few decades. Now there is a growing tendency to eradicate every non-Jaina element from the Jaina community.

1. Vaidya, C. V. : History of Medieval Hindu India, Vol. III, P. 406.

As a result many Jainas have stopped keeping marital relations with the Hindus and even among the Jainas the field for marriage is restricted to the members of a particular sect or sub-sect and caste or sub-caste. Efforts are being made from the last fifty or sixty years to organise the Jaina community even in social matters and to sever its connections from the Hindu community. Various associations are working to increase social relations among the Jainas and to form them into a separate social group. The Jainas now, it appears, sincerely desire to make themselves distinct from the Hindu community in social practices as they are in religious ones. Thus they are trying to maintain themselves as a distinct community and wish to keep up their separate identity in future.

But the main question is whether the Jainas are in a position to preserve themselves as a separate social group. The conditions existing in the Jaina community at present are not helpful at all for prolonging the life of the community. In the first place it is a very small community. Its population according to 1941 census is about 15 lacs while the total population of India is more than 38 crores, which means that there are about 37 Jainas per 10,000 of the total population of India. This number is also gradually declining. The proportion of Jainas to the total population of India in 1881 was 48 to 10,000. Again, this small population is not concentrated in some place or area but is distributed over different parts of the country. The Jainas have permanently settled in those parts for the last so many centuries and some migration of Jaina population for trade and other purposes did take place during the last days of the Mughal period and the early days of the British period. As the Jainas are permanent residents of all parts of the country, the problem of their common organisation becomes obviously difficult. The Jainas are not only split up into tiny sections geographically but also on religious and social grounds. The religious divisions of sects and sub-sects and the social divisions of castes and sub-castes are so much respected that these divisions have created virtual barriers and have considerably lessened the social intercourse among the Jainas. The worst

effects of these divisions are witnessed in the field of marriage. While contracting marriages all the three types of divisions, viz., territory, sect or sub-sect and caste or sub-caste, are invariably taken into account. Among other things this system has resulted in checking the growth of population and has undermined the strength of the community as it gives rise to constant factions between the various divisions. It means that in the interest of preserving the existence of the community the present system of reducing the community into very small sections, which do not practically maintain any social relations among them, must be discarded without delay.

The question then arises as to what new type of social organisation should be evolved so that the growth of the community may be assured. For this purpose various measures have already been suggested. It has been specially pointed out that on religious grounds no restrictions should be put on the social relations of the people and that the caste system which has no religious sanction and which was not existing in the Jaina community in the past should be totally removed. The new unit of society for maintaining inter-relations may then be formed and it may include all the Jainas residing in a province formed on a linguistic basis. It is believed that this new arrangement of organising the community on a provincial basis will solve the outstanding problem of the community. As the Jainas are spread throughout the length and breadth of India, they cannot be effectively organised on an all India basis. The provincial basis will well suit the purpose. Generally marital and other social relations are maintained among the people of a province. We have seen that even now the members of a sub-caste in a province do not contract matrimonial alliances with their own sub-caste members of another province. Hence this arrangement will not much sever the connections of the people. Further, since the Jainas have settled in different provinces from a long time, they have imbibed the culture of their province. They use the provincial dress and ornaments. Their houses, household furniture and utensils, and items of food and drink are the same like those of other people of the province. They participate in all important festivals of the

province. In superstitious beliefs and practices and in the observance of ceremonies they do not differ from the rest of the people of the province. Thus the Jainas of a particular province present a coherent and homogeneous group and it would be feasible and better if they are formed into a unit of Jaina social organisation. This unit will, no doubt, be a sufficiently big unit for maintaining social relations and all the defects arising from the division of the community into small water-tight compartments will automatically disappear. The disintegrating tendencies will vanish and there will be a new orientation in the life of the community. The resources of the community will be easily pooled together and distributed evenly to all members. There will not be a lop-sided development, as that of one caste in relation to other castes, as at present. The common interests of the community like propagation of Jainism by various means, protection of Jaina institutions of a religious and philanthropic nature, safeguarding of Jaina religion and culture from external attacks, etc. will be better served. As the Jainas will be a close knit group of a tolerably good number of people, a feeling of unity will be engendered in their minds and this spirit of oneness will keep them bound together for a long time. By this way when the Jainas will begin to act in a concentrated manner with a unison of purpose, they will realise their strength and will be in a better position to contribute fully to the all round progress of the province. The Jainas could achieve so many things in the past in different parts of the country because there were no factions among themselves. The Jainas lost their dominant position in the South, which they had built up and assiduously maintained for more than thousand years, after the Middle Ages when they were divided into several small groups. The intimacy of social relations between the Jainas of all sects and sub-sects of a province will foster the spirit of religious toleration and the attitude of hostility between the sects will be slowly banished from their hearts. The converted people will be easily amalgamated into the common Jainas as the latter will be having no distinctions of caste and this will give some philip to the proselytizing activities by which the growth of Jaina community will be considerably

helped. Thus the social organisation of the Jainas on a provincial basis will, it appears, be beneficial to the Jaina community and will solve their main question of ensuring preservation and growth of their community. This does not mean that there will be a ban on the relations of Jainas of different provinces. As all Jainas comprise one community, inter-relations will occur and for the sake of considering the important common questions with which the community as a whole is concerned they may have an association, of course without any distinction of sect or caste, on an all India basis. It is obvious that if the Jainas in a certain province form a very meagre number, they will have to merge for all social relations into the Jainas of adjoining provinces; and this will automatically establish inter-relations between the Jainas of adjacent provinces.



APPENDIX A

JAINA POPULATION ACCORDING TO 1951 CENSUS

At the census of 1951 information about religion was collected as at all previous censuses. But the 1951 census report does not furnish detailed data about the population in India classified on the basis of religion. In the censuses prior to 1951 the enumeration record was sorted out in the first instance on the basis of religion. This yielded population figures for every village or town throughout the country broken into population groups, differentiated by religion. These groups then became the units for further sorting of census data. As a result, many important census tables like age, civil conditions, literacy, etc. were prepared for persons professing different religions separately. But a different procedure was adopted at the census of 1951. The enumeration record was sorted in the first instance with reference to the principal means of livelihood of every citizen as recorded at the census. This gave basic numbers for every village and town for each of the eight main livelihood classes; which then became the units for further sorting of census data. In consequence, the information extracted at the census for population groups differentiated by religion is restricted to the ascertainment of numbers only. That is why very limited information about Jaina population is known from the census report of 1951. An account based on the information so available is given below.

The total Jaina population in India according to the 1951 census is 16,18,406. At the first census in 1881 it was 12,21,896. It shows that the Jaina population has increased by 32.4% during 1881-1951. Even though there has been an increase in population the rate of growth has varied from decade to decade. The figures of percentage increase of Jaina population in each decade from 1881 are as follows.

1881-1891	..	..	+ 15.9 per cent
1891-1901	..	..	- 5.8 per cent
1901-1911	..	..	- 6.4 per cent

1911-1921	.. ..	- 5·6 per cent
1921-1931	.. ..	+ 6·2 per cent
1931-1941	.. ..	+ 15·8 per cent
1941-1951	.. ..	+ 11·7 per cent

It is true that the Jaina population has increased by nearly four lakhs during 1881-1951 but the proportion of Jainas in the total population of India has declined. In 1881 the proportion of Jainas to the total population of India was 0·48 per cent and in 1951 it is 0·45 per cent. The variation in the percentage of Jainas in the total population of India according to previous censuses is given below:—

1881	..	0·48 per cent
1891	..	0·49 per cent
1901	..	0·45 per cent
1911	..	0·40 per cent
1921	..	0·37 per cent
1931	..	0·36 per cent
1941	..	0·37 per cent
1951	..	0·45 per cent

The Jaina community is spread all over India. The distribution of Jaina population according to major regional Divisions and States is as follows:—

Divisions & States	Total	Males	Females
India	16,18,406	8,39,688	7,78,718
North India	97,744	51,681	46,063
Uttar Pradesh	97,744	51,681	46,063
East India	33,470	20,050	13,420
Bihar	8,656	4,417	4,239
Orissa	1,248	742	506
West Bengal	19,116	11,876	7,240
Assam	4,245	2,860	1,385
Manipur	150	105	45
Tripura	36	36	—
Sikkim	19	14	5

Divisions & States	Total	Males	Females
South India	59,122	31,596	27,526
Madras	35,778	19,109	16,669
Mysore	22,936	12,348	10,588
Travancore-Cochin	354	102	252
Coorg	54	37	17
West India	7,58,406	3,88,581	3,69,825
Bombay	5,72,093	3,01,980	2,70,113
Saurashtra	1,23,916	60,830	63,086
Kutch	62,397	25,771	36,626
Central India	2,44,592	1,29,638	1,14,954
Madhya Pradesh	96,251	50,846	45,405
Madhya Bharat	1,00,234	53,512	46,722
Hyderabad	30,287	15,958	14,329
Vindhya Pradesh	11,835	6,164	5,671
Bhopal	5,985	3,158	2,827
North West India	4,25,071	2,18,141	2,06,930
Rajasthan	3,27,763	1,67,768	1,59,995
Punjab	37,518	19,552	17,966
Himachal Pradesh & Bilaspur	34	13	21
Patiala & E. P. States Union	7,578	4,460	3,118
Delhi	20,174	9,916	10,258
Ajmer	32,004	16,432	15,572
Andaman & Nikobar	1	1	—

From the table it will be noticed that inspite of the fact that the Jainas are spread all over India, they are concentrated mostly in West, North-West and Central India. Out of 16,18,406 Jainas in India, 14,28,069 are found in these Divisions and the remaining are scattered over North, East and South India. Out of the total Jaina population 35·3% are found in Bombay, 20·3% in Rajasthan, 11·5% in Saurastra & Kutch, 6·2% in Madhya Bharat, 6·0% in Uttar Pradesh, 5·9% in Madhya Pradesh, 2·3% in Punjab, 2·2% in Madras, 1·9% in Ajmer and the remaining in other parts of India.

The figures for sex composition of Jainas given in the census

report of 1951 clearly show a deficiency of females. There are only 927 females per 1,000 males in Jaina community. The ratio of females to 1,000 males in Jaina community during the last six censuses is given below:—

1901 ..	929	females per 1000 males
1911 ..	940	" 1000 "
1921 ..	931	" 1000 "
1931 ..	940	" 1000 "
1941 ..	930	" 1000 "
1951 ..	927	" 1000 "

From this it will be seen that the proportion of females to males in Jaina community has been varying and that the proportion of females has become lowest in 1951. Again, the proportion of females to males in Jaina community is much low as compared to the proportion found in other communities. The ratio of females to 1000 males among different communities is as follows:—

Christian	992
Parsi	991
Hindu	948
ALL	946
Muslim	938
Jaina	927
Sikh	851
Jew	824

Further even among the Jainas there is a wide variation in the sex composition from State to State. A statement showing number of females per 1000 males among Jaina population in each Division or State is given below:—

State or Division	Number of females per 1000 males	State or Division	Number of females per 1000 males
India	927	Orissa	682
North India	891	West Bengal	610
Uttar Pradesh	891	Assam	484
East India	669	Manipur	429
Bihar	960	Sikkim	357

State or Division	Number of females per 1000 males	State or Division	Number of females per 1000 males
South India	871	Hyderabad	898
Madras	872	Vindhya Pradesh	920
Mysore	858	Bhopal	895
Travancore-Cochin	2,471	North-West India	949
Coorg	460	Rajasthan	954
West India	952	Punjab	919
Bombay	895	Himachal Pradesh	
Saurashtra	1,037	& Bilaspur I,	615
Kutch	1,421	Patiala & E. P. States	
Central India	887	Union	699
Madhya Pradesh	893	Delhi	1,035
Madhya Bharat	873	Ajmer	948

From the statement it will be seen that the proportion of females to males is consistently greater in West India and in North-West India than in other parts of India. This is obviously so because the Jaina population is concentrated mostly in West India and in North-West India. It is not known how in Travancore-Cochin only the proportion of females to males is unusually large.

APPENDIX B

COPY OF THE QUESTIONNAIRE ISSUED

**UNIVERSITY SCHOOL OF ECONOMICS AND SOCIOLOGY,
UNIVERSITY OF BOMBAY, BOMBAY.**

It has been proposed to undertake a Social Survey of the Jaina Community in India under the auspices of the University School of Economics and Sociology, Bombay. As the material required for the same is not readily available, a detailed questionnaire has been prepared and attached herewith. Members of the Jaina Community, irrespective of sect or caste, are earnestly requested to answer the questionnaire as early as possible. **THE VIEWS EXPRESSED THEREIN WILL BE TREATED AS COMPLETELY CONFIDENTIAL.** The information so collected will be utilised for submitting a thesis to the University of Bombay. The answers may kindly be sent on the following address:

**Prof. VILAS ADINATH SANGAVE, M. A.,
VIJAYA COLLEGE,
BIJAPUR
(M. S. M. Rly.)**

**Dr. G. S. GHURYE, M. A., Ph. D.,
(Head of the Department of Sociology)**

**VILAS A. SANGAVE, M. A.,
University School of Economics & Sociology,
Bombay, 1st December 1946. University of Bombay.**

In view of the extreme necessity of having a scientific investigation of social conditions prevailing at present in our Jaina Community we wholeheartedly support the above Social Survey undertaken by the University School of Economics and Sociology, Bombay and request the members of the Jaina Community to answer the requisite questionnaire as soon as possible.

- (1) Seth Sriyans Prasad Jain,
President, Bharat Jain, Mahamandal, Bombay.
 - (2) Seth Shanti Prasad Jain,
President, All India Digambar Jain Parishad, Calcutta.
 - (3) Hon'ble Mr. K. S. Firodia, B. A., LL.B.,
Speaker, Bombay Legislative Assembly and President,
All India Sthanakwasi Jain Conference, Bombay.
 - (4) Seth Ratanchand Hirachand, M. A.,
President, Southern Maharashtra Jain Sabha, Bombay.
 - (5) Acharya Muni Jinvijayji,
Honorary Director, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, Bombay.
 - (6) Seth Motichand, G. Kapadiya, M.A., LL.B., Solicitor,
Secretary, Mahavir Jain Vidyalaya, Bombay.
 - (7) Seth Chimanlal C. Shah, M. A., LL.B., Solicitor,
Secretary, All India Sthanakvasi Jain Conference,
Bombay.
 - (8) Dr. Bool Chand, M. A., Ph. D.,
Principal, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan's College, Andheri
(Bombay).
 - (9) Dr. A. N. Upadhye, M. A., D. Litt.,
Rajaram College, Kolhapur.
 - (10) Mr. Popatalal R. Shah, M. L. A.,
Secretary, Bharat Jain Vidyalaya, Poona.
 - (11) Pandit Nathuram Premi,
Bombay.
 - (12) K. B. Jinaraj Hegade, B. A., LL. B., Advocate,
Ex. M. L. A. (Central),
Mangalore.
-

A SOCIAL SURVEY OF JAINA COMMUNITY

Questionnaire

- (1) Name in full.
(Beginning with surname)
- (2) Address.
- (3) Occupation or Profession.
- (4) Sect. (Digambara, Śvetāmbara, Sthānakavāsi or Tārāpanthī).
- (5) Gotra or any other division which is considered for marriage purpose.
- (6) Saṅgha, Gapa, Gachchha and Śākha.
- (7) Caste and sub-caste.
- (8) (i) What is the approximate population of your caste ?
(ii) How is it distributed all over India ?
- (9) What are the relations of your sub-caste with the main caste and other castes of the Jaina Community as regards inter-dining, inter-marriage, etc. ?
- (10) Do you believe in the hierarchy of caste organisation in the Jaina Community ? If so, what is your order of hierarchy ? (Even a rough idea will do.)
- (11) (i) Is there Panchayat in your caste ?
(ii) How is it formed ?
(iii) What are its duties ?
(iv) What contribution does it take from its members ?
(v) What punishments are given to the defaulters ?
- (12) In view of the changing social conditions do you propose to abolish or reorganize the caste Panchayats ? If so, what form, you envisage, should it take ?
- (13) Are there any caste feasts ? If so, when are they to be given ?
- (14) Are there castes of your caste names in other communi-

ties ? If so, please give their names and state what are your relations with them.

- (15) (i) What are the rules of endogamy and exogamy in your caste ?
- (ii) Are they strictly followed ?
- (iii) Do you approve of inter-caste marriages in Jaina Community ?
- (iv) If so, to what extent would you allow them ?
- (16) (i) Are there any charitable institutions (like Boarding Houses, Scholarship Funds, Dispensaries, Hospitals, etc.) and other Associations (like Housing Societies and Colonies, Co-operative Credit Societies, Banks, Consumers' Societies, etc.) exclusively reserved for your caste or sub-caste only ? Please give their names.
- (ii) Do you think that they have served their purpose ?
- (iii) Do they not create separatist tendencies in the community itself ?
- (iv) Would you advise to throw them open to all Jaina irrespective of sect, caste, sub-caste, language, locality, etc. ?
- (17) (i) Was there any particular occupation or profession of your caste in the past ?
- (ii) Is it followed at present ?
- (iii) If not, what main occupations or professions are followed by your caste people ?
- (18) What is the educational standard of males and females of your caste and sub-caste in the regional as well as foreign languages ?
- (19) Is there any religious sanction to these castes ? If so, please quote the authority. Were they prevalent in ancient Jaina Community ?
- (20) (i) Is there any institution of " Bhāṭṭāraka " prevalent in your caste ?
- (ii) If so, what are their central places of residence ?
- (iii) What are their duties ?

- (iv) How are they appointed and in what way can they be removed?
- (v) What amount of property do they possess?
- (vi) Do they possess any control over the people (e.g., in taking contributions and enforcing decisions)?
- (vii) What is their present position?
- (viii) Is it considered as the highest authority for all caste Panchayats in its jurisdiction?
- (ix) What changes would you advocate to reform them?
- (21) Do you know how your caste and sub-caste have originated? If possible please give an idea of their origin.
- (22) What is the number of your caste people in the ascetic order of the community at present (viz. Muni, Arjika, Śripujya, Goriji, etc.)?
- (23) Are there any religious disabilities, like forbidding to perform Puja or to give meals to ascetics, put on your caste people? If so, please state such restrictions.
- (24) Is widow remarriage allowed and practised in your caste? If so, please state to what extent it is availed of.
- (25) Is polygamy allowed and practised in your caste?
- (26) Are there any ordinary or habitual criminals in your caste?
- (27) Has your caste Panchayat made any attempt to eradicate anti-social customs and practices like child-marriage, dowry-system, etc. from the caste?
- (28) How many temples are owned by your caste Panchayats? Is the property attached to them utilised for social purposes?
- (29) What is the name of your family deity?
- (30) What is the native place of your family? If possible, please give a short account of your family's migration.
- (31) Were there any distinguished personalities in your family? If possible, please give a short account of such illustrious persons.

- (32) Is your family a joint or separate one? If it is joint, what is the total number of persons? Do they live together? If not, state the places of residence of others.
- (33) Are there any instances of inter-sect, inter-subcaste, inter-caste and inter-provincial marriages in your family?
- (34) What Jaina festivals you follow? Do you observe all Hindu festivals? If not, name those which you observe.
- (35) What daily Jaina rites you observe?
- (36) What Jaina 'Samskaras' you perform?
- (37) Is your marriage consecrated according to Hindu or Jaina rituals?
- (38) How many languages you can read, write or speak? Please name them.
- (39) Do you wear a sacred thread? If so, what is its significance?
- (40) Do you employ the services of a Brahmin or a Jaina priest for performing marriage and other rites and for performing daily 'Puja' and 'Abhisheka' in Jaina temples?
- (41) How many fasts per month you observe? Do you observe any special fasts in the months of 'Chaturmasa'?
- (42) What funeral rites you perform? Are they like Hindu rites?
- (43) Do you observe monthly or yearly days in memory of the dead?
- (44) What religious education you have taken? Do you think that it should be made compulsory to Jaina children?
- (45) Do you worship Hindu deities? If so, please give their names.
- (46) You might be aware that there is a large number of widows in the Jaina Community. How would you approach to solve their problem?
- (47) Do you think that there is anything like Jaina culture as distinct from other cultures in India?

- (48) Are you a member of any Jaina Association or Institution which is striving for the benefit of Jaina community, irrespective of caste, sub-caste or sect ? If so, please give their names and the extent of their activities.
- (49) What are your educational and other qualifications ? Please state the distinctions obtained by you or by the members of your family in academic studies, literary activities, various kinds of arts, culture, sport, etc.
- (50) (i) Do you take any part in the political, social, economic and public activities of the country ? If so, please state, in brief, the nature of your activities and your present status therein.
(ii) Do you think that the Jaina Community has contributed towards the political, social and economic progress of India by various means ? If so, please give your estimate of the contribution.

Note :- Answers may be written on the space provided against each question. If the space is found insufficient, separate sheet of paper may be attached. Answers may be given in any one of the following languages, viz. English, Marathi, Hindi, Gujarathi or Kannada. Special remarks, if any, may be made on over page 10.

Date :

Place :

(Signature)

(The questions were also given in Hindi Language in the Questionnaire)

BIBLIOGRAPHY

(A) *Works in English, Hindī, Gujarāthī & Marāthī.*

- AIYANGAR, S. K. : Some Contributions of South India to Indian Culture, Calcutta, 1923.
- AJNATA : Mahāvīra Charitra, (in Marāthī), Poona, 1931.
- Akhila Bhāratavarshiya Śrī Jaina Śvetāmbara Muni Sammelana Nirṇaya (in Gujarāthī), Ahmedabad, 1934.
- ✓ All India Digambara Jaina Directory, Bombay, 1914.
- ALTEKAR, A. S. : The Position of Women in Hindu Civilisation, Benaras, 1938.
- ✓ ALTEKAR, A. S. : Rāshtrakūṭas and Their Times, Poona, 1934.
- ✓ AYYANGAR AND RAO : Studies in South Indian Jainism, Madras, 1922.
- ✓ BARODIA, U. D. : History and Literature of Jainism, Bombay, 1909.
- BEAL, S. : Buddhist Records of the Western World (Written by Hiuen Tsiang A. D. 629), London.
- BEAL, S. : Life of Hiuen Tsiang, London, 1914.
- BENI PRASAD : World Problems and Jain Ethics, Lahore, 1945.
- BHANDARKAR, R. G. : The Early History of the Deccan (Collected Works of Sir R. G. Bhandarkar, Vol. III), Poona, 1927.
- BHATTACHARYA, B. C. : Jaina Iconography, Lahore, 1939.
- BHATTACHARYA, H. : Divinity in Jainism, Madras, 1925.
- BHATTACHARYA, J. N. : Hindu Castes and Sects, Calcutta, 1896.
- BHUJABALI SHASTRI : Kannada Prāntiya Tādapatrīya Granthasūchi (in Hindī), Benares.
- Bombay Gazetteer, Vol. IV (District Ahmedabad).
- " " " IX (Gujarāthī).
- " " " XVI (District Nasik).
- " " " XVII (District Ahmednagar).
- " " " XXI (District Belgaum).
- " " " XXII (District Dharwar).
- " " " XXIII (District Bijapur).

Bombay Gazetteer, Vol. XXIV (Kolhapur State).
 " " " XXV (District Kanara).

BOOL CHAND.: Lord Mahāvīra — A Study in Historical Perspective, Benares, 1948.

✓ BOOL CHAND.: Jain Cultural Studies, Benares, 1946.

BUHLER, J. G. : On the Indian Sect of the Jainas, London, 1903.

✓ Census of India, 1881.

" " 1891.

" " 1901, Vol. I, Part II.

" " 1911, Vol. II.

" " 1921.

" " 1931, Vol. I, Part I.

" " 1941, Vol. I.

Census Report, Bombay Presidency, 1931, Part I.

CHAKRAVARTI, A.: Jaina Literature in Tamil, Arrah, 1941.

CHOPADE, T. S. : Pañdharapūrachā Vīthobā (in Marāthī), Sangli.

✓ CHOPRA, C. : A Short History of the Terāpanthī Sect of the Śvetāmbara Jainas and its Tenets, Calcutta.

COLEBROOKE, H. T. ; Miscellaneous Essays, Madras, 1872.

CROOKE, W. : Tribes and Castes of the North Western Provinces and Oudh, Calcutta, 1896.

✓ DALAL, C. M. : Poravāda Vaṇikone Itihāsa (in Gujarāthī), Bombay, 1922.

DALAL AND GANDHI : A Descriptive Catalogue of the Manuscripts in the Bhāṇḍāra at Jesselmore, Baroda, 1923.

✓ DALAL AND GANDHI : A Descriptive Catalogue of the Manuscripts in the Jaina Bhāṇḍāras at Pattan, Baroda.

DASAGUPTA, D. C. : Jain System of Education, Calcutta, 1942.

DESAI, M. D. : Jaina Gurjara Kavio (in Gujarāthī), Bombay, 1926.

DESAI, M. D. : Jaina Sāhityano Saṅkshipta Itihāsa (in Gujarāthī), Bombay, 1933.

- DESAI, M. N. : *Rural Karnataka*, Poona, 1945.
- DIVAKARA, S. C. : *Jaina Śāsana*, (in Hindi), Benares, Vīra Nirvāṇa Saṁvat, 2473.
- DOSHI, O. M. : *The Daśa Śrīmāli Jaina, Banias of Kathiawar (Thesis)*, Bombay, 1933.
- DUBOIS, A. J. A. O. } : *Hindu Manners, Customs and Ceremonies*, Oxford, 1906.
BEAUCHAMP, H. K. }
- DUTT, N. K. : *Origin and Growth of Caste in India*, London, 1931.
- ENTHOVAN, R. E. : *Tribes and Castes of Bombay*, Bombay, 1920-22.
- FERGUSSON, J. : *History of Indian and Eastern Architecture*, London, 1910.
- FLEET, J. F. : *The Dynasties of the Kanarese Districts of the Bombay Presidency*, Bombay, 1882.
- GLASSENAPP, H. V. : *Der Jainismus* (Gujarāthī Translation by Mr. N. I. Patel), Bhavanagar, Vikrama Saṁvat, 1987.
- GLASSENAPP, H. V. : *Doctrine of Karman in Jain Philosophy*, Bombay, 1942.
- GHURYE, G. S. : *Caste and Race in India*, London, 1932.
- GUPTE, B. D. : *Hindu Holidays and Ceremonials*, Calcutta, 1916.
- HANDIQUI, K. K. : *Yaśastilaka and Indian Culture*, Sholapur, 1949.
- HASSAN : *The Castes and Tribes of H. E. H. Nizam's Dominions, Hyderabad*.
- HAVELL, E. B. : *The Ancient and Medieval Architecture of India: A Study of Indo-Aryan Civilisation*, London, 1915.
- HERAS, REV. H. : *The Arabidu Dynasty of Vijayanagara*, Vol. I, Madras, 1927.
- HOBHOUSE, L. T. : *Morals in Evolution*, London, 1923.
- HUTTON, J. H. : *Caste in India*, Cambridge, 1946.

INDRA, M. A. : The Status of Women in Ancient India, Lahore,
1940.

IYER, L. K. A. : The Mysore Tribes and Castes, Mysore, 1930.

✓ JACOBI, H. : Studies in Jainism, (Edited by Jinavijaya Muni),
Ahmedabad, 1946.

✓ JAIN, B. L. : Agravāla Itihāsa (in Hindi), Barabanki (Oudh).

JAIN, C. R. : Jain Law, Madras, 1926.

“ : Key of Knowledge, Allahabad, 1928.

“ ✓ What is Jainism, Allahabad.

“ : Change of Heart, Delhi, 1939.

“ : Sanyāsa Dharma, Delhi, 1926.

“ : Practical Dharma, Allahabad, 1929.

“ ✓ Householder's Dharma, Bijnore, 1931.

“ : Jain Culture, Bijnore, 1934.

“ : Jain Penance, Allahabad, 1930.

“ : Rshabha Deva, the Founder of Jainism, Allahabad, 1929.

✓ JAIN, HIRALAL. : Jaina Śilalekha Saṅgraha (in Hindi) Māpika-chandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. 28, Bombay, 1928.

✓ JAIN, HIRALAL. : Jaina Itihāsa-ki Pūrva Piṭhikā aura Hamārā Abhyutthāna (in Hindi), Bombay, 1939.

✓ JAIN, J. C. : Life in Ancient India as Depicted in Jain Canons, Bombay, 1947.

JAIN, K. P. : Hindi Jaina Sahityakā Saṅkshipta Itihāsa, (in Hindi), Benares, 1947.

“ : Saṅkshipta Jaina Itihāsa (in Hindi), Vol. II, Part II, Surat, 1934.

“ : Some Historical Jain Kings and Heroes, Delhi, 1941.

“ : Bhagavāna Mahāvīra (in Hindi), Surat, 1924.

“ ✓ : Jaina Jātikā Rhāsa aura Unnatike Upāya, (in Hindi), Aliganja, Vira Nirvāpa Saṁvat, 2451.

“ ✓ : Prāchīna Jaina Lekha Saṅgraha, (in Hindi), Wardha, 1926.

- JAIN, K. P.: Jaina Tīrtha aura Unakī Yātrā, (in Hindi) Delhi, 1946.
- JAIN, P. D.: Vijātiya Vivāha Mīmāṃsā (in Hindi), Calcutta, 1934.
- Jaina Śvetāmbara Directory (in Gujarāthī), Bombay, 1909.
- JAINI, J. L.: The Jaina Law, Arrah, 1916.
- " : Outlines of Jainism, Cambridge, 1916.
- " : The Bright Ones in Jainism, Allahabad, 1926.
- ✓JHAVERI, M. B.: Historical Facts about Jainism, Bombay, 1925.
- ✓JINAVIJAYA MUNI: Jaina-pustaka-praśasti-Saṅgraha (in Sanskrit and Hindi), Singhi Jain Series, Vol. 18, Bombay, 1943.
- ✓JNANASUNDARAJI: Jaina Jāti Mahodaya (in Hindi), Phalodhi, Vikrama Saṃvat, 1986.
- KALA, B. T.: Jaina Vivāha Paddhati aura Lokāchāra (in Hindi), Nandgaon, 1940.
- KAILASHACHANDRA: Jainadharma, (in Hindi), Benares, Vira Nirvāṇa Saṃvat, 2474.
- ✓KAPADIA, H. R.: Jain Religion and Literature, Lahore, 1944.
- KAPADIA, K. M.: Hindu Kinship, Bombay, 1947.
- KETKAR, S. V.: History of Caste in India, New York, 1909.
- KOTHARI, M. G.: Jāti, Varpa aura Vivāha (in Hindi), Phalatana, Vira Saṃvat, 2461.
- ✓KRAUSE, C.: An Interpretation of Jain Ethics, Bhavnagar, 1929.
- " : Heritage of the Last Arhat, Bhavnagar, 1930.
- KRISHNA RAO, M. V.: Gaṅgas of Taṭakāda, Madras, 1936.
- LALARAMA SHASTRI: Shodasha Saṃskāra (in Hindi), Calcutta, 1924.
- LATTHE, A. B.: An Introduction to Jainism, Bombay, 1905.
- LAW, B. C.: Mahāvīra : His Life and Teachings, London, 1937.
- ✓LAW, B. C.: India as Depicted in Early Texts of Buddhism and Jainism, London, 1941.
- MACDONELL, A. A.: India's Past, Oxford, 1927.

- Manuscript No. 1149 at Balātkāra-gaṇa (Temple, Kārañjā (Berar)).
- McCRINDLE, J. W. : Ancient India as Described by Megasthenes and Arrian, Calcutta, 1926.
- MOOKERJI, RADHA KUMUD. : Hindu Civilisation, London, 1936.
- MORAES, G. M. : The Kadamba Kula, Bombay, 1931.
- MUGALI, R. S. : The Heritage of Karnātaka, Bangalore, 1946.
- MUKHTYĀR, J. K. : Vivāha-Kshetra-Prakāśa (in Hindi), Delhi, 1925.
- MUKHTYĀR, J. K. : Vivāha kā Uddesa (in Hindi), Bombay, 1916.
- MUKHTYĀR, J. K. : Jinapujādhikāra-mimāṃsā (in Hindi), Bombay, 1913.
- NAHAR & GHOSH. : An Epitome of Jainism, Calcutta, 1917.
- NARASIMHACHARYA, R. : History of Kannada Literature, Mysore, 1940.
- NILAKANTA SASTRI, K. A. : The Pāṇḍyan Kingdom, London, 1929.
- ✓ Osavāla Jatikā Itihāsa (in Hindi), Published by Osavāla History Publishing House, Bhanpura (Indore), 1934.
- PHALATANE, L. A. : Šetavāla Jaina Lokāñchī Māhiti (in Marāṭhi), Islampur.
- PHATTELALAJI : Jaina Vivāha Paddhati (in Hindi), Bombay, 1901.
- ✓ PREMI, NATHURAM. : Jaina Sāhitya aura Itihāsa (in Hindi), Bombay, 1942.
- RADHAKRISHNAN, S. : Indian Philosophy, London, 1923.
- RAMALALAJI. : Mahājana-Varnā-Muktāvali (in Hindi), Bombay, 1910.
- RAMPURIA, S. C. : The Cult of Ahimsā, Calcutta, 1947.
- RICE, B. L. : Mysore and Coorg from Inscriptions, London, 1921.
- RICE, E. P. : History of Kanarese Literature, London, 1921.
- RISLEY, H. : Tribes and Castes of Bengal, Calcutta, 1891.

- RESLEY, H.: People of India, Calcutta, 1915.
- RIVERS, W. H. R.: Social Organisation, London, 1932.
- RUSSEL, R. V.: Tribes and Castes of Central Provinces of India, London, 1916.
- SALETORE, B. A. : Mediaeval Jainism, Bombay, 1938.
- " : Ancient Karnāṭaka, Vol. I, History of Tuluva, Poona, 1936.
- " : Social and Political Life in Vijayanagar Empire, Madras, 1934.
- SANGHAVI, SUKHALALJI. : Jaina Saṃskṛtikā Ḫṛdaya (in Hindi), Benares.
- SAVYASACHI. : Jaina Dharma aura Vidhavā Vivāha (in Hindi), Delhi, 1931.
- SEN, A. C. : Schools and Sects in Jaina Literature, Calcutta, 1931.
- SENART, E. : Caste in India, London, 1930.
- SHAH, C. J. : Jainism in Northern India, Bombay, 1932.
- SHARMA, S. R. : Jainism and Karnāṭaka Culture, Dharwar, 1940.
- SHERRING, M. A. : Hindu Tribes and Castes, Calcutta, 1872.
- SHEETAL PRASADA : Gṛhastha-dharma (in Hindi) Bombay, 1930.
- SHREEPALCHANDRAJI : Jaina Saṃpradaya Sikshā (in Hindi), 1910.
- " Shri Bombay Lokagutchha Jain Sangha ", Rules and Regulations, Bombay, 1941.
- Śrī Jaina Saṃskāra-vidhi (in Hindi), Bombay, 1907.
- Śrī Saurāshṭra Viśa Śrīmālinī Jñātino Dhāro (in Gujarāthī), Bombay, 1910.
- SMITH, V. A. : History of India, Oxford, 1923.
- " : Early History of India, Oxford, 1924.
- " : A History of Fine Art in India and Ceylon, Oxford, 1911.

SPHULINGA : Dassā pūjādhikāra vichāra (in Hindi), Jubblepore,
Vīra Samvatsar, 2465.

S.SHRIKANTHA SHASTRI : Sources of Karnātaka History, Mysore,
1940.

✓ **STEVENSON, S. :** Notes on Modern Jainism, Surat, 1910.

✓ " The Heart of Jainism, Oxford, 1915.

SUMNER & KELLER. : Science of Society, Yale, 1927.

✓ **TANK, U. S. :** Jain Historical Studies, Delhi, 1914.

THURSTON, E. : Castes and Tribes of Southern India, Madras,
1909.

✓ **TOD, COL. JAMES. :** Annals and Antiquities of Rajasthana,
London, 1920. (Edited by W. Crooke).

TURNER, RALPH : The Great Cultural Traditions, New York,
1941.

UPADHYAYA SHASTRI. : Jaina Vivāha-vidhi-prayoga (in Marāṭhi),
Sholapur.

✓ **VAIDYA, C. V. :** History of Medieval Hindu India, 3 Vols.,
Poona, 1921-1926.

✓ **VAIDYA, P. L. :** Jaina Dharma āpi Vāngmaya (in Marāṭhi),
Nagpur, 1948.

VALAVALKAR, P. H. : Hindu Social Institutions, Bombay, 1939.
Vidhipaksha (Añchala) Gachchhiya Mhotī Pattāvali (in Gujarāṭhi),
Vikrama Samvat, 1985.

✓ **WARREN, H. :** Jainism, Arrah, 1916.

WARREN, H. : Jainism—Not Atheism, Arrah.

WESTERMARCK, E. : Short History of Human Marriage, London,
1921.

WILSON, H. H. : Works by H. H. Wilson, Vol. 1, London, 1862.

WINTERNITZ, M. : History of Indian Literature, Calcutta, 1933.

WINTERNITZ, M. : The Jainas in the History of Indian Literature,
✓ (A Short Outline of the History of Jain Literature), Edited
by Jina Vijaya Muni, Ahmedabad. 1946.

YAJNIKA, N. D. : *Jaina Vivāha Vidhi* (in Gujarāthī), Bhavnagar, 1904.

ZAMMANALALAJI : *Lambechu Samājakā Saṅkshipta Parichaya*, Calcutta.

(B) *Works in Sanskrit and Prakrit*

Āchāradinakara (by Vardhamāna Sūri), Śrī Kharatara Gachchha Granthamālā Samiti, Vol. II, Bombay, 1922.

Āchārāṅga Sūtra (Edited and Translated by H. Jacobi), the Sacred Books of the East, Vol. No. XXII.

Ādi Purāṇa (by Āchārya Jinasena).

Anagāradharmāmṛtam (by Pandit Āśadhara), Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. No. 14, Bombay.

Ātmānusāsana (by Āchārya Guṇabhadra), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. VII, (Edited by J. L. Jaini), 1928.

Dharmaṇīkshā (by Āchārya Amitagati).

Dharmaśārasaṅgraha or Daśalakṣaṇādipūjā.

Dravyasaṅgraha (by Āchārya Nemichandra), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. I, (Edited by S. C. Ghoshal).

Gommatasāra Jīva Kāṇḍa (by Āchārya Nemichandra), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. V, (Edited by J. L. Jaini), 1927.

Gommatasāra Karma Kāṇḍa (by Āchārya Nemichandra), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. VI, (Edited by J. L. Jaini), 1927.

Harivāṁśa Purāṇa.

Kalpa Sūtra, (Edited and Translated by H. Jacobi), the Sacred Books of the East, Vol. XXII.

Nītiśāra.

Nītivākyāmṛtam (by Āchārya Somadeva) Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. No. 22, Bombay.

- Niyamasāra* (by Āchārya Kunda Kunda), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. IX, (Edited by Ugrasen), 1931.
- Padmapurāṇa* (by Āchārya Ravisheṇa), Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. Nos. 29–31, Bombay.
- Pañchāstikāyasāra* (by Āchārya Kunda Kunda), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. III, (Edited by A. Chakravarti).
- Purushārthaśiddhyupāya* (by Āchārya Amṛta Chandra), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. IV, (Edited by Ajit Prasad), 1933.
- Ratnakaraṇḍaśrāvakāchāra* (by Āchārya Samantabhadra), Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. No. 24, Bombay.
- Sāgāradharmāmṛtam* (by Pandit Āśadhara) Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. No. 2, Bombay.
- Samayasāra* (by Āchārya Kunda Kunda), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. VIII, (Edited by J. L. Jaini), 1930.
- Sūtrakṛtāṅga Sūtra* (Edited and Translated by H. Jacobi), the Sacred Books of the East, Vol. XLV.
- Tattvārthādhigama Sūtra* (By Āchārya Umāsvāti), the Sacred Books of the Jainas, Vol. II, (Edited by J. L. Jaini).
- Trishashṭhiśalākāpurushacharitram* (by Āchārya Hema Chandra) (Translated into English by H. M. Johnson), Gaikwad's Oriental Series, No. LI, Baroda, 1931.
- Trivarṇikāchāra* (By Āchārya Somasena).
- Uttarādhyayana Sūtra* (Edited and Translated by H. Jacobi), the Sacred Books of the East, Vol. XLI.
- Uttarapurāṇa* (By Āchārya Guṇabhadra).
- Varāṅgacharitam* (by Āchārya Jatāsimhanandi), Māṇikachandra Digambara Jaina Granthamālā, Vol. No. 40, (Edited by Dr. A. N. Upadhye).

(C) Articles

- BHUJABALI SHASTRI, K. : "Jaina Kannada Vāngmaya" (in Hindi), *Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara*, December, 1938.
- BOOL CHAND. : "Jainism in Kaliṅga Deśa", *Āchārya Dhruva Smāraka Grantha*, pp. 87-100.
- BURGESS, J. : "Papers on Śatruñjaya and the Jainas", *Indian Antiquary*, Vols. II and XIII.
- CHAKRAVARTI, A. : "Jainism", *Cultural Heritage of India*, Calcutta, Vol. I, pp. 185-219.
- DELAMAIN, MAJOR : "On the Śrāvacs or Jains", *Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. I, pp. 413-438.
- DASA, S. R. : "The Jain School of Astronomy", *Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. 8, pp. 30-42 and 565-571.
- GAIT, E. A. : "Caste", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 3, pp. 230-239.
- GOPANI, A. S.: "Characteristics of Jainism", *Bhāratīya Vidyā*, Vol. I, Part II, pp. 168-178.
- HAMILTON, BUCHNAN: "On the Śrāvacs or Jains", *Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. I, pp. 531-540.
- HOERNLE, A. F. R.: "Three Further Pattiāvalis of the Digambaras", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XXI, pp. 57-84.
- JACOBI, H.: "Jainism", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 7, pp. 465-474.
- JACOBI, H.: "Demons and Spirits (Jain)", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 4, P. 608.
- JACOBI, H.: "Death and Disposal of the Dead (Jain)", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 4, pp. 484-485.
- JACOBI, H.: "Digambaras", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 4, P. 704.
- JACOBI, H.: "Atheism (Jain)", *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 2, pp. 186-187.

- JACOBI, H. : "On Mahāvīra and His Predecessors", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. IX, pp. 158-163.
- JAIN, HIRALAL : "Jainism: Its History, Philosophy and Religion", *Cultural Heritage of India*, Vol. I, pp. 220-236.
- JAIN, J. C. : "Conception of Soul in Jainism", *Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. 11, pp. 137-141.
- JAIN, K. P. : "A Further Note on the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Sects", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. LIX, 1930, pp. 151-154.
- JAIN, K. P. : "The Digambara and Śvetāmbara Sects of Jainism", *A Volume of Studies in Indology* (Presented to Prof. P. V. Kane), 1941, pp. 228-237.
- JAIN, K. P. : "Śāstroktā Jaina Puja Vidhāna", (in Hindi), *Digambara Jaina*, Vol. 22, pp. 401-408.
- JAIN, K. P. : "Marriage in Jain Literature", *Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. IV, pp. 146-152.
- JAIN, K. P. ; "Ashtāśakhā Upajāti", *Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara*, March 1938, P. 246.
- JAIN, K. P. : "The Predecessors of Tīrthaṅkara Mahāvīra", *Indian Culture*, Vol. IV, pp. 202-206.
- JAIN, K. P. : "The Antiquity of Jainism in South India", *Indian Culture*, Vol. IV, pp. 512-516.
- JAIN, K. P. : "Jainism under the Muslim Rule", *New Indian Antiquary*, Vol. I, No. 8, pp. 516-521.
- JAIN, K. P. : "Jaina Sāhityamēm Prāchīna Aitihāsika Sāmagrī", (in Hindi), *Premī Abhinandana Grantha*, 1946, pp. 455-463.
- JAIN, P. D. : "Jaina Samājake Bisavī Sadīke Pramukha Āndolanā," (in Hindi), *Premī Abhinandana Grantha*, 1946, pp. 653-656.
- KAPADIA, H. R. : "Some References pertaining to Agriculture in Jain Literature", *Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. 10, pp. 797-800.
- KAPADIA, H. R. : "Jain System of Education", *Journal of the University of Bombay*, Vol. 8, Part 4, pp. 194-259.

- KETKAR, S. V.: "Jaina Sampradaya" (in Marathi), *Mahārāshtrīya Jñānakosha*, Vol. 14, pp. 319-357.
- KUDALE, S. D.: "Dakshinetila Chāra Potajati", (in Marathi), *Pragati āṇi Jinavijaya*, Vol. 45, Nos. 23 and 24.
- LAW, B. C.: "Distinguished men and women in Jainism", *Indian Culture*, Vol. II, pp. 669-684.
- MACKENZIE, C.: "Account of the Jainas", *Asiatic Researches*, Vol. 9, pp. 244-286.
- MILES, WILLIAM: "On the Jains of Gujarat and Marwara", *Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, Vol. III, pp. 335-371.
- MILLETT, M.: "Some Modern Jain Sects—Hindu Antipathy to Jains", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. XXV, P. 147.
- MITRA KALIPADA: "Magic and Miracle in Jain Literature", *Indian Historical Quarterly*, Vol. 15, pp. 175-182.
- MITRA KALIPADA : "Jain View of the Origin of Institutions", *Indian Culture*, Vol. V, pp. 41-47.
- NAHATA, AGARCHAND : "Bhūtakālīna Jaina Samayika Patra" (in Hindi), *Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara*, 1938.
- NAHAR, P. C. : "A Note on the Śvetāmbara and Digambara Sects", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. LVIII, 1929, pp. 167-168.
- NAHAR, P. C. : "Antiquity of the Jain Sects", *Indian Antiquary*, Vol. LXI, 1932, pp. 121-126.
- NATHURAM PREMI : "Jaina Dharma aura Usake Sampradaya", (in Hindi), *Ātmānandajī Javmaśatābdi Smāraka Grantha*, Bombay, 1936, pp. 197-201.
- NATHURAM PREMI : "Bhāttāraka", (in Hindi), *Jaina Hitaishi*, Vol. 7, Nos. 7-8, pp. 59-69; No. 9, pp. 13-24; Nos. 10-11, pp. 1-9; and Vol. 8, No. 2, pp. 57-70.
- NATHURAM PREMI : "Yajñopavita aura Jaina Dharma", (in Hindi), *Jaina Hitaishi*, Vol. 12, pp. 143-147; 242-243 and 253.
- NATHURAM PREMI: "Tāraṇapantha" (in Hindi), *Jaina Hitaishi*,

Vol. 8, pp. 290–303, 549–551; Vol. 9, pp. 33–38, 198–206
and 532–539

NATHURAM PREMI: "Jaina Dharma Pālanevālē Vaiśya hi
Kyom?" (in Hindi), *Jaina Hitaishi*, Vol. 12, pp. 449–453.

PAUL, P. L.: "Jainism in Bengal", *Indian Culture*, Vol. III,
pp. 524–530.

PHALATANE, L. A.: "A Light on Ancient Jain History", *Jain
Gazette*, Vol. XXVIII, 1932, pp. 186–190.

PHALATANE, L. A.: "Jaina Dharmāchi Prāchīna Avasthā" (in
Marāthī), *Pragati āni Jinavijaya*, Vol. 46, No. 3.

SALETORE, B. A. : "Śravāṇa-Belagola—Its Secular Importance",
Jain Antiquary, March 1940.

SALETORE, B. A. : "Delhi Sultans as Patrons of Jain Gurus of
Karnāṭaka", *Karnāṭaka Historical Review*, Vol. IV, pp. 77–86.

SEN, A. C. : "Some Cosmological Ideas of the Jainas", *Indian
Historical Quarterly*, Vol. 8, pp. 43–49.

SHAH, R. N. : "Marāthī mēṁ Jaina Sāhitya aura Sāhityika",
(in Hindi), *Premī-Abhinandana-Grantha*, 1946, pp. 530–537.

STEVENSON, REV. J. : "On the Intermixture of Buddhism with
Brahmanism in the Religion of the Hindus of the Deccan",
*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and
Ireland*, Vol. VIII, (1843), pp. 1–8.

STEVENSON, S. : "Festivals and Fasts (Jain)", *Encyclopedia of
Religion and Ethics*, Vol. 5, pp. 875–879.

STEVENSON, S. : "Śvetāmbara Sects", *Encyclopedia of Religion
and Ethics*, Vol. 12, P. 124.

THOMAS, E. : "The Early Faith of Aśoka", *Journal of the
Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, New Series,
Vol. IX, (1877), pp. 156–234.

TOMAR, R. : "Jaina Sāhitya ki Hindi Sāhitya ko Dena" (in
Hindi) *Premī-Abhinandana-Grantha*, 1946, pp. 464–469.

UFADHYE, A. N. : "Studies in Jaina Gotras", *Jain Antiquary*,
Vol. II, No. III, pp. 61–69.

WEBER : "Sacred Literature of the Jainas", (Translated by Dr. H. W. Smith), *Indian Antiquary*, Vols. XVII, XVIII, XIX, XX and XXI.

(D) *Journals*

- Anekānta
- Asiatic Researches
- Bhāratiya Vidyā
- Digambara Jaina
- Indian Antiquary
- Indian Culture
- Indian Historical Quarterly
- Jaina
- Jain Antiquary ✓
- Jaina Bodhaka ✓
- Jain Gazette ✓
- Jaina Hitaishi ✓
- Jaina Jagat ✓
- Jaina Jyoti ✓
- Jaina Mahilādarśa
- Jaina Siddhānta Bhāskara
- Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society
- Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland
- Journal of the University of Bombay
- Karnāṭaka Historical Review
- New Indian Antiquary
- Prabuddha Jaina
- Pragati āpi Jinavijaya
- Transactions of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain
and Ireland
- Vīra ✓

INDEX

- Āchārya*, 225, 235–6, 396–7
Adhiyā, 91, 316
Adharma, 201, 404
Agaravālas:
 distribution, 86; origin, 86–7;
 gotras, 87, 131, 308; divisions,
 87; position, 88.
Agriculture, 278, 327
Ahimsā, 217, 230–2, 233, 279,
 282, 395–6
Ajātaśatru, 379
Ajitanātha, 375
Ajīva, 200–1
Akalaṅka, 400–1
Ākāśa, 201
Akshayatṛīyā, 251–3, 350
Alūpa kings, 382
Anagāradharma, 217, 223–5
Anantachaturdaśī, 247, 359
Anekāntavāda, 395
Āṅgas, 208
 Animal sacrifice, 66, 67, 404
Annaprāśana, 259, 265
Antariiksha Pārvanātha, 273
Antyakarma, 263, 266–7, 360–2
Anuprekshā, 211, 213–4
Anushṭhāna, 255
Anuvratas, 218, 224, 232
Apabhrāma, 286
Aparigraha, 218
 Apaurusheyā religion, 194
Archakas, 110
 Architecture, 389–93
Ardhamāgadhi, 283
Ardhaphālaka sect, 51
Arhat, 235
Arishṭanemi, 375
Ārsha marriage, 144, 145, 146,
 176
Artha, 226
Ashtāñhika, 248–9
Ashta-pravaehana-mātā, 213
Aśoka, 379
Āśrama, 226
Āśrava, 201
 Associations, 293–4, 342, 367–9,
 418; and journals, 294, 418.
Asteya, 218
Āsura marriage, 144, 145, 163
Aticāra, 217, 219
Atiśayakshetra, 272
 Attitude of men towards
 women, 177–9
Āvāsyaka, 221–2, 242

 Badami family, 370
Baḍavānī, 273
Badrinātha, 272
Bagheravāla, 308, 317, 324
Bahiryāna, 259
Banaras, 271
Bandha, 201–2
Bañjārā caste, 73
Bannore, 316, 317, 324
Baṇṭa, 322
Bāvīsa Sampradāya, 311
Bhadrabāhu, 51, 276, 379, 381
Bhārata-Varsha, 375

Bhāttāraka:

and Bisapanthis, 54, 292; and Terāpanthis, 54, 292; and castes in the Deccan, 101; and Śetavālas, 103; and Chaturthas, 104; and Pañchamas, 106; and Bogāras, 107; and Upādhyāyas, 108; places of residence, 291, 331; origin, 291; duties, 291, 332; decline, 292; present problem, 292, 334-5; and religious divisions, 330; peculiar to Digambaras, 330; system adopted by some castes, 331; selection, 332; removal, 333; property, 333; control over followers, 333-4; present position, 334; control over caste pañchāyatas, 334.

Bhāu-Bīja, 252

Bhaurao Patil, 372-3

Bhāvanā, 214

Bhāvasāra Bāvanagāma, 336, 339, 340

Bhāvasāra Mesarī, 314, 334

Bhogapatnī, 172

Bimbisāra, 379

Binaikiyā Paravāras, 98

Bisapanthis, 54, 419

Boarding houses, 296, 297, 418

Bogāras:

distribution, 107; origin, 107; and marriage customs, 107; position, 107; and Bhāttāraka 107; and divorce, 176; gotras, 309; pañchāyata, 317; in ascetic order, 337; and

widow remarriage, 339.

Books on castes, 302

Brahmacharya, 218

Brāhma marriage, 143, 146, 168, 176, 185

Brāhmaṇas, 65-70, 80, 83

Budheiānvayī, 308, 314, 336

Businesses prohibited, 277-8

Butter, 281

Caste feasts, 319, 320-1

Caste pride, 316

Caste System:

among Jainas, 76-86; definition, 77-8; main features 78; cultural gulf between castes, 79, 85, 324, 411; hierarchical organisation of castes, 80-1, 85, 316-7; restrictions on feeding, 81, 313-4; restrictions on social intercourse, 82, 85; civil disabilities and privileges, 82; religious disabilities and privileges, 82-3, 338; restrictions on choice of occupations 83-4, 85, 326-7; restrictions on marriage, 84-5, 314-6; social effects, 86, 411, 420-2; Pañchāyatas, 317-20, 341-2.

Castes among Jainas:

development from Varpas, 70; number, 71, 311; names of 84 original castes, 71, 111-7; names of 84 castes from Gujaratha, 72, 117-8; names of 84 castes from Deccan, 72, 118-20; Jaina sections in

- Hindu castes, 72-3, 321-2; large and small castes, 73, 75, 312-3; extinction of castes, 73; rise of new castes, 73-4; assimilation of one caste into another, 74, 98; sanction by Jaina religion, 74-5, 328-30; castes common to two main sects, 75, 312; names (with population figures) of Digambara castes, 75, 120-2, 312-3; names (with population figures) of Śvetāmbara castes, 75, 123-4, 312-3; regional distribution of castes, 76, 124-30, 313; regional concentration of castes, 76; principal castes in the North, 86-99; principal castes in the Deccan, 99-109; principal castes in the South, 109-11; differences between Northern and Deccan castes, 100-1; separate associations, 293-4; separate journals, 294; separate co-operative societies, 296, 325-6; separate educational institutions, 297, 325-6; books on castes, 302; disparity in educational standard, 327-8; period of formation of castes, 329; origin of castes, 335-6; and social reform, 341-2; and temples, 342-3, 421; abolition proposed, 422-3, 429.
- Cave temples, 243, 391-2
- Census Reports, 300-1
- Chaitiyālaya*, 243, 245
- Chālukya kings, 382
- Champu Kāvyas, 285
- Chandragupta Maurya, 276, 379, 381
- Charanāgare, 55, 97
- Charities, 228
- Chāritra*, 212, 215
- Chaturthas:
- distribution, 103; origin, 104;
 - occupation, 104; and Bhāṭṭāraka, 104; in ascetic order, 337;
 - and widow remarriage, 339.
- Chāturmāsa*, 250, 280, 359-60
- Child marriage, 150, 185, 342
- Chūḍākarma*, 265
- Clothes, 282
- Conservatism, 399
- Contributions of Jainas to:
- political activities, 371-2, 396;
 - social activities, 372; economic activities, 373; literature, 386-9; architecture, 389-93; sculpture, 393-4; philosophy, 394-5; ethics, 395-6.
- Co-operative societies, 295-6
- Criminals, 229, 340
- Daily duties, 221-2, 260, 352
- Daiva marriage, 143, 146, 176
- Dāna*, 221, 287, 352, 402
- Darśana*, 352
- Dasa, 87, 91, 95, 99, 316, 338
- Daśalakṣaṇa Dharmā*, 211, 213, 247
- Daśalakṣaṇa Parva*, see *Paryū-shaṇa Parva*

- Dasarā*, 253, 350
 Daughters' property rights, 191
Dayala Simha, 347
 Days of abstinence, 250
 Death ceremony, see, *Antyakarma*
 Decline of Jainas:
 lapse of royal patronage, 408;
 slackness of ascetic order, 408;
 persecution by others, 408-10;
 growth of divisions, 410-1;
 internal causes, 412-4; absence of conversions, 414-5;
 concentration in urban areas, 415.
 Decoration, 282
Devadravya, 343
Devāṅgas (Jaina), 72
Dhakaḍa, 324, 326
Dharma, 201, 226, 404
Dharmapatni, 172
Dharmaśālā, 287, 369, 372
Dhṛti, 259
Dhūndhiyā sect, 57
Dīgarāñvara sect:
 origin, 51; points of difference with *Svetāñvara* sect, 52-3, 419; sub-sects, 54-6; idols, 241; associations, 293; journals, 294; educational institutions, 297.
Dīkshā, 223
Dīkshādya, 261
 Dispensaries, 288, 369, 372
 Distinguished personalities, 346-8, 369-71
 District Gazetteers, 300-1
- Divālī*, 251-2, 350-1
 Divine dispensation, 206, 344
 Divorce, 176-7, 318
Doshi family, 347-8
 Dowry system, 164, 342
Dravya, 200-1
Dṛṣṭa, 256
 Dreams, 257
 Dress, 282-3
 Drink, 279-82
Durgāśtami, 350-1
- Eating before sunset, 280
 Educational institutions, 288, 296-8, 325-6
 Education of the masses, 402
 Endogamy:
 rule of endogamy, 84, 151, 322-3; caste endogamy, 85, 156, 323, 422; sub-caste endogamy, 85, 156, 323, 422; local endogamy, 85, 157, 315, 323, 422; religious endogamy, 156, 323, 422; group endogamy, 157.
 Ethics:
 aim, 211; to accomplish *Saṁvara*, 211-5; to accomplish *Nirjarā*, 216; rules of conduct for laymen, 217-23; rules of conduct for ascetics, 223-5; outstanding features, 225-34; social element, 229-30, 341; importance given to *Ahimsā*, 230-2; practicability, 232-4; one code for all peo-

- ple, 235; applied to food and drink, 279–82.
- Ethics and philosophy, 194
- Evil eye, 256–7
- Examination Boards, 290
- Excommunication of Sādhus, 398
- Exogamy:
rule of exogamy, 151, 158, 160, 323; Gotra exogamy, see Gotras; restricts choice of partners, 160–1; surname exogamy, 103, 310, 323.
- Exorcism, 255
- Falsehood, 228, 231
- Family deity, 343–5
- Family organisation, 348–9
- Famine relief, 288
- Fasts, 359–60
- Female education, 183–4, 328
- Female infanticide, 182
- Festivals and fasts, 245–54, 350–1
- Followers of Jaina religion:
Lichchhavis, 379; Nandas, 379; Sarāks, 380; Kalchūris, 382; Sāntaras, 382; Chahgāivas, 382; Koṅgālvas, 382; Rattas, 383; Śilahāras, 383.
- Food, 279–82
- Funeral ceremony, 269, 361
- Gachchhas, 59–61, 310–1
- Gajapantha, 271, 273
- Gāpa, 58, 310–1
- Gāndharva marriage, 145, 146
- Gandhi family, 348
- Gāṅga monarchs, 284, 381, 397, 401
- Gāṅgeravāla, 324
- Garbhādhāna, 259, 263
- Gati, 200
- Gaurī, 350–1
- Ghoṭa, 315, 317, 323
- Giranāra, 244, 273, 274–5, 384, 391
- Goal of life, 206, 211, 226
- God, attitude towards, 196, 205
- Gokulāśtami, 254
- Golapūrvā, 308
- Gommateśvara, 251, 276, 284
- Gotras among Jainas:
number, 158; technical meaning, 159; and marriage relations, 158–60, 309, 323; origin, 160; antiquity, 160; among Aguravālas, 87, 131, 308; among Osavālas, 90; among Khaṇḍelavālas, 96, 134–6, 308; among Śrīmālis, 93, 131–3; among Poravādas, 94; among Hummaḍas, 99, 308; among Śetavālas, 103, 309; among Mysore Jainas, 159; effect on choice of partners, 160–1; among Paravāras, 308; absence of Gotras, 309–10.
- Grantha-Bhāṇḍāra, 289
- Grantha - Prakāśana - Samsthā, 289–90
- Gṛhatyāga, 261
- Gṛhiṣitā, 261

Gujarathi, 284, 356, 388
 Gumānapanthis, 54, 56
Gunavrata, 219
Gupti, 211, 212
 Guravas (Jaina), 72
Gurukula, 296-7, 418

Harada, 316
Hastināpura, 271
 Hathisingh's temple, 391
Himsā, 227-8, 231, 233, 280-1
 Hindi, 284, 388
 Hiralal Jain, 370
 Holī, 350-1
 Honey, 281
 Hosa Basti, 391
 Hospitals, 288, 372
 Householder's religion, 217-23, 406
 Householder's stage, 226-7, 233
 Hoyasalas, 382, 397, 401
 Hummaḍas or Humbadas:
 distribution, 98; origin, 99;
 gotras, 99, 308; divisions, 99;
 and marriage relations, 157;
 dress, 283; in ascetic order, 337.

Idol worship, 240-2
 Indigenous bankers, 373
 Indras (Jaina priests), 110
 Initiation ceremony, 260, 265-6
 Insect-houses, 288
 Institutions, 286-98
 Intoxicants, 280
 Islam, influence on Jaina sects, 57

Jaina Bodhaka, 295
 Jaina community:
 fourfold division, 48, 337, 397; religious divisions, 47-63; social divisions, 64-136; continuity, 234; associations, 293; newspapers, 295; co-operative societies, 295-6; educational institutions, 296-8; social survey, 300; survival, 397-407; decline, 407-11; present problems, 411-23; antiquity, 424; distinct from other communities, 425, 426; future as a separate social group, 428-32.
 Jaina culture, 366-7
 Jaina philosophy, 196-203, 394-5
 Jaina population:
 total, 1-3, 433; rate of increase, 1, 22, 433-4; and census figures, 1; decline, 2, 411-6, 428, 434; distribution, 3-4, 25, 27-9, 434-5; concentration, 3, 10, 435; urban, 4-5, 29-31, 415; age distribution, 5-8; mean ages, 7, 32; sex composition, 9-14, 33-5, 412, 435-7; deficiency of females, 9, 11-2, 21, 412, 436; fertility, 14-5, 413; longevity, 15-6; civil conditions, 16-22, 36-40; proportion of unmarried males, 17, 413; proportion of widows, 18-9, 21-2, 37, 40; proportion of child marriages, 20, 413; proportion

- of literacy, 22-5, 41-6; variation since 1881, 26.
- Jaina Tower at Chitor, 393
- Jainism:
 meaning, 194-5; fundamental principles, 195-6; not atheism, 196; *tattvas*, 197-203; not animism, 199; importance given to Ahimsā, 230-2, 395-6; survival, 234; origin, 374; and Buddhism, 374, 403; founder, 374-7; antiquity, 377-8, 424; in Magadha, 378-80; in Kaliṅga, 380; in Bengal, 380; in Deccan and Karnataka, 381-3; in Andhra and Tamilanada, 383; in Gujratha, 383-4; in North and Central India, 385; in Rajasthan, 386; and Hinduism, 403-4.
- Jaisavāla, 308
- Jakhins, 255
- Jalayātrā*, 248
- Janma*, 264
- Jessalamira, 289
- Jīna*, 13
- Jinanāthapura Basti, 391
- Jinarūpatā*, 261
- Jīva*, 198-200
- Jivadayā Maṇḍala, 288
- Jñāna-pañchamī*, 249
- Joint family system, 348-9
- Journals, 294-5, 302
- Jugal Kishor Mukhtyar, 371
- Kadamba rulers, 381-2
- Kāla*, 201
- Kalachūris, 382
- Kalāras (Jaina), 73
- Kāma*, 226
- Kāmpilā, 271
- Kamta Prasada Jain, 370
- Kandamūlas*, 280
- Kannada, 284-5, 388
- Kanyādāna, 166
- Kārakala, 394
- Kārañjā, 289, 291, 296, 330, 417
- Karma Theory:
 meaning of Karma, 204; kinds of Karma, 204-5; consequences of the theory, 205-06.
- Karṇavedha*, 265
- Kasliwala family, 370
- Kasturbhai Lalbai, 347, 373
- Kaṭhanerā, 308, 314, 343
- Kathikai, 350-1
- Keśavāpa*, 260
- Kevallī-kavalāhāra*, 52, 419
- Khajuraho temple, 391
- Khaṇdelavālas:
 distribution, 96; origin, 96; gotras, 96, 134-6, 308; divisions, 97; position, 97; in ascetic order, 337.
- Khāravela, 377, 379, 380
- Kolhapur, 272, 291, 332
- Kshatriyas, 65-70, 83, 277
- Kshaurakarma*, 265
- Kshīrāśana*, 264
- Kukekari caste, 73
- Kulacharyā*, 260
- Kulapāka, 273
- Kumāra Hegade, 347

- Kumārapāla, 384
 Kuṇḍalapura, 271
 Kunthalagiri, 244, 271, 273, 391
 Kural, 285
- Lāchochāra, 410
 Laharisena, 338, 340
 Lakkupūḍi temple, 391
Lakshmi-pūjana, 252
 Lamechū, 336
 Language, 283-6, 356
 Leather goods, 282
 Legal status of women, 190-3
 Levā Pātidāra, 314, 339
 Libraries, 290, 369, 372
 Limbaḍi Saṁpradāya, 311
Lipisāṅkhyañasaṅgraha, 260
 Literacy:
 among females, 23, 46, 184;
 in English, 24; by sex and locality, 24, 42; according to Provinces 43.
 Literature, 283-6, 299-300, 386-9
 Lohadasājana, 338
 Loṅkāśāha, 56
 Loṅkā sect, 56-7
- Magi, 257
 Magic, 257
Mahājana, 318
Mahāśivarātra, 254
 Mahāvīra, 48-9, 53, 64, 66, 251, 274, 374-5, 378
Mahāvīra Jayanti, 249, 350
 Mahāvīraji, 272
*Mahāvrata*s, 218, 224, 232
- Makarasanikrānta*, 253, 350
 Malis (Jaina), 73
Mānastambha, 243
Māngitūṇī, 271, 273
 Mantras, 257, 264, 266
Marañabhoja, 321, 361
 Marāṭhi, 284, 356
 Marriage among Jainas:
 functions of marriage, 137;
 object of marriage, 138, 142;
 obligatory nature of marriage 139, 185; as a social act, 140;
 based on local customs, 141;
 connection with religion, 141;
 normality of marriage, 142;
 forms of marriage, 143-5, 151; approved forms of marriage, 145, 147; sinful forms of marriage, 145-6; most prevalent form of marriage, 146; comparison with Hindu forms of marriage, 146; competent person to give maiden in marriage, 147; qualifications of a bridegroom, 147, 186; qualifications of a bride, 148; pre-marital sexual behaviour, 148-9, 169; age of marriage, 149-50, 185; consummation of marriage, 149, 169-70; child marriage, 150, 185, 342; difference of age between partners, 150; choice of partners, 150-62, 323-4, 422; rules of endogamy, see endogamy; rules of exogamy, see exogamy; Savarṇa marriage,

- 152; Asavarpa marriage, 152, 154; Anuloma marriage, 152, 154–5; Pratiloma marriage, 152, 154; Sagotra marriage, 158, 323; marriages with non-Jainas, 152, 322, 324; marriages with Mlechchhas, 153; marriages with prostitutes, 153; marriages with illegitimate children, 154; marriages with near relatives, 161–62; complete freedom in selection of partners, 154; marriage with parallel cousin, 161; marriage with cross cousin, 161–2; maternal uncle-niece marriage, 161–2, 323; sister-brother marriage, 162; ways of procuring a bride, 163–5; marriage by capture, 163; marriage by exchange, 163; marriage by purchase, 163–4; marriage by service, 164; marriage by consent, 164–5; dowry system, 164, 342; marriage ceremony, 165–9, 269, 353–4; marriage rites among Śvetāmbaras, 165–6; marriage rites among Dīgāñbaras, 166–8; Jaina and Hindu marriage rites, 168–9; group marriage, 170; polyandry, 170; polygyny, 170–3, 186, 340; monogamy, 170; widow remarriage, 174–5; dissolution of wedlock, 173–7; divorce, 176, 186; remarriage of a woman, 173–4; inter-caste marriages, 323–4, 350; inter-sect marriages, 349–50, 418; use of Hindu rites in marriage, 354.
- Maryādā Mahotsava*, 58
Matā, 265
Matha, 288
Mathurā, 385, 392
Maunādhyanavṛtti, 261
Medicine, 288
Migration of families, 345–6
Military service, 279
Moda, 259
Moksha, 203, 226
Mokshamārga, 206–11
Mount Abu, 244, 271, 273, 275, 384, 390, 394
Mūḍabidrī, 289, 291, 391
Mūḍhas, 208, 404
Muktāgiri, 391
Mūlagūṇas, 220, 225, 279, 352
Muni Jinavijayaji, 371
Munis, 330
Mūrtipūjaka-Śvetāmbaras, 56
Naināra, 309
Najara-bandhi, 256
Nāladiyāra, 285
Nāmakarma, 259, 265, 353
Names, personal, 305–6
Narasiṅgapurā, 308
Nathurama Premi, 269, 292, 370
National spirit, 372
Navarātri 350–1
Nayas, 395

- Neglect of female children, 182
 Nemā, 322
 Neminātha, 274, 275, 384
 Nevi, 308, 314, 324
 Newspapers, 294-5
 Niggaptha Nātaputta, 376
Nirjarā, 203
 way to *nirjarā*, 216
 Nirvāpa, 198
Nirvānakshetras, 271-2
Nirvānalādu, 252
Nishadyō, 259
Nityavāda, 395
 Niyoga, 173, 187, 404
- Observance of non-Jaina customs, 405-6
 Occupations, 277-9, 306-7, 326-7
 Ornaments, 283
 Osavālas:
 distribution, 88; origin, 88-90; gotras, 90; divisions, 90-1; position, 91-2; and Purdah system, 188-9; in ascetic order, 337; widow remarriage, 339; migration, 345-6.
- Padmapuri, 272
 Paiśācha marriage, 145, 146
 Pallivāla, 308
 Pāmpa, 285
 Pāñchā, 87, 91, 95, 316
 Pāñchamas:
 distribution, 105; origin, 105; and Bhāttāraka, 106; occupations, 106; position, 106;
- gotras, 309; in ascetic order, 337; widow remarriage, 339.
Pāñchayatas, 317-20, 334
 Pandharpur, 272
Pāṇigraha, 166-7, 169
Pāñjarāpolā, 287-8
Parameshtīns, 235-6
 Pārasanātha Hills, 274
 Paravāras:
 distribution, 97; origin, 97; divisions, 97; and Poravādas, 97; Binaikiyas, 98; and marriage relations, 156, 159; gotras, 308; in ascetic order, 337.
Parigraha, 228, 231
 Parikh family, 369-70
Parishaha-jaya, 212, 214-5
 Pārvanātha, 48, 64, 66, 274, 374-5
Paryūshana Parva, 246-8, 321, 350, 359
Pāṭapa, 289
Pāṭhasālā, 290, 418
 Pāvāpura, 273, 274
 Persecution of Jainas, 269, 400, 405, 407, 408-10
 Persecution of non-Jainas, 407
 Pindadāna, 361-2
 Political status of women, 188-9
 Political workers, 371
 Poṅgala, 350
 Ponna, 285
 Population, see Jaina population
 Poravādas:
 distribution, 94; origin, 94; gotras, 94; divisions, 95; posi-

- tion, 95; marriage with Hindus, 332; in ascetic order, 337; and polygyny, 340; migration, 345–6.
- Poshadha*, 247
- Position of women:
attitude of men towards women, 177–9; religious status, 179–81; social status, 182–8; political status, 188–9; legal status, 190–3.
- Pradāna, 166
- Prajāpatya marriage, 144, 146, 168, 176, 185
- Prākrit, 286
- Pramāda Yoga*, 231
- Praśānti*, 261
- Pratimā*, 220–1, 227
- Prayāga, 271
- Priests:
employment of Brahmins, 101, 107, 263, 358, 405; Jaina priests, 101, 107–9, 246, 358; Jaina priests known as Indras, 110; priestly classes in Madras, 110; temple priests, 244, 359; as exorcists, 255.
- Printing sacred books, 289
- Prīti*, 259
- Priyodbhava*, 259
- Problems before Jainas:
of declining population, 411–61; of religious divisions, 416–20; of social divisions and marriage, 420–3.
- Professions, 277–9, 306–7
- Property rights of women, 190–93
- Publishing houses, 289–90
- Pudgala*, 201
- Pūjā*, 361
- Pujyapāda, 401
- Puṁsavana, 263–4
- Purdah system, 188–9
- Questionnaire, 303–4, 438–44
- Rājagṛha, 271
- Rajputs (Jaina), 73
- Rakshābandhana*, 252, 350–1
- Rakshaṇadevī, 264
- Rākshasa marriage, 145, 146, 163
- Rāmanavamī*, 254
- Rāṇapur temple, 390
- Ranna, 285
- Rāshtrakūṭa Emperors, 382, 384
- Ratnatraya*, 207
- Ratṭas, 383
- Relations between ascetics and laity, 397–8
- Relations with Hindus:
common festivals, 251, 252, 253–4, 350–1; common superstitions, 254–8; common Saṁskāras, 267; appropriation of Jaina Tirthakshetras, 272; common language, 283; common names, 306; intermarriages, 322, 403; inter-dining relations, 322; common family deities, 344; differences in outlook and practices, 403–4, 425; infiltration of Hindu elements in Jaina usage, 425

- ges, 405-7, 425; persecution by Hindus, 408-10; do not form a part of the Hindus, 426; attitude of Hindus towards Jainas, 427; tendency to remove non-Jaina elements, 427-8.
- Religious education, 290, 296, 362-3
- Religious position of women, 180
- Religious sanction to castes, 74-5, 329-30
- Research institutes, 368-9
- Research scholars, 370-1
- Right Belief, see *Samyag-darśana*
- Right Conduct, see *Samyak-chāritra*
- Right Knowledge, see *Samyag-jñāna*
- Royal patronage, 399-400
- Rshabhadeva, 47, 253, 278
founder of Jainism, 375-7
- Rules of good conduct, 222-3
- Sacred literature, 286, 299
- Sacred thread, 268-9, 356-8, 406
- Sādhu, 235-6
- Sādhus, 48, 67, 224-5, 337
- Sādhvis, 48, 67, 180, 337
- Sāgāradharma*, 217-23
- Saints:
activities, 400-1, 402, 414;
influence, 401
- Śākhā, 58, 310-1
- Sallekhanā*, 219, 276
- Samaiyāpantha, 55
- Samantabhadra, 400
- Sāmāyika*, 219, 220, 222, 352
- Samiti*, 211, 212
- Sammedaśikhara, 271, 273-4, 391
- Samprati, 380, 385
- Samskāras:
of Digambaras, 259-63; of Śvetāmbaras, 263-7; resemble Hindu Samskāras, 267-8; differences in observance, 268-70; observance at present, 353-5.
- Samyag-darśana*, 206, 207-9, 258
- Samyag-jñāna*, 206, 209-10
- Samyak-chāritra*, 206, 210-11
- Samvara, 202; way to Samvara, 211-5
- Samvatsari*, 247, 359
- Saṅgha, 58-9, 62, 277, 310-1, 317
- Saṅgadā*, 330
- Saṅghapati, 277
- Saṅkarāchārya, 409
- Saṅkheśvara, 273
- Sanskrit, 283
- Saptapadi, 166-7, 169
- Saraks, 4, 380
- Sarapañcha*, 317
- Sāsanadevatā*, 236
- Sati, 187, 404
- Śatruñjaya, 244, 250, 271, 273, 275, 384, 391
- Satya*, 218
- Savastramukti*, 52, 419
- Schism in Jaina Church:

- reasons for schism, 49–50; the Great Schism, 50–52; number of schisms, 50.
- Scholarship funds, 297, 418
- Sculpture, 393–4
- Sections in Jaina Church:
sections and sub-sections, 58–61, 417; sections among Digambaras, 58–9; sections among Śvetāmbaras, 59–61.
- Sects in Jaina Church:
two main sects, 52–3, 417; sub-sects of Digambaras, 54–6; sub-sects of Śvetāmbaras, 56–8; attempts of reconciliation, 61–3; separatist tendencies, 325, 410, 417–8; differences are not basic, 419; means to bring unity, 419–20.
- Śetavālas:
distribution, 101; origin, 102, 336; gotras, 103; position, 103; and Bhāttāraka, 103; and marriage relations, 103, 157, 159, 339; and divorce, 176–7; and marriage ceremony, 269; in ascetic order, 337.
- Śetha*, 317
- Seth family, 347
- Shashthi*, 264
- Sheth family, 370
- Siddha*, 235
- Siddhachakra Pūjā*, 248
- Siddhakshetra*, 271–2
- Siddharāja, 384
- Signs, 257
- Śikshāvṛata*, 219
- Śilahāras*, 383
- Śilavrata*, 218–9
- Silken garments, 282
- Simhanandī, 381
- Śitalā Mātā, 257, 364
- Śitalā-saptami, 254, 293, 350–1
- Slaughter of animals, 248, 279, 282, 288
- Social status of women, 182–8
- Social survey, 300, 304
- Social workers, 371, 372
- Somadeva Sūri, 406
- Sonagiri, 391
- Soul, see *Jīva*
- Spirit possession, 255–6
- Śraddha ceremony, 269–70, 293, 361
- Śramaṇa literature, 386–7
- Śravakas, 48, 67, 258
- Śravaṇabelagola, 4, 244, 251, 271, 273, 276, 284, 383, 391, 394, 419
- Śravikās, 48, 67
- Śrenika, 379
- Śrimālis:
distribution, 92; gotras, 93, 131–3; origin, 93; position, 93; divisions, 93; in ascetic order, 337; and polygyny, 340; migration, 345–6.
- Śruta-Pañchami*, 249–50, 350
- Stambhas, i.e. pillars, 392–3
- Stavanidhi, 255
- Sthānakavāśis, 56–8, 240, 242, 245, 293, 294, 311, 315
- Stimulants, 280

- Straining liquid drink, 280
- Strīdhana, 190-1
- Strīmukti*, 52, 419
- Stūpas, 392
- Śuchikarma, 264-5
- Sudatta, 382
- Śuddhi, 361
- Śūdras, 65-70, 82
- Sukhalalji Sanghavi, 371
- Superhuman beings, 254
- Superstitions, 254-8
- Suprīti*, 259
- Surnames, 305-6
- Survival of Jainas:
organisation of community, 397-8; conservatism, 399; royal patronage, 399-400; work of saints, 400-1; benevolent activities, 401-2; intimate relations with Hindus, 402-7.
- Suryendudarśana*, 264
- Sūtaka, 361
- Svādhyāya*, 221
- Svayamvara marriage, 151, 164, 186
- Śvetāmbara sect:
origin, 51; points of difference with Digambara sect, 52-3, 419; sub-sects, 56-8; idols, 241; associations, 293; journals, 294; educational institutions, 297.
- Syādvāda*, 395
- Tāta*, 255
- Tamil, 285
- Tāraṇapanthīs, 55-6, 240, 243, 245
- Tapa*, 216, 221
- Tattvārthādhigama-sūtra, 286
- Tejapāla, 95, 275, 384
- Telugu, 285
- Temple-cities, 244, 275, 391
- Temple property, 343
- Temples, 243-5, 342-3, 389-91; converted into mosques, 391; owned by different sections, 417.
- Terāpanthīs (Digambara), 54-5, 419
- Terāpanthīs (Śvetāmbara), 55, 58, 337, 419
- Theft, 228, 231
- Tīrtha*, 270
- Tīrthakṛdbhāvanā*, 261
- Tīrthakshetras*: 270-7; of Digambaras, 273; of Śvetāmbaras, 273; types, 271-2; nature, 270-1; appropriation by Hindus, 272.
- Tīrthāṅkara*, 47, 235
- Tonsure ceremony, 265
- Tonsure of widows, 188
- Totāpanthīs, 54, 56
- Towers, 393
- Udayagiri, 392
- Ugādi, 350
- Ujjain, 385
- Umāsvāti, 286
- Unchastity, 228, 231
- Upādhyāya*, 235-6
- Upādhyāyas:
distribution, 107; duties, 108;

- marriage customs, 108; profession, 108; and *Bhaṭṭāraka*, 108; position, 109.
- Upadhye*, A. N., 158, 371
- Upanīti* or *Upanayana*, 260, 265–6
- Upāśraya*, 242, 245, 267, 342
- Vāgdāna, 166
- Vaiśyas, 65–70, 82, 277
- Valabhī, 384
- Vanarāja, 384
- Varaṇa, 166
- Varṇalābha*, 69–70, 260
- Varpa system:
in Vedic society, 65; Jaina conception, 67–70, 420–1,
- Vastupāla*, 95, 275, 384
- Vedic society, 65–7
- Vegetarian food, 281, 288
- Vellāla, 322
- Vepura, 394
- Vidyāraṇībha*, 266
- Vināśavāda*, 395
- Vīra Nirvāṇa Saṃyat*, 252
- Vīrakāsana Jayanti*, 249
- Visā, 87, 91, 95, 99, 316
- Vivāha*, 260, 266
- Vratacharyā*, 260
- Vratāropa*, 266
- Vratas*: 217–20; basis of Jaina ethics, 227–9; social value, 228, 230.
- Vratāvatarāṇa*, 260
- Vratodyāpana*, 321
- Vṛātyas, 376
- Vyushti*, 260
- Walchand Hirachand, 348, 373
- Warriors, 347
- Widow remarriage:
not allowed in the North, 101, 175, 339; allowed in the Deccan, 101, 175, 339; not allowed in Madras, 111, 175; not practised by Upādhyāyas, 108; prevalence in ancient times, 174, 187; and Jaina religion, 175; and dining relations, 314; and position of castes, 316; controlled by Pañchāyata, 318; practised by certain castes, 339; decline of prejudice against, 339–40; prevalent opinion, 365–6.
- Widows and property rights, 191–3
- Widows and social status, 187
- Wine, 280
- Women:
ideas about women, 177–9; and ascetic order, 180–1; and salvation, 181; as teachers and preachers, 181, 183; female infanticide, 182; neglect of female children, 182; and education, 183–4; contributions to literature, 184; and aspects of marriage, 185; tonsure of widows, 188; and political activities, 188–9; as warriors, 189; as administrators, 189; and maintenance, 190; and property rights,

- 190-3; and spirit possession, 255-6.
- Woollen garments, 282
- Worship:
- objects, 234-8; of human beings, 235-6; of superhuman beings, 236-8; of Hindu deities, 237-8, 265, 345, 363-4, 406; intention, 238-40, 403; manner, 240-3; of idols, 240-1; places of worship, 243-5; of Jakhins, 255; of Bhūtas, 255; of serpents, 256; of planets, 265.
- Yajamāna*, 317
- Yaksha*, 236
- Yāpaniya Saṅgha*, 62
- Yatis*, 331
- Yoga*, 201, 202
-

ERRATA

Page	Line	For	Read
4	32	prosecutionist	persecutionist
11	23	specifir	specific
24	—	drop footnote 1	—
24	last	Appendix XV	Appendix XVI
67	30	Jātis	Jati
67	31	categorie	categories
74	8 & 12	Ashta-Śākhā	Ashta-Śākhā
84	15	cccupation	occupation
90	last	B. G. G.	B. G.
92	17, 18, 22	Srimālī	Śrimālī
92	24, 29	Srimāla	Śrimāla
93	2, 3	Srimāla	Śrimāla
93	8	Appendix IX	Appendix X
93	11, 14, 18, 20, 21, 24, 26, 28, 30	Srimālis	Śrimālis
95	7, 12	Srimāli	Śrimāli
137	1	Fourth	Four
146	7, 8	condidition	condition
149	footnote 1	वैद्यायाः	वैद्यायाः
155	footnote 2	पंकिभोजनम् ।	पंकिभोजनम् ।
161	6	पितॄशुश्रव	पितॄशुश्रवे
175	3 of footnote 1	यस्यास्त्वनामिका	यस्यास्त्वनामिका
178	21	diffculty	difficulty
182	8 of footnote	That	They
182	9 of footnote	they	that
187	last but one	widow	widows
187	last	carves	carve
189	21	women	woman
215	13	Bodhi	Bodily

216	12	<i>Vṛtti-parisaṅkhyāna</i>	<i>Vṛtti-parisaṅkhyāna</i>
238	10	spreed	spread
239	7	मोऽधमागस्य	मोऽधमागेस्य
244	7	Satruñjaya	Śatruñjaya
251	3	Śravaṇabelagola	Śravaṇabelagola
256	9	blessing	blasting
265	3	Suchikarma	Śuchikarma
274	11 of footnote	venerated	venerated
275	10	Satruñjaya	Śatruñjaya
307	29	Svetāmbara	Śvetāmbara
308	15	Degambaras	Dīgambaras
316	last	Svetāmbaras	Śvetāmbaras
335	17	lastinge	lasting
345	3	Svetāmbara	Śvetāmbara
347	29	Kallionji	Kallianji
355	2	Svetāmbara	Śvetāmbara
410	5	tak	take
411	21	Mathas	Maṭhas
417	28	Svetāmbara	Śvetāmbara
441	19	Jaina	Jainas
441	20	locas	loca-
451	1	RESLEY	RISLEY
451	22	Sikshā	Śikshā
453	8	Achārāṅga	Āchārāṅga
456	7	Svetāmbara	Śvetāmbara

BOOKS ON SOCIOLOGICAL SUBJECTS

BY

Dr. GHURYE AND HIS PUPILS

- Agarkar, Dr. A. J.*: Folk-Dance of Maharashtra. (Popular Book Depot, 1950).
- Bhagat, Dr. M. G.*: The Farmer, His Welfare & Wealth. (Co-operators' Book Depot, 1943).
- Bopegamage, Dr. A.*: Delhi: A Study in Urban Sociology. (University of Bombay, 1957)
- Chapekar, Dr. L. N.*: Thakurs of Sahyadri. (Oxford Univ. Press) (In Press).
- Desai Dr. A. R.*: Social Background of Indian Nationalism. (Oxford Univ. Press, 1948)
- Introduction to Rural Sociology in India. (Indian Society of Agricultural Economics, 1953).
- Desai, Dr. M. N.*: Life and Living in the Rural Karnatak. (Deccan Bookstall, 1945).
- Dubash, (Kun.) P. N.*: Hindu Art in its Social Setting. (Nat. Lit. Publishing, 1936)
- Ghurye, Dr. G. S.*: Caste and Race in India. (Kegan Paul & Co., 1932).
- Aborigines, So-called and Their Future. (Gokhale Inst. of Politics and Economics, 1943).
- Culture and Society. (Oxford Univ. Press, 1947).
- Occidental Civilization. (International Book House, 1948).
- Caste and Class in India (3rd rev. ed.) (Popular Book Depot, 1957).
- Indian Costume. (Popular Book Depot, 1951).
- Race Relations in Negro Africa. (Asia Pub. Hsuse, 1952).
- Indian Sadhus. (Popular Book Depot, 1953).
- Family and Kin in Indo-European Culture. (Oxford Univ. Press, 1955).

- Sexual Behaviour of the American Female. (Current Book House, 1956).
- The Mahadev Kolis. (Popular Book Depot, 1957).
- Vidyas. (Popuiar Book Depot, 1957).
- Bharatanatyam and its Costume. (Popular Book Depot, 1958).
- Halder, Dr. R. M.*: Society and the Visually Handicapped. (Thacker & Co., 1948).
- Hate, Dr. (Smt.) C. A.*: Hindu Woman and Her Future. (New Book Co., 1948).
- Jain, Dr. J. C.*: Life in Ancient India. (New Book Co., 1947).
- Kale, Dr. D. N.*: The Agris. (Asia Publishing House, 1952).
- Kapadia, Dr. K. M.*: Hindu Kinship. (Popular Book Depot, 1947).
- The Hindu Code Bill; A Critical Study. (Popular Book Depot, 1950).
- The Matrilineal Social Organisation of the Nagas of Assam (Popular Book Depot, 1950).
- The Hindu Marriage and Divorce Bill: A Critical Study. (Popular Book Depot, 1953).
- Marriage and Family in India. (2nd rev. ed.) (Oxford Univ. Press, 1958).
- Karandikar, Shri S. V.*: Hindu Exogamy. (Taraporewala Sons, 1929).
- Mehta, (Smt.) Sarojini*: Marriage and Family in Gujarat. (Gujarat Vidya Sabha, 1934).
- Merchant, Prof. K. T.*: Changing Views on Marriage and Family. (B. G. Paul & Co., 1935).
- Narain, Dr. D.*: Hindu Character. (University of Bombay, 1957).
- Pradhan, Dr. G. R.*: Untouchable Workers of Bombay City. (Karnatak Pub. House, 1938).
- Rao, Dr. M. S. A.*: Social Change in Malabar. (Popular Book Depot, 1957).
- Rege, Shri Y. M.*: Whither Woman. (Popular Book Depot, 1938).
- Save, Shri K. J.*: The Warlis. (Padma Publications, 1945).
- Shah, Kum. Panna*: The Indian Film. (M. P. S. I., 1945).

- Srinivas, Dr. M. N.*: Marriage and Family in Mysore. (New Book Co., 1942).
- Thakur, Dr. U. T.*: Sindhi Culture. (University of Bombay) (In Press).
- Unwalla, Dr. D. B.*: Textile Technocracy. (Popular Book Depot, 1958).
- Venkatarayappa, Dr. K. N.*: Bangalore: a Socio-Ecological Study. (University of Bombay, 1957).
- Vyas, Dr. K. C.*: The development of National Education in India. (Vora & Co., 1954).
Social Renaissance in India. (Vora & Co., 1954).
- Welling, Prof. A. N.*: The Katkaris. (Bombay Book Depot, 1934),





CATALOGUED.

501141

CC
124973

"A book that is shut is but a block"

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY

GOVT. OF INDIA
Department of Archaeology
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book
clean and moving.

S. S., 148, N. DELHI.